





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation







LaEur  
C9585c

A COMPLETE  
PRACTICAL GRAMMAR  
OF THE  
HUNGARIAN LANGUAGE,  
WITH  
EXERCISES, SELECTIONS FROM THE BEST AUTHORS,  
AND VOCABULARIES.  
TO WHICH IS ADDED A  
*Historical Sketch of Hungarian Literature.*

BY  
J. CSINK,  
FORMERLY ELECTED AS ORDINARY PROFESSOR OF TECHNICAL SCIENCES  
AT THE PROTESTANT SCHOOL OF KESMARK.

LONDON:  
WILLIAMS AND NORGATE,  
HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN.  
1853.

LIBRARY  
OF  
THE  
BIBLIOTHEQUE  
NATIONALE  
DE  
PARIS

3476  
— 2215790  
6

Tutus et intra  
Spem veniae cautus, vitavi denique culpam,  
Non laudem merui. —

Horat. Epist. ad Pis.

**W**hen I resolved to start from the shores of quotidian life to cross a small bay of the vast literary ocean, a fair wind of public opinion promised a prosperous journey; the novelty of the objects which my bark carried guaranteed a cordial welcome from those whose spy-glasses were directed after some not yet observed flag. — I have reached the port, and discharged my bark! Viewing my route from this side of the bay, I now first perceive, that in my passage over its dangerous shallows, I have ventured on perilous voyage, being unassisted by the experience of any previous navigator.

I have endeavoured to meet the desires of those who are interested in linguistic studies, either in increasing their knowledge extensensively, or in seeking intensive augmentation of the cognition of that medium through which minds communicate with minds, and hearts learn to feel from hearts; and I have tried to meet the wishes of those who felt interested in the political life of the Hungarian nation, by tracing in a short sketch the past of the intellectual and mental development of the nation.

As the book is also intended for learners, I may be allowed to make a few explanatory remarks.

The Division entitled „Compositions“ is purely a practical one, in order to give the student some previous knowledge, before he attempts the study of a Grammar; therefore, repeating the more difficult objects, and regarding them from different points of view, will not be thought prolix. The words relating to this part are all collected in a Vocabulary at the end of the first part. The Theoretical Division contains a short but complete Gram-

#### IV

mar of the language. The arrangement of the materials, perhaps, may appear a new one, but it is, therefore, not to be rejected. I chose and rejected terms and reassumed them again, when, I found no better ones; yet, I always had the alternative before me — either to force the language into the scholastical forms, or to venture a partly new arrangement of Grammatical materials; being fully convinced, that, in either a short or a long time, Philosophy will give something better than what we now inherit from **Donatus** and others. In regard to Orthography, I preferred following the principles established by the Hungarian Academy, rather than to fluctuate driven by the whims of some authors. I have not given any orthographical rules, for the words being written as they are sounded and articulated, a little attention paid to the spelling of the words when practical exercises are done, and a knowledge of the Grammatical forms, will compensate for the absence of a Section on Orthography.

The second part contains Selections in prose and poetry from authors whom the Academy and the nation have crowned with reputation. As I was obliged to consider the student, I could not choose any longer or more difficult literary productions. The first Section of this part will not be deemed insufficient by those who desire detailed arrangements of the causes which influence the intellectual and mental development of a nation, and of the events produced by these causes, if it be considered that, in this work, the sketch had to be forced into a very small frame; nor will this Section be thought superfluous by those who seek after Grammatical studies, for the learning of the language of a nation itself excites the desire after some knowledge of its intellectual life. —

London 1852.

**J. Csink.**

## CONTENTS OF THE FIRST PART.

---

### INTRODUCTION.

	Page.
§. 1. Orthophony, Orthoepey . . . . .	4.
- 2. Division of the sounds and words . . .	9.
- 3. Assimilation of sounds and articulations .	10.
- 4. Prolongation of the vowels . . . . .	12.
- 5. Contractions . . . . .	13.

### COMPOSITIONS.

I. Verbs. — Active and Neuter . . . . .	15.
II. Possessive forms of the Substantive . .	27.
III. Affixes relative to place and directions .	37.
IV. Expression of the Verb „to have“ . .	43.
V. Attributes of Substantives . . . . .	48.
VI. Transformation of the Verbal root. . .	54.
VII. Irregularities in Verbal formations . .	64.
VIII. Participles . . . . .	82.
IX. The Verb <i>kell</i> , to want, to be obliged, must	84.
X. Future . . . . .	89.
IX. Pronouns. . . . .	91.
XII. Conjunctions . . . . .	100.
XIII. Adverbs . . . . .	101.

## THEORY OF THE LANGUAGE.

	Page.
<i>A. Grammatical Forms</i> . . . . .	107—225.
I. Verbs.	
1. Verbal roots . . . . .	107.
2. Conjugation . . . . .	118.
3. Derivation and Composition of Verbs . . . . .	162.
II. Nominal Forms . . . . .	171.
1. Characteristic of the Objective Case . . . . .	172.
2. Characteristic of the Plural. . . . .	180.
3. Possessives Affixes . . . . .	182.
4. Paradigma of the different forms of a Substantive . . . . .	188.
5. Derivation and Composition of Substantives . . . . .	199.
III. Attributes . . . . .	204.
1. Adjectives . . . . .	205.
2. Adverbs . . . . .	213.
IV. Pronouns . . . . .	216.
1. Personal Pronouns . . . . .	216.
2. Relative and Interrogative Pronouns . . . . .	218.
3. Demonstrative Pronouns . . . . .	219.
4. Definite Pronouns . . . . .	220.
5. Indefinite Pronouns . . . . .	220.
V. Prepositions . . . . .	220.
VI. Conjunctions . . . . .	223.
VII. Interjections . . . . .	224.
 <i>B. Syntax</i> . . . . .	 225—279.
I. Of the combination of the different Parts of Speech without the intermediation of Grammatical forms . . . . .	226.
A. Of the Article <i>az</i> , <i>a'</i> and its Congruent . . . . .	226.
B. Of Adjectives and Numerals with Substantives . . . . .	229.
C. Of the Subject and Predicate . . . . .	230.
D. Of other Congruences . . . . .	235.



	Page.
II. Of the combination of Parts of Speech by means of Grammatical forms . . . . .	234.
A. Of the Objective Case . . . . .	234.
B. Of the Possessive Affixes . . . . .	235.
C. Of the Prepositional Affixes . . . . .	237.
D. Of the Adjective terminations: <i>i</i> , <i>nyi</i> , <i>s</i> , <i>ń</i> and <i>ńi</i> . . . . .	263.
III. Of the use of the different forms of the Verb, and the different Parts of Speech for connecting sentences . . . . .	265.
A. Of the Forms of the Verb.	
1. The Definite and Indefinite Forms of the Active Voice . . . . .	265.
2. Moods and Tenses of the Verb . . . . .	267.
3. Participles . . . . .	269.
4. The Infinitive with Affixes . . . . .	274.
B. Of terms of periodical construction . . . . .	272.
1. Of the relative Pronouns . . . . .	283.
2. Of the Conjunctions . . . . .	275.
IV. Of the Consequence of Parts of Speech, or the arrangement of words in a sentence . . . . .	277.

### READING EXERCISES.

287—320.

### VOCABULARY TO THE COMPOSITIONS.

287—320.





FIRST PART.



DIVISION I.

**PRAXIS OF THE LANGUAGE.**

# REVUE

DE LA LITTÉRATURE FRANÇAISE

# INTRODUCTION.

## 1. §. Orthophony and Orthoepy. Articulations, Sounds and Characters.

**T**he Hungarian language has 7 different sounds, which, being either long or short ones\*), produce 14 different forms of characters, called vowels; and 24 different articulations, marked by as many consonants.

The vowels are *a, e, i, o, ő, u, ü*. If these be the marks of protracted sounds in speaking, they are distinguished by an acute accent, as: *á, é, í, ó, ő, ú, ü*; instead of the forms *ö, ű*, the shorter forms *o, u*, have been introduced recently.

---

\*) As regards the use of the words long and short: by long is meant the protraction or prolongation, by short the contraction, or quick pronunciation of the same sound; thus *o* and *ó*, the former short, the latter long, differ merely, the first being sounded in half the time of the latter. When an Englishman, mentions a long *i* and a short *i*, we understand two distinct sounds; hence, in *mile*, the *i* will be long, the syllable *mi* may be protracted or not. On the contrary, in the Hungarian language, the duration or the abbreviation of the sound will make the sound long or short.

The 24 consonants, *b, cs, cz, d, f, g, gy, h, j, k, l, ly, m, n, ny, p, r, s, sz, t, ty, v, z, zs*, or *B, Cs, Cz, D, F, G, Gy, H, I, K, L (Ly), M, N, Ny, P, R, S, Sz, T, Ty, V, Z, Zs*, are divided into 16 simple ones: *b, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, r, s, t, v, z*, which have the same articulation as the English ones, except *j* equal to the English *y* as a consonant (in *young*), *s* equal to *sh*, *g* always hard like *g* in *guide*, and *r* having always a strong trill; and into 8 compound ones: *cs, cz, gy, ly, ny, sz, ty, zs*. For these there are only three articulations in the English language exactly indential with the Hungarian ones, such as *ch* (in *chapter*) identical with *cs*, the sharp *s* (in *seven*, *six*) identical with *sz*, and the articulation of *z* before a long *u* (in *seizure*) identical with *zs*. For the other consonants there are no articulations in the English language, and therefore the correct pronunciation must be acquired by hearing speakers who are well acquainted with the language.

The consonant *cz* is articulated like *ts* in the English language, equal to the German *z*.

Approximate articulations for the consonant *gy* are produced in the English language by the consonant *d* followed by a long *u*, as in *due*, *duce* etc.; thus, in the Hungarian *gyűlni*, to catch fire, *gyúl*, is so much like the English *dule*, that foreigners may easily take them to be identical. — The concurrence of the consonant *d* and *j* have the articulation of the English consonants *d* and *y* intimately combined.

The consonant *ly* is identical with the French *il*, *ille* etc. preceded by another vowel, as in *travail*, *feuille* etc. This identification goes even so far, that, as in the French language the *l mouillé*, which has the same articulation as the English consonant *y*, has gained ground recently, the Hungarian *ly* by many excellent speakers has been assimilated to the French *l mouillé*; even by some writers *lj*, which is nearly related to *ly*, has been replaced by *jj* (= *yy*); as, *vajjon*, instead of *valljon*.

The Articulation of *ny* is like the French *gne* in *campagne*, *champagne* etc., and the English *n* with a long *u*, or the *n* in *new*.

*Ty* is the sharp articulation of *gy*, and very nearly the articulation of the consonants *t* and *u*, as in the word *tube*; only the Hungarian is an internal combination of the two consonants, while the English remains a mere concurrence.

Thus the most difficult articulations are those of *gy* and *ty*; the latter being a sharp articulation of the former, they are in the same relation to each other as the English syllables *du* and *tu*, in the words *due* and *tube*.

To these may be added the combination of *dzs* in *dzsida*, which is equal to the English *g* in *general*.

The fourteen different marks for the sounds may be arranged in the following scheme.

*á*, identical with the English *a* in *Father*.

- a*, identical with the French *a* in *fatalité*\*).
- é* is like the English *a* in *fate*, if the assonance of *e* be avoided.
- e* is identical with the English *a* in *fat*. In monosyllables, as *te*, *meg*, etc., if *e* is not followed by *m* or a sharp consonant, the sound of *e* is softened, and the pronunciation of *e* like the English short *e*, is preferable; the same in the words *tenni*, *enni*, *menni*, *venni*, and similar ones.
- i* is equal to the English long *e* in *dear*, *deed* etc.
- i* is the short sound of the preceding one, as is often the case with the syllable *re* in compound English words; its sound takes the medium between the English long *e* and short *i*, and is identical with the French *i* in *fine*.
- ó*, identical with the English long *o* in *coal*, *loan* etc.
- o*, the short sound of the preceding (like the French short *o*).
- ö* is like the French *eu* in *jeudi*. A very deep and unclear sound of a short *e*.
- õ* or *ö* is the protracted sound of the preceding, equal to the German *ö* in *öde*, *höhe* etc.
- u*, identical with the English *u* in *bull*.
- ú*, identical with the long double *o* in the word *food*.
- ü*, identical with the French *u* in *une*, (*je*) *fus* etc.

---

\*) Although some teachers of the Hungarian language have recommended the short *a* to be sounded like the English *a* in *watch*, *was* etc., nevertheless good speakers make no other distinction than that which is the natural consequence of the abbreviation of the same sound.



*ű, ű*, the protracted sound of the preceding, equal to the German *ü* in *übel*.

The Hungarian language requires each articulation and sound to be given distinctly and plainly; there is no mute vowel or unarticulated consonant in any word whatever; even the concurrence of two consonants is noticed by a distinct articulation of each of them.\*)

### FOR PRACTICE.

*Alma* apple, *asztal* (ahstahl) table, *arcz* face; *ablak* window, *bércz* (barets) mountain, *bajnok\*\*)* champion, *csarnok* hall, *csuda* (choodah) wonder, *csillag* (chillagh) star, *dárda* (dardah) spear, *daru* (dabroo) crane, *dolog* (dohlohg) thing, *desz-ka* board, *élet* (ale-at) life, *éber* (a-berr) sober, *édes* (a-dash) sweet, *ember* (amm-berr) man, *fej* head, *fő* head, capital principal, *fújni* (fooiny) to blow, *fátyol* (the first syllable exactly the same as in English father)

---

\*) As an Orthographical remark may be added, that instead of the double consonants: *gygy*, *lyly*, *nyny*, *tyty*, *cscs*, *czcz*, etc. the forms *ggy*, *lly*, *nny*, *tty*, *ccs*, *ccz* . . . are used. —

\*\*) If the consonant *j*, after vowels, be followed by other consonants, it is nearly assimilated to the Latin *i*, used by poets instead of *j*. It seems to be like the Latin assimilation of *j* to *i* in iambus, instead of jambus; the only distinction is, that in the Hungarian language *j* is preceded, in Latin followed by a vowel.

the veil, *faggyú* (fah-due) tallow, *fal* wall, *gazdag* (gahz-dahg) rich, *gazda* (gahz-dah) husbandman, *gör-be* crooked, *gyűlés* meeting, (assembly), *gyertya* candle, *gyöngy* pearl, *gyáva* coward, *gyó-gyi-ta-ni* to cure, *gya-log* on foot, *há-bo-rú* war, *had* battle, *ha-da-koz-ni* to combat, *há-la* thanks, *hó-dol-ni* to do homage, *hoz-ni*, to bring, *haj* hair, *háj* lard, *hú-gom* my younger sister, *i-ga* yoke, *i-gaz* true, *i-ga-si* real, *i-gen* yes, *jár-ni* to walk, *jó* (yo) good, *jám-bor* <sup>much</sup> pious, *jég* (yaig) ice, *jel* mark, *jel-szó* apophthegm, parole, *jő-ni* to come, *ka-to-na* soldier, *kel-me* wares, *kell* (to) need, *lány* girl, *lil-lak*, lilac, *ló* horse, *má-mor* intoxication, *menni* to go, *me-rész* bold, *mé-reg* poison, *né-nye* the elder sister, *nagy-né-nye* aunt, *ó-ra* hour, watch, *ő-reg* old, *ő* he, *okos* prudent, *po-rosz* prussian, *pár-na* cushion, *pénz* money, *pél-da* example, *pal-los* sword, *rosz* bad, *rozs* corn, *ra-vasz* cunning, *rit-ka* rare, *rit-kán* rarely, *ró-ssa* rose, *rend* order, range, *ren-de-zés* arrangement, *ren-del-ke-zés* disposition, direction, *sas* eagle, *sé-ta* a walk, *sé-tal-ni* to walk, *se-lyem* silk, *sa-ru* a pair of slippers, *sáncz* sconce, entrenchment, *súly* weight, *sú-lyoz-ni* to weigh, *sú-lyos* weighty, *szesz* spirits (of wine etc.) *szel-lem* mind, *száz* hundred, *szék* chair, *sza-bad* free, *sze-lid* tame, gentle, *szór-ni* to strew, *ta-lán* perhaps, *tud-ni* to know (something), *tar-ta-lom* contents, *tá-gas* wide, roomy, *ten-ni* to do, *tűr-ni* to suffer, *tű-re-de-lem* patience, *tűn-dő-köl-ni* to gleam, *tisz-ta* clear,

pure, *tél* winter, *tó* lake (lacus), *ud-var* court, *űz-ni* to pursue, *ül-ni* to sit, *u-ral-kod-ni* to domineer, *u-na-lom* tediousness, *vár-ni* to wait, *var-ni* to sew, *ver-ni* (verr-ny) to beat, *vér* (vare) blood, *vé-rez-ni* (vare-as-ny) and *vér-ze-ni* to bleed, *vé-gez-ni* (vage-gaz-ny) to finish, *vé-ge* end, *ze-ne* (zănă) music, *ze-nész* (zan-ase) musician, *zá-log* forfeit, *zon-go-ra* (zohn-goh-rah) piano.

In order to facilitate the learning of the pronunciation of consonants and vowels which have the same articulation and sounds as the English, the following short arrangement of English words spelt in the Hungarian Alphabet, is subjoined.

### English words,

spelt in English:\*)

spelt in Hungarian:

Bull	<i>Bul</i>
Chamber	<i>CséMBER</i>
Deed	<i>Díd</i>
Did	<i>Did</i>
Danger	<i>Déndzser</i>
Eagle	<i>Ígle</i>
Fat	<i>Fet</i>

---

\*) The only difference between the English long a and the Hungarian é, is, that the English a, has a terminative sound which somewhat approaches the English short i, whilst the Hungarian é is a clear sound.

Fate	<i>Fét</i>
German	<i>Dzsermen</i>
Loan	<i>Lón</i>
Lasting (according to Walker)	<i>Lásztin</i>
Moon	<i>Mún</i>
Meek	<i>Mík</i>
Newly	<i>Nyúli</i> (among all other similar pronunciations, that of Newly is the most approaching the Hungarian Nyúli, which shows the articulation of the consonant <i>Ny</i> or <i>ny</i> .)

Oats	<i>Ócz</i>
Palm - tree	<i>Pámtri</i>
Pulpit	<i>Pulpit</i>
Raze	<i>Réz</i>
Rule	<i>Rúl</i>
Sheep	<i>Síp</i>
Shall	<i>Sell</i>
Sea	<i>Szí</i>
Tore	<i>Tór</i>
Tulip	<i>Tjűlip</i>
Tube	<i>Tjűb</i>
Vetch	<i>Vecs</i> and <i>Vets</i>
Yare	<i>Jér</i>
Yellow	<i>Jelló</i>
Your	<i>Júr</i>
You	<i>jű</i>
Zeal	<i>Zíl</i>
Zero	<i>Ziró.</i>

## 2. §. Division of the sounds and words.

In order to facilitate Etymological formations, Grammarians have assumed the division of vowels into hard and soft ones, under the former being understood the full and deep sounds of *a, o, u*, either long or short; under the latter, the closed ones of *e, i, ö, ü*, either long or short. The long *i* may be considered as a medium sound between the two. According to this division of the vowels, the words of the Hungarian language are divided into two different classes: hard sounding ones and soft sounding ones.\*) The former containing such vowels as *a, á, o, ó, u, ú*, the latter either of the vowels: *e, é, i, ö, ő, ü, ű*.

Thus the words *háború* war, *hold* moon, *homlok* forehead, *ár* price, are hard or deep ones; the words *édes* sweet, *öl* fathom, *levegő* air, *inteni* to admonish, *esni* to fall, are soft ones.

When the same word contains vowels of the two different classes, the hard vowels are considered as the principal ones, and the words belong to the class of hard words.

As the vowel *i* is considered to be a mediate one, between the hard and soft vowels, many words in which the sound *i* predominates or is the only

---

\*) For the sake of abbreviation the Terms hard, and soft words, will be used.

vowel occurring, belong to the class of soft words; especially the words *csípni* to pinch, *csiríz* paste, *csíz* green finch, *czím* firma, title, *dísz* ornament, *frigy* alliance, *fris* frisian, *gím* fallow deer, *hímezni* to embroider, *hír* reputation, report, *hív* faithful, *íny* gum, *ív* a sheet (of paper) an arc, *íz* taste, *mű* work, *nyír* birch-tree, *rím* rime, *szín* colour, *szív* heart, *tíz* ten, *víz* water.

All others in which *i* is the vowel of the radical syllable belong to the class of hard words; as *szi*j, strap; *híd*, bridge; *írni*, to write. —

### 3. §. Assimilation of sounds and articulations.

It is a general rule, that all affixes joining words because of Grammatical forms assimilate their vowels to those of the root of the word itself; thus, words which belong to the class of hard ones have in their affixes, whatever they may be, the hard vowel *a*, *o*, or *u*; on the contrary, words belonging to the second class have in their affixes a soft vowel, *e*, *ö*, or *ü*.

The corresponding vowels are *a* and *e*, *o* and *ö*, *u* and *ü*; thus, if the affix for one class of words be known, the affix for the other class will be known by itself.

For instance:

In the word *várunk* we wait, the Verbal root is *vár*, the affix with its cementing vowel is *unk*,



if any Verbal root with a soft-vowel, as *ül*, to sit, be given, in order to form the first Person Plural, the affix *ünk* must be added, and *ülünk* (we sit) is the form required; *házam* my house, has *m* affixed with the vowel *a*, the soft word *szék* chair, will thus have *székem* (my chair) for the same Grammatical form as *házam*.

As the vowels of Grammatical affixes are assimilated to those of the root, so some consonants of affixes and roots are assimilated to each other. Especially:

The consonant *j* in the Conjugation of the Verb is assimilated:

a) to the consonant *sz*, if the verbal root terminates with such a consonant; as, *mász-szon* he may creep, instead of *mász-jon*; *vesz-szen* he may be lost, instead of *vesz-jen*.

b) to the consonant *z*, if the verbal root terminates with this consonant; as, *hoz-szon* he may bring, instead of *hoz-jon*.

c) to the consonant *s*.

1) if the verbal root terminates with the same consonant; as *ás-son* he may dig; instead of *ás-jon*.

2) if the verbal root terminates with the consonant *t*, preceded by a long vowel or by another consonant; as, *tanít-son* he may teach, instead of *tanít-jon*.

3) if the verbal root terminates with the consonant *t*, preceded by a short vowel; in this

case the radical *t* itself is changed into *s*; as, *fus-son* he may run, instead of *fut-son*, and this instead of *futjon*; *vessen* he may sow, instead of *vet-jen*, etc.

When the Demonstrative Pronoun *az* that, *ez* this, joins the affixes, which are used instead of Prepositions, its consonant *z* is assimilated to the initial consonant of the affix: as, *ar-ról* of that, instead of *az-ról*; *eb-ből* out of this, instead of *ez-ből*, *ek-képen* instead of *ez-képen*.

The affixes *val*, *vel*, which express the Preposition with, and *vá*, *vé*, which means into, assimilate their initial consonant, *v*, to the final consonant of the word to which they are joined; thus, *kéz-zel* with the hand, instead of *kéz-vel*; *az-zá* into that, instead of *az-vá*; *fegyver-rel* with arms, instead of *fegyver-vel*.

Obs. *avval* and *azzal*, with that, *evvel* and *ezzel*, with this, are both in use, but the latter forms are preferable.

#### 4. §. Prolongation of the vowels.

The short final vowels *a* and *e* are prolonged as often as the word assumes any affix. This prolongation of the short final *a* and *e* is common to all words in all Grammatical forms.

*ruha* a dress, *ruhá-m* my dress, *ruhá-t* a dress (objective case), *ruhá-zni* to dress, *ruhá-val* with a dress; *eke* plough, *éké-nek* to a plough,



*eké-vel* with a plough, etc. This prolongation extends even so far, that, if affixes, which terminate with a short *e* or *a*, receive any other affixes whatsoever, the short *e* or *a* of the former is accentuated, as: *ruha* dress, *ruhá-ja* his dress, *ruhájá-vál* with his dress.

No prolongation takes place before the affixes *i*, *ság*, *kor*, *kép*, *ként*; as, *atyai* fatherly, *gyáva-ság* cowardice. Before the affixes *é*, *ig*, *ért*, *úl*; the short *a* and *e* may be prolonged, or their primitive sound retained; thus, *házá-ért* and *haza-ért*, for the fatherland; *atyá-úl* and *atya-úl*, like a father.

The protraction of the primitive roots of many words, as *szőni* to weave, from *szövní*; *lőni* to shoot, from *lövní*, belongs to Etymology strictly taken.

## 5. §. Contraction.

Contractions are often the consequence of Grammatical forms. A word taking any affixes whatever, is contracted by means of abbreviating the final-syllable; such contractions are performed:

- a) by shortening the long vowel of the final-syllable,
- b) by neglecting the short consonant of the final-syllable.

Detailed remarks on this subject will be found in the Theoretical part; here it may be remarked only, that such contractions do not take place if the final syllable terminates with a double consonant, if

the last syllable and the penultima have the same final consonant or consonants the articulations of which are not related in some way. The consonants which easily combine are the liquid *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, and the lingual *cs*, *cş*, *sş*, *ş*, either among themselves or with other consonants, especially palatals and dentals. For instance: *dolog-ot* the thing, contracted *dolgot*; *járom-at* the yoke, *jármát*; *tűkőr-öt* the mirror, *tűkröt*; *hajol-om*, I stoop, *hajlom*.

---

# COMPOSITIONS.

## I.

### **Verbs. — Active and Neuter. —**

The Hungarian language, as mentioned above, expresses the different Grammatical forms (Declension, Conjugation, Comparison) by means of affixes, which are joined to the roots of the words. The root of a Verb is called that part of it which remains after the termination of the Infinitive, *ni*, is taken away; thus, from *várni* the root is *vár*.

The Active Voice of Hungarian Transitive Verbs has two different forms, which have been styled by Grammarians the Indefinite and the Definite forms. The former relates to objects not strictly determined by the speaker, and may be called the Universal form; the latter relates to objects determined by the speaker either expressively or understood, to objective cases representing any determined object, and has been called the Definite form.

#### **A. Indefinite form of the Active Voice and the Neuter.**

##### *I n d i c a t i v e M o o d.*

##### 1. PRESENT TENSE.

*Vár-ok* I wait, I am waiting, I do wait, *vár-sz* thou waitest, thou art waiting, thou dost wait, *vár* he waits, he is waiting, he does wait; *vár-unk*

we wait, we are waiting, we do wait, *vár-tok*  
 you wait, you are waiting, you do wait, *vár-nak*  
 they wait, they are waiting, they do wait. —  
*Él-ek* I live, I am alive, *él-sz* thou livest, thou  
 art alive, *él* he lives, he is alive; *él-ünk* we live,  
 we are alive, *él-tek* you live, you are alive, *él-nek*  
 they live, they are alive.

*A' fiú vár; emberek várnak. A' fiúk irnak.*  
*Irok. Irunk. Az atya ir; fiúk járnak. Járunk. Az*  
*emberek sétálnak. Az állat él, állatok élnek.*  
*A' katona vív. Katonák vívnak. Vívunk. Vívtok. —*

The father writes. The mother is waiting. The  
 boys are waiting. I live. We live. They live. I  
 am walking. Boys are walking. The mother takes  
 a walk. We gather. Men gather. The boy gathers.  
 I am sitting. Animals are alive. The animal is alive.  
 The father is sitting. We are sitting. (A) soldier is  
 fighting. Soldiers do fight. The boys are fighting. \*)

## 2. FIRST PERFECT TENSE (Imperfect).

*Vár-ék* I waited, *vár-ál* thou waitedst, *vár-a*  
 he waited; *vár-ánk* we waited, *vár-átok* you  
 waited, *vár-ának* they waited. *Ül-ék* I sat, *ül-él*  
 thou satest, *ül-e* he sat; *ül-énk* we sat, *ül-étek* you  
 sat, *ül-ének* they sat. On the use of this Tense,  
 see the Theoretical part.

## 3. SECOND PERFECT TENSE (preteritum).

*Vár-tam* I have waited, I was wait-  
 ing, did wait, *vár-tál* thou hast waited,

\*) See the Vocabulary.

wast waiting, didst wait, *vár-t* he was waiting, did wait; *vár-tunk* we were waiting, did wait, *vár-tatok* you were waiting, did wait, *vár-tanak* and *vár-tak* they were waiting, did wait. — *Ül-tem* I was sitting, did sit, *ül-tél* thou wast sitting, didst sit, *ül-t* he was sitting, did sit; *ül-tünk* we were sitting, did sit, *ül-tetek* you were sitting, did sit, *ül-tek* and *ül-tenek* they were sitting, did sit. —

*A' fiúk szedtek. Fiú ült. Lány vart. Leányok vartak. Az anya várt. Emberek szedtek. Sétáltunk. Az állatok éltek. A' fiú járt. Fiúk jártak. Tanultunk; a' fiúk tanultak. Az atya irt. Az Emberek tanultak. Tanultatok. A' Katona vív-ott* (instead of *vív-t*). *Katonák vívtak.* —

The English compound Perfect: I have waited, we have sat, etc. is expressed by the same form of the second Perfect; thus, I have waited means *vár-tam*; they have lived, *éltek*.

Men were fighting. People did fight. The man did fight. I have fought. I have sat. You have walked. The boy has written. The father did write. Mother was writing. The daughter did sew. The son did write. We were walking. You were waiting\*). (A) soldier was fighting and (a) boy was

---

\*) The Personal Pronouns, I, thou, he, we, you, they, are by no means forms of Conjugation in the Hungarian language. The whole of the Conjugation consists in different affixes. These Pronouns are used before the Personal forms of the Verb as often as Emphasis requires them, or as often as they supply the Subject of the Verb. In this respect the Hungarian language agrees with the Latin entirely, as, *amamus* and *nos amamus* etc.

walking. We were sitting. Thou wast writing. I learn; father writes. The mother was sitting; the girl did sew. Animals were alive. Men did live. The boys have gathered. I gather. We did gather. You were gathering. —

#### 4. COMPOUND FUTURE.

*várni-fogok* I shall wait, *várni fogsz* thou wilt wait, *várni fog* he will wait; *várni fogunk* we shall wait, *várni fogtok* you will wait, *várni fognak* they will wait. —

*A' fiúk tanulni fognak. A' katonák vívni fognak. Szedni fogunk. Jární fogtok. A' leány varni fog. Az atya irt. Az ember ült. Az állat élt. Mi élni fogunk. Te írni fogsz és ő tanulni fog. A' ló fut. Az elefánt jár.*

Soldiers were fighting. We also did fight. I shall fight. The soldier will fight. People will run. The boys will play, we also shall play. I shall take a walk. The mother will sit, and the daughter will walk. We did take a walk. We shall write. You will write. They will sit. The boy is sitting and writing. The girls do walk and knit. Girls will walk, boys will run. We shall look. You will see. Thou seest. We did see. You have seen. They were looking.

#### **B. Definite Form of the Active Voice.**

The Definite Form always relates to objects spoken of which are, in any way whatever, determined, thus if the Objective Case governed by the



Active Voice be left out, it is understood to be represented by the Pronoun *him, her or it*, which in foreign languages are always added to the Verb. Thus, in *vágom* is understood, I cut *it*, — *írom*, I write it (the letter, or sentence mentioned).

*Indicative Mood.*

1. PRESENT TENSE.

*Vág-om* I cut, I am cutting, *vág-od* thou cutest, *vág-ja* he cuts; *vág-jük* we cut, we are cutting, *vág-játok* you cut, *vág-ják* they cut. — *Köt-öm* I bind, I am binding, *köt-öd* thou bindest, *köt-i* he binds; *köt-jük* we bind, *köt-itek* you bind, *köt-ik* they bind. — *Keres-em* I look for, *keres-ed* thou lookest for, *keres-i* he looks for; *keres-sük*\*) we look for, *keres-itek* you look for, *keres-ik* they look for. —

*Fiút keresek, a' fiút keresem. Ember-t látok, az embert látom. Katoná-t\*\*)* vernek, *a' katonát verik. A' leány ruhát var, leányok varják a' ruhát. A' leány varja a' ruhát. Búzát kötnek* (they sheaf corn), *a' búzát kötik* (they sheaf the corn). *A' leányok bokrétát kötnek, leányok kötik a' bokrétát. A' fiúk tanulják a' leczkét. Én leczkét tanulok.*

The characteristic of the Objective Case is *t*, preceded by a vowel if the final consonant of the Substantive were not easily combinable with it.

The Plural of Substantives is marked by the Character *k*, preceded by the same vowel that

\*) See on assimilation above § 3.

\*\*) See on Prolongation § 4.

precedes the *t* of the Objective Case. — In regard to the vowels to be used, see § 2, 3, and the Theoretical part. The Objective Case of the Plural Number has the same characteristic as the Objective Case of the Singular Number. This *t* is joined to the plural form by means of the vowels *a* for hard words, and *e* for soft ones. Thus, *ember*, Plural *ember-ek*, Objective Plural *ember-ek-et*. The same, *leány*, Pl. *leányok*, Obj. Pl. *leányokat*.

The labourer will work, the soldier will fight. The boys will learn, the girl will sew. We shall take a walk; the child will walk. Children play, the father writes. The mother did read and we also did read. I have spoken. We have read (a) book. You have written the book. We did look (at) the horses. You have seen the soldiers. I did see the soldiers. We have written the letter. Thou wast writing (a) letter. I have read the letters. Do you see the soldiers? Do you gather fruit? We bind (make a) nosegay, and you bind (sheaf the) corn.

## 2. PERFECT TENSE AND FUTURE.

*Olvas-tam* I have read, did read, was reading (it), *olvas-tad* thou hast read etc. (it), *olvas-ta* he has read; *olvas-tuk* we have read etc., *olvas-tátok* you have read, *olvas-ták* they have read. — *Olvasni fogom* I shall read (it), *olvasni fogod* thou wilt read, *olvasni fogja* he will read, *olvasni fogjuk* we shall read, *olvasni fogjátok* you will read, *olvasni fogják* they will read.



*A' fiú tanulta a' leczkét. A' katonák megverték az ellenséget. A' Tanító dicséri a' fiút. Tanítók dicsérik a' tanulókat. Tanulók tanulják a' leczkét. Én tanulok angolúl. Ti tanultátok az angol nyelvet. Mi azt tanulni fogjuk. Ő azt tanulta. A' leány azt tudja. Tudom azt. A' fiú tudja azt.*

I know the gentleman. You know the soldier. The enemy gained the battle. The soldiers have left the field of battle. The enemy was flying, he did leave the camp. The father has written the letter. I have read (a) letter. I shall praise the soldiers. You will blame the boys. I have learned English. I know German, I am learning the Hungarian language. The Hungarians (*a' Magyarok*) learn the English language. The Hungarians have beaten the Austrian (*osztrák*) army (*hadsereget*). I praise the champions. We honour the heroes. Soldiers love their leader (*vezérüket*).

### C. Subjunctive and Imperative Mood.

Indef. form. <i>vár-ják</i>	}	that I may wait, and, shall I wait?
Def. form. <i>vár-jam</i>		
<i>vár-jál</i>	}	that thou mayst wait
<i>vár-jad</i>		
<i>vár-jon</i>	}	that he may wait;
<i>vár-ja</i>		
<i>vár-junk</i>	}	that we may wait, shall we wait
<i>vár-juk</i>		
<i>vár-jatok</i>	}	that you may wait
<i>vár-játok</i>		

*vár-janak* }  
*vár-júk* } that they may wait. \*)

The forms of the Imperative Mood are entirely expressed by those of the Subjunctive mood. The second Person of the Singular Number admits *várjál* and *várj* (wait), the others suffer no alteration whatever. Thus, he shall wait, let him wait, are expressed by: *várjon*; so, let us wait! and shall we wait? are both *várjunk*; etc. In regard to assimilations of the characteristic *j* see § 3.

*Olvassunk. Nézzünk. Irjunk. Kössél* (instead of *Kötjél*). *Hozzál. Vívjál. Eljen. A' leány varjen. Járj! Várjunk? A' fiú várjon.*

The boy shall write, the soldier shall fight and overcome the enemy. Let us read. Learn the lesson. Read the letter. Shall we learn? Write! Wait! The boy shall play. Let us look for the book. Let us bind (make a) nosegay. He shall bind (make) it. Let us speak Hungarian. Let him speak English. Speak German. —

## D. Conditional.

### 1. PRESENT.

Indef. form. *olvas-nék* } I would, should read, and  
 Def. form. *olvas-nám* } that I might read  
                   *olvas-nál* } thou wouldst read  
                   *olvas-nád* }

---

\*) Words that belong to the class of soft ones receive *e*, instead of *a*, in their termination; thus: *ver-jem* I may beat, *ül-jek* I may sit.

<i>olvas-na</i>	}	he would read;
<i>olvas-ná</i>		
<i>olvas-nánk</i>	}	we would, should read, and that we might read
<i>olvas-nók</i>		
<i>olvas-nátok</i>	}	you would read etc.
<i>olvas-nátok</i>		
<i>olvas-nának</i>	}	they would read etc.
<i>olvas-nák</i>		

## PERFECT.

Expressing an action done or neglected because of a condition preceding. This Tense is a compound one and in Grammars it is given as the Pluperfect of the Subjunctive Mood, as the former Tense is given as the Imperfect Tense of the same Mood.

The formation of this Tense is easy, it being merely a repetition of the Perfect Tense of the Indicative Mood with the addition of *volna* (which means, it would be) to each Personal form.

Indef. *vár-tam* } *volna* { I should have waited,  
Def. *vár-tam* } (if) I had waited

*vár-túl* } *volna*, thou wouldst have waited etc.  
*vár-tad* }

*vár-t* } *volna*, he would have waited etc.  
*vár-ta* }

*vár-tunk* } *volna*, we would have waited  
*vár-tuk* }

*vár-tatok* } *volna*, you would have waited  
*vár-tátok* }

*vár-tanak* } *volna*, they would have waited.  
*vár-ták* }

Words that belong to the class of soft ones, have *e* instead of *a* and *o*; *ü* instead of *u*, and *ő* instead of *ó*, in their terminative syllable. Thus *él-tem volna*, I should have lived; *él-tél volna*; *él-t volna*; *él-tünk volna*, *él-tetek volna*, *éltek* or *él-tenek volna*.

*Az anyám (anyá-m, my mother) írna; az atyám (my father) írt volna. Én írnék. Ti írnátok. A' fiúk tanulnának. A' leányok (plural) vártak volna. A' gyermek járna. Mi sétáltunk volna. A' katonák győztek volna. Mi tisztelnők a' hőst. A' Katonák tisztelnék a' vezéreket (objective case plural see B. 1.). Szeretnék sétálni. Szeretnének ülni. Szeretnél járni. Szerettem volna látni. A' fiúk szeretnének játszani. A' tanulók szeretnének írni. Az anyám szeretne tanítani, én szeretnék tanulni. A' fiú szeretne olvasni. A' katona szeret vívni. A' hadvezér szeret győzni. Szeretnél látni? Szeretnétek ülni? Mi szeretnének sétálni.*

I should read, you would write. My father would have written. If the soldiers gain the battle. The enemy will take to flight. We should overcome the enemy. You would see. The enemy would have left the field of battle. If the army had fought (a) battle. I should like to learn. I should like to learn English (put: English to learn). I should like to speak Hungarian. Would you like to read? I should like, if I knew (I should if I could). My mother likes the flowers. My father would write. We should have written. I should like to write. I should have liked to read.

**E. The Verb „to be“. *Vagyok, I am.*****1. PRESENT.**

*Vagyok* I am, *vagy* thou art, *van* and *vagyon* he is, she is, it is; *vagyunk* we are, *vagytok* you are, *vannak* or *vágynak* they are.

The third Person of this Tense is missed in the sentence as often as it is a mere copula between the Substantive and its Adjective or any other Substantive used as Predicate. Thus, the sentence „the flower is beautiful“ will be translated in „the flower beautiful,“ and there will be: „*a' virág szép*“, instead of „*a' virág van szép*.“ The roses are beautiful flowers, will be: *A' rózsák szép virágok*, instead of saying: *a' rózsák vannak szép virágok*.

The Verb „to be“, in all its forms, follows the Adjective or Substantive used as Predicate of the sentence; thus, instead of saying: „I am a man, thou art diligent, we say: „I (a) man am, thou diligent art. Subject, Predicate and Copula agree in Number.

**2. PAST TENSE.**

*Voltam* I was, I have been, *Voltál* thou wast, and hast been, *volt* he was etc.; *voltunk* we were, *voltatok* you were, *voltak* or *voltanak* they were etc.

*A' fiú szorgalmatos. A' fiúk szorgalmatosak* (nominative plural) *voltak*. *Mi szorgalmatosak voltunk*. *A' katonák hősök* (heroes). *A' csata véres volt*. *A' csatamező terjedelmes*. *A' tábor nagy*.



*A' harcz hosszú. A' győzedelem bizonytalan. A' munka véghetlen. A' fáradtság mértékentűli.*

(The) Flowers are plants. The elephant is (an) animal. The tiger is cruel. The fox is cunning, Tyrants and tigers are equal. Foxes and politicians are artful. (The) Lyons are generous. Men are selfish. Nelson is renowned. England is free. Hungarians are slaves. Hungary was (a) kingdom. The Hungarians were brave. We were rich. You are poor, they were idle. —

*Valék* I was, *valál* thou wast, *vala* he was; *valánk* we were, *valátok* you were, *valának* they were\*).

### 3. CONDITIONAL.

*Volnék* I should be, If I were; *volnál* thou wouldst be, If thou were, *volna* he would be; *volnánk* we should be, *volnátok* you would be, *volnának* they would be.

There are no more Tenses of the Verb *vagyok*; all the others, as those of the Subjunctive and Infinitive Moods, the Participles, are supplied by the Verb *lenni*, to become. The Present Tense of the Verb *lenni*, is used as a Future of *vagyok*.

*Leszek* I shall be and I become, *leszesz* and *leszel* thou wilt be, *lesz*, *leszen* he will be; *leszünk* we shall be, *lesztek* you will be, *lesznek* they will be. —

*Ha gazdagok volnánk. Ha szabad volnék. Az idő szép lesz. A' nyár meleg volna. Az ősz hűvös*

---

\*) On the use of this tense see the Theoretical part.

*lesz. A' tél hideg. A' tavasz szép volt. Az anyám egészséges lesz. Az atyám beteg volna. Én jó leszek. Te szorgalmatos volnál. Mi tanulók leszünk.*

We should be rich. You will be diligent. They would be naughty. Thou art naughty. The boy would be good. The girls are good. We shall be ready. The soldier is brave. The soldiers will be brave. Nelson was (a) soldier. England is small. Britania is great. America is (a) republic. Republics are rare. (A) friend is faithful.

## II.

### Possessive forms of the Substantive.

#### A. The object possessed is but one.

*Ruhá-m* my dress, *ruhá-d* thy dress, *ruhá-ja* his and her dress. — *Ruhá-nk* our dress, *ruhá-tok* your dress, *ruhá-jök* their dress. In regard to the prolongation of the *a*, see Introd., § 4.

*Mező-m* my field, *mező-d* thy field, *meze-je*\*) his and her field; *mező-nk* our field, *mező-tök* your field, *meze-jök* their field.

*Barát-om* my friend, *barát-od* thy friend, *barát-ja* his and her friend; *barát-unk* our friend, *barát-otok* your friend, *barát-jök* their friend. —

---

\*) The same alteration of *ő* is to be observed in all the monosyllables and dissyllables, thus *nő* wife, *nőm* my wife, *ne-je* his wife; *erde-je* his wood. Words of more than two syllables do not admit this alteration; thus, *levegője* from *levegő* air.

*Felelet-em* my answer, *felelet-ed* thy answer, *felelet-e* his and her answer; *felelet-ünk* our answer; *felelet-etök* your answer, *felelet-ök* their answer.

Considering the affix *ja*, *je*, which mean his, her and its, and the affix *jok*, *jök*, which mean their, the *j* is missed if the Substantive terminates with one of the consonants *cs*, *cș*, *s*, *sz*, *ș*, *v*, *ny*, *ly*, *ty*, *gy*, or if the final syllable meets with an abbreviation. In consideration of the vowel, which is to be used with these affixes of possession, it may be remarked, that the same vowel which forms the Plural of the Substantives is used in these affixes as well; thus, *asztal*, Pl. *asztal-ok* tables, *asztal-om* my table; *madár*, Pl. *madar-ak* birds, *madar-am* my bird.

*A' Könyvem jó* (my book is good. See above sub E). *Az atyád vár.* *Az Anyánk ír.* *Anyánk ír.* *Barátotok hűtelen.* *A' Bátyám katona* (is a soldier). *A' hadseregünk vitéz.* *Vezérünk ügyes.* *Táborunk nagy.* *Ellenségünk kiengesztelhetlen.* *A' Tábornagyotok híres.* *A' királyunk szereti az országot.* *A' királyotok gyűlöli a' népet.*

The Objective Case „my friend,” my book“ etc, is given in the Hungarian language by *barátom-at*, *könyvem-et* etc., and the Objective of any Substantive, that may have the possessive affixes, will be given by an affixed *t*, preceded by the vowel *a* or *e*. The affix of the third Person, terminating in *a* or *e*, does not admit the vowel *a* or *e* before the *t*.



The terminations of the third Person, *jok* and *jök* often are changed into *juk* and *jük*; thus, *életük (életjük)* their life, instead of *életök*.

This alteration especially takes place when the *j* of these affixes is missed, in which case it may be done for the sake of perspicuity, when otherwise the Nominative Plural would be alike with these Affixes: as, *Asztaluk*, instead of *asztalok*, their table.

*Az anyám-at látom. Az atyámat keresem. A' barátodat láttam. Az atyámat várom. Ő a' bátyámat szereti. Az emberek gyűlölik egymást. A' tanulók szeretik a' tanítójukat. Az országunk nagy. Az országunkat meghódítá az ellenség. Szeretitek királyotokat (your king). —*

I have seen your friend. My mother has read your letter (*leveleteket*). Our field is large. Your forest is small. Thy lesson is difficult. His book is fine (a fine one). Our daughter is modest. Your child is naughty. My father likes thy brother. I do love my mother. Do you love your father? Do you wait (for) your elder sister? I am waiting for my friend. Thou didst look for thy friend (thy friend thou wast looking for). Our mother has expected your elder sister. Our army has vanquished our enemy. Our general is leading your army. Our Queen assists your king. Our realm (kingdom) is large and rich. Your realm was great and celebrated.

Observ. In order to find out the root, to which the affix *m*, *d*, *nk*, *tok* etc. is to be affixed,

beginners may always form the Nominative of the Plural Number of that Noun, to which they wish to join the required possessive affix; if the Plural be formed, then take away the Plural *k*, and join the required affix to it. For instance, I wish to say „my neighbour;“ — *szomszéd* has in the Plural *szomszédok*, taking off *k* and joining *m*, I have „*szomszédom*“, which is the word required. The affix of the third person *ja* and *je* joins the Nominative of the Singular number immediately, thus „his neighbour“ is, *szomszédja*.

**B. The objects possessed are more than one.**

*Ruhá-im* my dresses, *ruhá-id* thy dresses, *ruhá-i* his dresses, *ruhá-ink* our dresses, *ruhá-itok* your dresses, *ruhá-ik* their dresses.

The characteristic of the Plural is *i*, which precedes the affixal consonants *m*, *d*, *nk*, *k* and the syllable *tok*.

When the Substantive to which the affixes are to be joined terminates with a consonant, as: *barát*, *asztal*, the third Person of the Singular Number of *a*, is taken as the radical, and the Plural affixes are added to this radical, thus *barátja* his friend being the third Person of the Singular, *barátja-im* will be my friends, *barátja-id* thy friends, *barátja-i* his friends etc. *Levele-im* my letters, *levele-id* thy letters, *levele-i* his letters, *levele-ink* our letters, *levele-itek* your letters, *levele-ik* their letters.

As the affixes: *im*, *id*, *i* may easily be joined to the Substantives themselves, without the accession of any other vowel, we shall get a second Plural form, which will be: *barát-im* my friends, *barát-id* thy friends, *barát-i* his friends, *barát-ink* our friends etc. — The first form is preferable in familiar conversation.

Substantives terminating with *ő* abbreviate this vowel in the third person of the Singular number (see under A), such Substantives, as above mentioned, therefore have a double plural form, the first of them is given in considering as their radical the long *ő*, the second, in considering as their radical the short *e* of the third Person; thus the Substantive *mező* forms *mező-im* and *meze-im* my fields etc., both forms are correct, but the latter has received the sanction of the people. —

*Szeressed a' felebarátodat. Szeressétek ellenségeiteket is. Az atyám és a' bátyám is elutazott* (instead of *elutazt*, Perf. Tense). *Barátim voltak. Nem minden barátink hűek* (misses *vannak*, are). *Ellenségeink gyűlölnek. A' Katonáink megverték az ellenséget. Az Angolok* (are) *barátjaink. Országok* (instead *országok*) *nagy, kereskedésök terjedelmes, hatalmuk* (instead *hatalom-jok*) *erős. A' Tábournok szereti a' katonáit. A' szülő szereti gyermekeit. Könyveim elvesztek. Könyveidet láttam, leveleidet olvastam. A' bátyám olvasta a' leveledet. A' fiú tanulja a' lelkéjét; a' leányom a' ruháját varta. Én a' nényédet vártam.*

Our soldiers honour their leader. Your king pays his soldiers. They do pay their debts. Our soul is immortal, but our body is mortal. Your children (are) idle, but his daughter (is) diligent. My friends (are) industrious. Your enemies (are) powerful. My dress is dear. His time is valuable (dear). We found your book. Charles found his pen. Albert read (the) his lesson. The teacher has seen our translation. (The) Our father has praised your brother, he has learned his lesson.

### C. The Possessive Case. Genitive.

#### 1.

The Hungarian language expresses the Possessive Case by means of the possessive affixes. The Possessive Case always supposes two different notions, the one that of the Subject possessing, the other that of the object possessed; this latter receives the possessive affixes of the third Person either Singular or Plural.

With the Substantive relating to the possessor there is used the affix *nak* or *nek*, which is not expressed, but indicated by an apostrophe, unless the perspicuity or Euphony would require its plain expression. Thus, the father's house, we say: *az atya' háza*; the scholar's books, *a' tanuló' könyvei*; the courage of the soldiers, *a' katonák' bátor-ságuk*; the pens of the scholars, *a' tanulók' tollaik*;

or *a' tanulók-nak tollaik, a' katonák-nak bátorságuk* etc.

This possessive form, resulting from the representation of the Possessive Case, is to be considered as a new Nominal root the Objective and Possessive cases of which will be formed regularly. Thus, the roof of our neighbour's house, will be: *a' szomszédunk' (szomszédunk-nak) házának a' fedele*; I have seen thy brother's book *a' bátyád' könyvét láttam*.

*Az embereknek életük (is) rövid. Az emberek' szerencsájuk (is) változó. A' szomszédunknak háza szép. A' szüleink' (szülőkink) véghetetlen szerelmük (szerel-em). Barátjaink' hűsége vigasztaló. A' léleknek tehetségéi felülmúlják a' testnek erejét (instead of erőjét). Az ember' cselekedetének forrása a' szív. A' világnak öt részei. Columbus felfedezte a' világnak egy (one) részét. Amerikának termékenységé. Ázsiának terményei. A' népeknek természetményei.*

England exports (*kiviszi*) its products. (The) Englishmen sell their productions. (The) My father received my mother's letter. You have written (the) your letter. I shall write my letters. The instinct of the animals. The reason of men. The destiny of humankind. The fate of people (*népeknek* Plur.). The wisdom and goodness of (the) God. The power of (the) kings. The desires of (the) nations. The commerce (*közlekedés*) of nations enriches the mind of the people and increases their wealth. The commerce (*kereskedés*) of Ame-



rica is extensive. The invention (*feltalálás*) of (the) Typography. The inventions (*találmány*) of Watt. The History of France. The wars of the middle ages.

## 2.

Whose is..? It is that of. Is that — of? etc.

The interrogative sentence relating to possession, which in other languages is expressed by the Possessive Case, is given by the affix *é* in the Hungarian language; thus „whose is...?“ means *Kié?* — It is that of the merchant, means *a' kalmáré*, and „is this house that of our neighbour?“ means *a' szomszédunké ez a' ház*.

In consideration of this latter expression, the interrogative *e* is often annexed to it, and instead of „*a' szomszédunké ez a' ház*,“ we may say *a' szomszédunké-e ez a' ház*. — The expressions *atyám* my father, *nényéd* thy elder sister, etc. being considered as so many new Nominative Cases, the affix *é* will be added to them as it is added to radicals of Substantives; thus, *az atyámé* that of my father. The Definite Article *az* or *a'* is never missed before Substantives of this form; the Demonstrative *ez* this, *az* that, precedes the Substantives representing the Objects possessed.

*Az atyám' háza. Ez a' ház az atyámé. Kié ez a' könyv? A' barátomé. Ez a' toll a' tanítóé. Kié ez a' kert? A' nagybátyámé. Ez a' jószág a' nagynénymé. Ez a' nagynénym' jószágá. Kié az az írás? Az öcsémé* (that of my younger

brother) *Láttuk az atyád' házát de nem a' nagybátyádét. Kié ez a' kocsí? az anyámé. Kié ez a' ruha? Az enyém. Láttad az órámat? Én láttam a' bátyádét. Ezek a' keztyűk (pair of gloves) az anyáméi. Ezek a' tollak a' bátyáméi. Kiéi azok (those) a' lovak. A' Herczegéi, a' gróféit nem ösmerem.*

If we consider the preceding sentences, we shall find, that the expression „*Kié*“ is really a Nominative Case of the Singular, the Objective Case of which is *Kiét*, the Plural *Kiéi*, the Objective Case for the Plural Number is *Kiéit*. The same of *az atyámé*, the Objective Case will be *az atyámét*. The Plural Nominative *az atyáméi*, the Plur. Obj. *az atyáméit*. —

The copulative Verbs „is“ and „are“ are missed.

Whose is that garden, and whose are, those houses. This garden is my father's (that of my father) and those houses are my uncle's. Whose hat is this. It is that of my brother. My father's is (a new one) new. Do you like your father's horses? I like those of my aunt. (I that of my aunt like.) Whose gloves are these (whose are these gloves). They are those of my teacher. Do you know (*tudja-e*) our teacher's residence? I do (I know it). Whose is that book? My friend's. Is this book thy friend's or not (Thy friend's this the book, or not)? — Similar sentences as: Is this house our father's? are to be resolved in: Is this the house of our father? etc.

## 3.

Mine, Thine etc., of mine, of ours etc., it belongs to me etc.

As often as the possession is indicated by forms similar to the premised ones, which is the case when the Personal Pronouns are used instead of the Substantive representing the possession (as in the sentence whose is that book? mine — instead of it is my book), the Hungarian language makes use of affixes, which are identical with those given under II. A. B. (p.26, 29) These affixes are joined to the Personal Pronouns: *Én* I, *te* thou, *ő* he, *mi* we, *ti* you, *ők* they.

Their complete forms are:

1. The object possessed is but one — *enyém* mine, *tiéd* thine, *övé* his, her, its; *miénk* ours, *tiétek* yours, *övék* theirs.

2. The objects possessed are more than one — *enyéim* and *enyím* mine, *tiéd* thine, *övéi* his, hers, its; *miénk* ours, *tiétek* yours, *övéik* theirs.

*Ez a' könyv az enyém, az a' toll a' tiéd, de kié ez az irás? A miénk. Kié ez a' ló? A' tiéd. Kié ez a' tollkés (to whom belongs this penknife)? az övé (it belongs to him). Kié ez a' papiros? a' miénk. A' tiétek ez a' ház; a' tiétek-e ez a' ház (does this house belong to you)? nem, (no) a' szomszédunké (it belongs to our neighbour). Ez a' könyv az enyém, az a' keztyű a' tiéd. Ez a' séta-bot a' tiéd volt. Kiéi azok a' rétek? A' miénk, de az erdő a' tiétek. —*



The copulatives *is* and *are*, are missed.

The Objective Cases of both Numbers are formed like those of Substantives of similar forms, thus: I have sold mine — *az enyém-et eladtam*.

Is that book yours (yours that the book)? It is my brother's (*a' bátyámé*). This pen is ours, but those writings are yours. Whose garden is that (that garden whose is it)? It is ours. These houses are yours and those (*azok*) are your uncle's. Have you seen our gardens. We have seen theirs, but not yours. Your book is not ours, and our pens are not theirs. Whose inkstand is this (whose is this inkstand)? Mine. Whose copy-book is that? Yours. Whose is this walking-cane? His. Whose gloves are those? Hers. To whom belongs this meadow? It belongs to us (ours). To whom belong these houses and those gardens? They belong to them. That belongs to me and this to you. That is thine and this is his. The house is ours, the garden is yours and the meadow is his. The fields are thine and the horse is mine.

### III.

#### **Affixes relative to place, directions, and expressions of the Dative Case.**

##### 1.

The affixes mentioned here are in foreign languages expressed by means of Prepositions, this is the reason, why most of the Hungarian Grammarians mention them as Conjunctive Prepositions, whilst

a few classified them as Postpositions (*utóljárók*). In examining them closer we find, that they are merely affixes used like all other affixes to express the different relations of place, directions and combinations of objects. Such are:

*ba* into, relating to movement, motion,

*ban* in, relating to quietude,

*ról* from, relative to directions downwards,

*tól* from of, relative to removal,

*ból* out of,

*hoz* to, expressing: by the side of, or next to, towards,

*nak* to, which in the German and Latin is expressed by the Dative Case,

*nál* by, at,

*val* with,

*ért* for,

*n*, with or without a vowel *o*, *ö* or *e*. — on, upon, at; at the question where?

*ra* on, upon (at); at the question where to?

*ért* for,

*ig* till, untill,

*kép* in the form of ..., in the shape of ...,

*ként* like, as,

*úl* as,

*vá* to, into, expressing a transformation.

The words of the Hungarian language being either hard or soft, all the affixes assimilate their vowels to those of the word to which they are added; thus, we shall have as many affixes of the

same kind, having the vowels *ö* instead of *ó*, and *e* instead of *a*; thus, *be* instead of *ba*, *ről* instead of *ról* etc. The affix *hoz* gives *höz* and *hez* for soft words.

*A' templomból. A' szobából. A' falhoz, az asztalon. A' könyvben. Én az asztalra tettem* (I have put it on the table). *A' templomban voltunk. Az iskolába megyünk* (we go). *A' könyvbe irtam. Az atyámnál voltam. Én és a' bátyám mi a' nagybátyánk' kertjében voltunk* (we have been in our uncle's garden). *A' barátomhoz megyek* (I go). *Én az atyámnak adtam. A' nényémnek adom. Az anyámtól kaptam. A' húgom* (my younger sister) *a' barátnéjának könyvet adott* (has given) *ajándékba* (for a present). *Én ezt a' könyvet ajándékba kaptam az anyámtól. A' kertből jövünk. A' szobába megyünk. A' házban vagyunk. Az asztalra tettem. A' könyv az asztalon van.*

The Verb follows its Substantive.

We come (*jövünk*) from (out of) church. You go (*mentek*) to (*ba*) school. We go into the garden. I have been at my friend's. I learn with pleasure. You write with (a) pen. He learns out of (a) book. I have received (a) book for a present from my father. My mother gave (*adott*) (a) book to her elder sister. I have carried a letter to my uncle. We have received flowers from our gardener. Our gardener's son has given flowers to my younger sister.

He has put it (*tette*) on the table. The book is\*) on the table. The letter is at my fathers. My brother went (*ment*) for (some) flowers. I bought (*vettem*) (a) horse (*lovat*) for two hundred (*két száz*) guineas.

## 2.

All the other terms, representing the Prepositions of foreign languages, are placed immediately after the Substantive to which they belong, but they are not joined with the Substantives; thus, „over the table“ means *az asztal felett*. As (under II C, 3) the Possessive Pronouns mine, thine, his etc. were expressed by means of possessive affixes *m*, *d*, *ja*, etc., the Prepositional affixes likewise are joined with the possessive personal affixes. Instead of joining *ben* to the Pronoun *én*, as *énben*, in me, the possessive affix *m* with the proper vowel is added to the Prepositional affix *ben*; thus, *énben* becomes *bennem*, *teben* (in thee) becomes *benned*, and so on. There being some irregularities in forming these expressions, therefore they are subjoined in the following scheme:

<i>ban</i> }	gives,	<i>bennem</i> in me, <i>benned</i> in thee, <i>benne</i> <i>ben</i> } in him, in her, in it, <i>bennünk</i> in us, <i>bennetek</i> in you, <i>bennök</i> in them.
<i>ben</i> }		
<i>ba</i> }	in	(to the question where to?) <i>belém</i> in me, <i>beléd</i> in thee, <i>belé</i> or <i>beléje</i> in him, her, it, <i>belénk</i> in us, <i>belétek</i> in you, <i>beléjük</i> in them.
<i>be</i> }		

---

\*) In similar constructions the „is“ *van*, must be expressed.

*ra* } on (where to?) *reám* (*rám*) on me, *reád* (*rád*)  
*re* } on thee, *reú* (*rú*), — *reünk*  
 (*rünk*) on us, *rútok*, *rújok*.

*n* on (where?) *rajtam* on me, *rajtad* on thee, *rajta*,  
*rajtunk* on us, *rajtatok*, *rajtok*.

*hoz* to (towards?) *hozzám*, to me, *hozzád* to thee,  
*hozzá*, *hozzája* to him, her, it, *hozzánk* to us, *hozzátok*, *hozzájok*.

*nek* to (to whom?) *nekem* to me, *neked* to thee,  
*neki* to him, her, it, *nekünk* to us,  
*nektek*, *nekik*.

*ből* out of, *belőlem* out of me, from me, *belőled*,  
*belőle*, *belőlünk* out of us, from us,  
*belőletek*, *belőlök*.

*től* from, *tőlem* from me, *tőled* from thee, *tőle*  
 from him, her, it, *tőlünk* from us,  
*tőletek* from you, *tőlük* from them.

*ról* of, from, (motion downwards) *rólam* of me, from  
 me, *rólad* of and from thee, *róla* of  
 and from him (her, it), *rólunk*, *rólato-*  
*tok*, *róluk*.

*nál* by, at (relative to place), *nálam* at my home,  
 by me, with me, *nálad*, *nála*; *nálunk*,  
*nálatok*, *nálok*.

*ért* for, *értem* for me (for my sake) *érted*, *érte*;  
*értünk*, *értetek*, *értök*.

*vel* with (in company with), *velem* with me, *veled*,  
*vele*, *velünk* with us, *veletek*, *velök*.



*Az Isten igazságos bízunk* (instead of *bizunk*, see § 3) *benne* (let us trust in him). *Az öcsém nálam volt. Tegnap nálunk vendégek voltak. Az atyám nekem adta az óráját, én pedig* (and I) *neked adom. Nekünk ajándékozták ezt a' könyvet* (this book). *Én nektek adtam a' ruhámat. Mond-meg* (tell) *neki. Az anyám neki azt mondta. Én tőled kaptam. A' kertészünk tőlünk kapja kenyérét. Ez nem áll rajtam* (this does not depend on me). *Rólam azt mondják* (people say that of me). *Hazánk tőlünk háladatosságot kíván, rajtunk áll kötelességünket teljesíteni. Szüleink mindent tesznek* (do) *értünk. A' gyermekek nem tesznek mindent értők.*

He told me (to me) that. My parents gave me (to me) a very fine book. I shall give you (to you) apples, pears and plums\*). Did you give him (to him) grapes and figs. I make you a present of these pictures (I present to you these pictures). We have received from you (a) book, (a) pen and (a) copy-book. I have been to your home. Our brother has been with you. Will you go to him (to him will you go)? No, we have received (a) letter from him (from him we have received letter). Did you say that of him? We have not spoken of him (of him not we have spoken). If you speak of me, I shall speak of you (If of me you speak, I of you shall speak).

---

\*) The collective nouns are to be used in the Singular Number.

## IV.

# Expression of the Verb „To have“, „to be in possession of...“

## 1.

*Nekem van órá́m* I have a watch, *neked van órá́d* thou hast a watch, *néki van órá́ja* he has a watch, *nekiünk van órá́nk* we have a watch, *nektek van órá́tok* you have a watch, *nekik van órá́jok* they have a watch.

The past Tense is formed by using *volt* and *voltak*; thus:

I have had a watch *nekem volt órá́m*, thou hast had a watch *neked volt órá́d*, etc.

The Future: I shall have a watch, *nekem lesz órá́m*, thou wilt have a watch *neked lesz órá́d* etc.

Thus the Verb „to have“ is expressed by means of *nekem*, *neked*, *néki*, *nekiünk*, *nektek*, *nekik*, the third Persons of the Verb to be, throughout all its Moods and Tenses, and the object possessed with its relative affixes of possession.

The litteral translation of *nekem van órá́m* is „to me is my watch,“ which is derived from: „my watch is belonging to me“. This expression really is a pleonasm and this pleonasm is the reason why the expression *nekem van órá́m* is shortened into *van órá́m*, in which the *nekem* is neglected entirely.

Thus, the shorter expressions are: I have a watch, *van órá́m*, thou hast a watch, *van* he

and she has a watch, *van órája* etc. The same way all the other Tenses are shortened.

If instead of the Personal Pronoun: *Én, te, ő, I, thou, he, she* etc. any other Substantive be used, the affix *nak* or *nek* — to must be joined with the Substantive used: *A' tanítónak van órája*, the teacher has a watch.

*Az atyámnak van háza; a' nagybátyámnak van kertje; nekünk van könyvünk. Van-e \*) munkád? Nekünk van kertünk. Van-e házatok? Nekem van kedvem dolgozni. Mi dolgod van (what have you to do)? Nekem volt könyvem a' bátyámnak lesz papirosa és tolla. Nekünk lesz pénzünk nektek pedig lesz gyümölcsötök. Lesz-e időd? Lesz-e nektek időtök? Ha volna időm. Ha időm volna. Volna időm. Legyen neki is almája (let him have apples as well). Legyen neked órád (thou mayst have a watch).*

I had (a) book, you had money, they had (a) dress. My father had (a) house, my aunt had a garden. We may have fruit. You had grapes, but they had pears. My brother will have (a) watch, let him have (a) penknife. If I had a book. I should learn. If my sister had a master (*tanító*), she would learn Hungarian (Hungarian she would

---

\*) The letter *e* is very often added to the Verb in interrogative sentences; if the Verb be missed it is added to the Substantive, to which the question relates. Thus *van-e munkád?* hast thou got work; *könyv-e vagy írás*, a book or writings.



learn). I had a teacher of languages. My teacher of languages had a book, and he gave it to me (and that to me he gave). My mother had a ring and she gave it to me. My brother has sold his horses (*lovait*). I have said that to you. We have received a letter. —

## 2.

If the objects possessed are more <sup>than one</sup> the affixes of plurality are used and the copulative Verb to be is used in the Plural Number as well. I have a watch, means *nekem van óráim*; I have watches, will mean *nekem vannak óráim*, thou hast watches *neked vannak óráid*. The same way all the other Tenses are formed.

If the Personal Pronoun I, is used with any Emphasis, in: „I have, and not, Thou hast,” then the Personal Pronouns *én*, *te*, *ő*, I, thou, he etc. are put before the words *nekem*, *neked*, *neki* etc. Thus, I had a watch, and not my friend, means *én nekem volt óráim nem pedig a' barátomnak*.

Obs. The Personal Pronouns are used expressively as often as there is put any Emphasis on personal distinctions; thus, „I have done it” (and no other one else), we say, *én tettem azt*, — my book (in opposition of some one else's), we say *az én könyvem*, etc. The same is to be observed of other personal distinctions.

*Nekünk van kertünk. Ti nektek vannak kertjeitek. Az atyámnak vannak lovai. A' városnak,*

*vannak lakosai. A' katonának van bátorsága. A' hadvezérnek van tehetsége* (The leader of the army is an able man). *A' népnek van szabadsága. A' királyoknak van hatalmuk. Angliának van gazdagsága. Britaniának van hajóserege. A' Magyaroknak van híre. Americának van szabadsága. A' Britteknek van királynők. Európának vannak zsarnokai.* —

Men have (a) soul. Animals have (an) instinct. The lion is strong (translate: has strenght). (The) Birds have wings. (The) Plants have roots. Our gardener has flowers. My aunt has (a) garden. We have trees in our garden. The trees have fruit. We had apples, you had grapes. My younger sister will have fine (*szép*) dresses. You will have (a) fine piano. My father has fine horses. Our uncle has large (*nagy*) houses. (The) kings have (the) power over the people. The generals have soldiers. England has brave admirals. Nelson had brave soldiers. (The) People shall have their liberty. The righteous will have their reward.

### 3. I have not.

Negations are expressed by *nem*. I have not, will be *nekem nem van* and *nekem nem vannak*. The expressions *nem van* and *nem vannak*, are contracted in *nincs*, *nincsen* and *nincsenek*. The Past Tense is: *nem volt*, the Future: *nem lesz*. In the Subjunctive Mode the *nem* is changed into *ne*; thus, *ne legyen*, means may not have.

*Nekem nincs óráim (I have no watch). Neked nincsen ruhád, neki nincs könyve. A' tanítónak nincs ideje. Az atyámnak nincsen lova. Nekünk nincs kertünk. Nektek nincsenek tollaitok. Ő nekik nincsenek könyveik. A' tanulónak nem volt tantája. A' fiúnak nem lesz kedve. Nekem nincsen kedvem (I am not in the humor for). Nektek nincsen kedvetek tanulni (you are not in the humor for learning). A' húgomnak nincs kedve játszani. Ne legyen neki órája. Ne legyenek a' fiúnak könyvei. Nem lesznek lovai az atyádnak. Nincsenek-e neked tollaid? Nem volt-e a' fiúnak lezskéje? Az anyádnak nem volt-e kocsija? Az anyámnak van kocsija de a' nagynénységnek nincsen.*

I do like (*nekem van kedvem*) to play. My brother likes to learn. I am in the humor for reading. We have got (a) house, you have no garden. Your parents have (a) fine (*szép*) house and large fields. Our soldiers have muskets and bayonets. Your soldiers have swords. My brother has books, but my sister has none. Our father has money, but we have none. I had no pocket-handkerchief. You have no cravat. I shall have a new dress, but you will have none.\*) My brother has a fine bird, and my sister has a little (*kis*) dog. Our aunt has fine jewels. I have a diamond, my sister a ruby, and my brother an emerald. The king has many (*sok*) diamonds in his crown.

---

\*) *nektek nem lesz* = you will have none.

## V. Attributes of Substantives

(Adjectives and Numerals).

### 1.

Any attributive term of a Substantive whatever precedes its Substantive immediately and is invariable before it; if the Substantive is missed, the Adjective receives the affixes of the Substantive.

*Jó ember. Jó ember' tette* (his action). *A' jó fiút szereti a' tanító. A' tanító a' szorgalmatos fiúnak könyvet adott. Az én\*) nagy könyvemet az édes\*\*) (dear) anyámtól kaptam ajándékba. A' jó Istenben bízunk ő mindenható és könyörületes. Az édes atyám nekem szép képet adott* (gave). *Az én könyvemben vannak szép képek, de a' te könyvedben nincsenek* (are none: see above). *A' mi nagy kertünkben vannak magas fák, a' kis kertünkben nincsenek fák, de szép virágok. Van nekünk nagy rétünk, sok szántóföldünk és szép házunk.*

I have a fine watch, and you have (a) beautiful gold-chain. My brother has received (a) fine picture from his good uncle. Our dear aunt gave us two (*két*) books for a present. Our Queen has a large army, many cannons, and a great fleet. The commerce of England is extensive, its fleet protects the far-sailing ships of the merchants. The great ocean separates the savages of Australia from the civilized nations of Europe.

---

\*) *én* precedes the substantive *könyvem* my book, because of emphasis, see IV. 2.

\*\*) *édes*, sweet, is a common attribute of persons beloved to us.

## 2.

## Comparison of Adjectives.

*Magas* high, *magasabb* higher, *leg-magasabb* highest; *ritka* rare, *ritkébb* rarer, more scarce, *leg-ritkébb* rarest; *veres* red, *veresebb* redder, *leg-veresebb* reddest.

The Comparative is formed by means of *bb*, which is preceded by the vowel *a* or *e*, if the Adjective terminates with a consonant.

Obs. Words ending in *ű*, *i*, and *s* receive the termination of the Comparative either with a preceding vowel, or without it; if the vowel *a* or *e* is missed after *s*, then only a single *b* is used as the termination of the Comparative. *Régi* ancient, *régibb* and *régiebb* more ancient; *sűrű* dense, *sűrűbb* and *sűrűebb* more dense; *világos* light, *világosabb* and *világosb* lighter. —

In compounds the latter part of which has a final *ú* or *ű*, only the first part of the composition receives the termination of the Comparative: *nagylelkű*, *nagyobb-lelkű*.

*Az orosz lány nagy állat a' viziló nagyobb, az elefánt legnagyobb, Scotiának vannak magas bérczei. Olaszországnak a' hegyei magasabbak, a' svajczi hegyek legmagasabbak. A' tigris (van) kegyetlen, a' hyena (van) kegyetlenebb, de a' zsarnokok (vannak) legkegyetlenebbek. A' kegyetlen zsarnok kiűzi a' jó hazáfit a' hazájából. Az ezüst drága, az arany drágább, a' gyémánt legdrágább. Minden embernek van esze, de nem minden ember használja az eszét. A' jó munkás tudja használni a' rossz*



*szerszámot is. Ravasz ember károsabb mint az állat. Az élet drágább mint az öltözet. Én láttam magas hegyet, de a' bátyám magasabbat látott (he saw). A' mi házunk drága, de a' ti házaitek még drágábbak.*

Our room (is) light, but yours (is) lighter. His coat (is) dearer than yours. Our lesson (is) difficult, yours (is) more difficult (*nehezebb*), theirs (is) the most difficult. The patriot loves his country (*hazáját*). The general loves the brave soldiers, he praises the gallant struggler. Nelson was a valiant admiral and Napoleon an excellent military commander. Luther was the great reformer of the declining church of Christ. Melanchthon was the sincerest friend of Luther and the meekest of all (the) reformers. Great men are immortal, their names are as many monuments in History. The wars of the middle ages were more sanguinary than the wars of recent times.

## 3.

*Jó good, jobb better, legjobb best.*

*szép beautiful, szebb more beautiful, legszebb most beautiful.*

*sok much, many, több more, legtöbb most.*

*könnyű light, easy, könnyebb lighter, easier, legkönnyebb lightest, easiest.*

*kicsiny, kis little, kisebb less, legkisebb least.*

*Jobb egy veréb a' kézben, mint egy tuzok a' házon. Többet adni nem vétek. Az emberek mindég többet kívánnak. Kinek sok van (he who has much) az még többet kíván. Könnyebb mondani*

*mint sem tenni. Szebb (more pleasant) az élet a' mesében mint a' valóban. A' mi kertünkben vannak szép virágok, de a' tiétekben szebb virág van. Nekem van kis kutyám, de a' nényémé még kisebb. A' mi kertünk kicsiny; a' ti házatok is kicsiny. A' kis kertben szebb virág van mint a' nagyban.*

The daughter of our neighbour is more beautiful than this girl. We have much money, but our uncle has (still) more. We have seen a fine horse, but we have (a) finer (one). The little dog of my sister has a black colour. Your dog is (a) little (one), but that of my sister is (a smaller one) less. Have you much money? I had more than I have now. You had many houses. We shall have more gardens. You will receive more letters. Our lesson is easier (The) Wood is lighter than (the) metal, and the air is still lighter.

## 4.

## Numerals.

<i>Egy</i>	1	<i>tizenegy</i>	11	<i>harmincz</i>	30
<i>kettő</i>	2	<i>tizenkettő</i>	12	<i>harminczegy</i>	31
<i>három</i>	3	<i>tizenhárom</i>	13	<i>negyven</i>	40
<i>négy</i>	4	<i>tizennégy</i>	14	<i>negyvenegy</i>	41
<i>öt</i>	5	<i>etc.</i>		<i>ötven</i>	50
<i>hat</i>	6	<i>húsz</i>	20	<i>hatvan</i>	60
<i>hét</i>	7	<i>huszonegy</i>	21	<i>hetven</i>	70
<i>nyolcz</i>	8	<i>huszonkettő</i>	22	<i>nyolczvan</i>	80
<i>kilencz</i>	9	<i>huszonhárom</i>	23	<i>kilenczven</i>	90
<i>tíz</i>	10	<i>etc.</i>		<i>száz</i>	100

*ezer 1000, milliom million.*



<i>Első</i> first,	<i>tizenegyedik</i> eleventh,
<i>második</i> second,	etc.
<i>harmadik</i> third,	<i>huszadik</i> twentieth,
<i>negyedik</i> fourth,	<i>huszonegyedik</i> twenty-first,
<i>ötödik</i> fifth,	<i>harminczadik</i> thirtieth,
<i>hatodik</i> sixth,	etc.
<i>hetedik</i> seventh	<i>századik</i> hundredth,
<i>nyolczadik</i> eighth,	etc.
<i>kilenczedik</i> ninth,	<i>ezredik</i> thousandth,
<i>tizedik</i> tenth,	etc.

*Hány az óra* (what o' clock is it)? *Három negyed négyre* (a quarter to four). *Hány ember van a' szobában?* *Tizennégy.* *Mennyit adtál az órédért?* *Három font sterlinget.* *Hány shilling van egy font sterlingben?* *Húsz.* *Mennyit kíván a' kalmár?* *Hat fontot meg* (and) *két shillinget.* *Hanyadik van ma* (what is the date)? *A' huszonharmadik.* *Első, vagy szent István volt az első magyar király, harmadik András pedig az utolsó.* *Magyarországnak volt öt magyar fejedelme, és húsz magyar királya.* *Első László volt a' leg-híresebb magyar király.* *Első Lajos király alatt Magyarország legterjedelmesebb volt.* —

What o' clock is it? It is half past five (two quarters on six). How much money have you? We have six shillings and a few pence. How many pence are (is) in a shilling? In a shilling there are twelve pence. A week has seven days, and a year has 365 days. Sunday is the first day of the

week, Monday the second, Tuesday the third, Wednesday the fourth, Thursday the fifth, Friday the sixth, Saturday the last. What is the day of the month? It is the fourth of January. George the First died on the eleventh of June in the year 1727 (*ezer hétszáz huszonhetedik évben*). In the year 1848 Europe struggled for its liberty. Christmas is on the 25th of December, Easter is in March or April, and Whitsuntide in May or June. —

## 5.

## Verbal Adjective (Participle).

From any Verbal root may be derived two Adjectives, one by means of an additional *ó* or *ő*, and the second by the addition of *t*, *ott*, *ött*, or *ett*, according to the demand of the Verbal root.

These two Adjectives cannot be translated in other languages but by means of the Participles, although the Hungarian language has other expressions for the Participles of the modern languages (see below).

From the Verb *várni* to wait, is formed, *váró*, expecting and waiting (a man waiting for), and *várt*, expected or waited for. —

Constructions by means of these Adjectives very often can be translated only by using the Relative Pronouns *who*, *what*, *which*; and, on the contrary, constructions of foreign languages with these Pronouns, are better given by means of the Verbal Adjective in the Hungarian language.

*A' dolgozónak gyakran nincs jutalma* — he who works has often no reward. *A' sokat váró gyakran keveset nyer* — those who expect much, get often very little.

*A' megvert Ellenséggel nagylelkűen bánni dicsőséges*, it is glorious to treat the vanquished enemy generously. *Ő megnyerte az elveszettnek gondolt csatát*, he won the battle, which he thought was lost.

These Adjectives, especially that of *ó*, are very often used as Substantives:

*Szabó* tailor, from *szabni* to cut; *beszélő*, *szóló* speaker, from *beszélni*, *szólni* to speak; *vető* sower, from *vetni* to sow (seminate); *mesélő* the story teller, from *mesélni* to narrate; *író* the writer, author, from *írni* to write; *a' megtébolódott* the madman; etc.

## VI.

### Transformation of the Verbal root.

#### A. Passive Voice.

##### 1.

By the addition of the syllable *at*, *et*, to the radical of the Active Voice, there is formed a new Verbal root, the root of the Passive Voice. *Vár*, the root of *várni*, has a Passive root in *várat*, Infin. *váratni* to be waited for, to be expected, *verni* to beat, *veretni* to be beaten.

Verbs which have a final *t* in their root, preceded by a long vowel or a consonant, and

Verbs having two or more syllables in their Active root, receive the syllable *tat* or *tet* as the termination of the Radical of the Passive voice.

Pres. *Váratom* I am expected, *váratol* thou art expected, *varatík* he is expected; *váratunk* we are expected, *váratatok* you are expected, *váratnak* they are expected. — *Veretem* I am beaten, *veret-él* thou art beaten, *veretík* he is beaten; *veretünk* we are beaten, *verettek* you are beaten, *veretnek* they are beaten.

*A' fiú veretík, mi is veretünk. A' tanuló taníttatik. A' virágok gyűjtetnek. Az én könyveim bekötetnek. A' házatok ma eladatík. A' bátyám az óráját eladja. Az atyám házat elád (he sells). Az ellenség megveretík. Sok országokból küüzetnek a' szabadság' barátjai. A' szerencsétlenek mindég talál-nak menedékhelyet, hol szívesen felvétetnek. Ki szívesen felvesz, az szívesen felvétetik.*

Hungarian characters are written like the English, but many Hungarian characters are not pronounced like the English. My brother is liked by all his friends. Children are loved by their parents. Men are educated by the circumstances in which they live. Savages are guided by nature. Sailors are taught to hazard. Huntsmen are led to (*ra*) perseverance. In times of war much blood is shed, towns are set on fire, castles are demolished, countries are depopulated, and the inhabitants of them are ruined. When peace is restored, trade is carried on.

## 2.

## IMPERFECT.

*Várat-ám* I was expected, *várat-ál*, thou wast expected, *várat-ék* he was expected; *várat-ánk* we were expected, *várat-átok* you were expected, *várat-ának* they were expected.

## PERFECT.

*Várat-tam* I have been expected, I was expected, *várat-tál*, *várat-ott*; *várat-tunk* we have been and we were expected, *várat-tatok*, *várat-tak*.

## FUTURE.

*Váratni fogok* I shall be expected, *váratni fogsz* thou wilt be expected, *váratni fog* he will be expected; *váratni fogunk* we shall be expected, *váratni fogtok*, *váratni fognak*.

*A' fiú veretni fog, merthem vigyázott* (Perfect).  
*A' mi házunk el fog adatni\*) mert mi idegen földre utazunk. Mi váratunk ebédre a' nagybátyánktól. Az édes anyám' kertjében ma szedetik a' gyümölcs. A' virágok bokrétába kötettek a' húgomtól. Ezek (these) a' képek a' leghíresebb festőtől festettek. A' ti házatok a' legügyesebb építésztlől építtetett.*

You will be expected at supper by your aunt. Charles has been taught to read and write, yet he does\*\*) not write well. The boy was beaten, be-

---

\*) *el fog adatni* instead of *eladatni fog*; such diremptions of compound Verbs are made because of the Emphasis; in such cases the accent is always on the first part of the composition.

\*\*) The Verb „to do“ as an Auxiliary, is never used in the Hungarian language, but the principal Verb receives the Conjugation of the Auxiliary; thus, „writes“ . . . —



cause he offended his teacher. (The) Boys who (*kik*) are inattentive are punished. We have never been punished, because we always did our duty. All men (*minden ember*) were born with equal rights, and privileges have been introduced through the injustice of tyrants. Men are punished by their own vices. A large empire has been founded by Alexander the Great (the great Alexander), but it was dismembered soon after the life of its founder was extinguished.

## 3.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Várassam* (instead of *váratjam*, see Intr. § 3) I may be expected, I shall be expected, *várassál* thou mayst and shalt be expected, *várassék*; *váras-sunk*, *várassatok*, *várassanak*.

## CONDITIONAL.

*Váratnám* I might and I should be expected *váratnál*, *váratnék*; *váratnánk*, *varatnátok*; *várat-nának*.

*Várattam volna* I should and might have been expected, and if I had been expected, *várattál volna*, *váratott volna*; *várattunk volna*; *várattatok volna*, *várattak volna*.

*Az okos ember úgy intézi el dolgait* (makes such arrangement) *hogy ne várassék. Iparkodom nehogy várassam. A' fiú megveretnék ha nem engedelmeskednék. Ha mi nem taníttatnánk, nem is tudnánk semmitsem. Ne kéressél* (be not asked, do not let you ask) *arra, hogy mással jót tegyél.*



*Én mondtam hogy a' könyvem kerestessék. Az atyánk megparancsolta, hogy a' tollak megszámitassanak. Úgy beszélj hogy megértessél. Idegenek meg nem értetnek ha saját nyelvükön beszélnek.*

If the letters had been written, you would not have been blamed by the teacher. The tyrant commanded, that the citizen should be flogged. The enemies were beaten by our army, but the fact has been denied by them. An extensive trade is carried on between England and its colonies. The trade would be more extended, if such intentions were not prevented by envy. My father has disposed, that our house at Paris might be sold. Our rich neighbour has ordered, that his tenants be driven out of his house. The French were driven from (out of) East India.

### **B. Factitive Verbal roots.**

The meaning of all Active Verbs may be represented in such a condition as to express by them the subject made active by a cause which lies without the sphere of the subject. Such representations in the modern languages are expressed by means of the Verbs to let, to make, to cause, to have, etc.

The Hungarian language forms a new Verbal root for these representations, by the addition of the syllable *tat* or *tet* to the root of the Active voice. *Várni* to wait, forms *vár-tat-ni* to let wait for, and to cause any one to wait.

Obs. 1. The Passive root is very often used in the meaning of Factitive Verbs, and the root of Factitives must often be translated by the Passive voice of our modern languages; thus, *kormányozni* to govern, forms *kormányoztatni* to be governed, *koronázni* to crown, *koronáztatni* to be crowned, etc.

Obs. 2. The Factitives have both, the definite and indefinite, forms of Conjugation; Factitive roots, used as Passive ones, have only the forms of the Passive voice.

*A' Bátyám sokáig vártat* (My brother lets me wait a long time). *Az atyám szép könyvet fog köttetni.* *Mi csináltatunk* (we have — made) *új kabátot. Köszörültesd\*) a' tollkésedet ha azt akarod hogy vágjon.* *Az Atyám számoltatja a' könyveit a' bátyámmal* (My father makes my brother count his books). *A' tanító velem iratja a' leveleket* (the teacher, lets me write the letters). *Az édes anyám a' húgommal olvastatja ezt a' könyvet.* *Ha nekem pénzem volna ruhát csináltatnék.* *Minden barátim velem fizettetik adósságaikat.* *Számíttasd fel a' pénzt hogy tudjuk mennyi van.* *Mi házat építtetünk, ti pedig kástélyt.*

We have our dresses made at our tailor's, but our friend has his made at your tailor's. Let your brother read his lesson. We had a fine house built.

---

\*) The termination of the second Person of the Subjunctive *jad* and *jed*, is often contracted into *d*; thus, „*sad*“ and „*sed*“ becomes *d* as well; and instead of *várjad* wait, we have *várd*, instead of *köszörültesed*, we have *köszörültesd*.

Our father causes us to read every night (*minden esteve*). I shall let you write a letter for my friend. We shall have our saloon lighted up by forty-five lamps. Do make your brother finish his writings (do make finish: *végeztesd*). If you have a new coat made, give it to our tailor. We have our boots made at Mr. B's. I do not like to go out with Charles, because he keeps me waiting for him a very long time. Our teacher lets us count every day. After we have finished our school-work, our mother lets us play on the piano. Our music master lets us sing as well.

### C. Potential roots.

The possibility of any action represented in the Verb, as well as the notion of „being able“ to perform the action, is expressed by the syllables *hat*, *het*, which are added to the root of the Verb, Active, Passive, or Factitive; thus is originated a new root, to which the Conjugational terminations are joined as to a Primitive Verbal root. *Várni* to wait for, *váratni* to be waited for, *vártatni* to let (make any one) wait, have as many roots of possibility in *várrhat*, *várrathat* and *vártathat*, and *várrhatok*, means: I may, I can, I am able to wait; *várrathatom*, I can be waited for, it is possible that I am waited for;

*vártathatok* I am able to make one wait, or I can let any one wait.

The Conjugational forms are the same as given for the Active and Passive voice.

Obs. The final *n* of the primitive root of Verbs is missed before the potential termination *het*. Thus: *men-ni* forms *me-het*, *ven-ni* forms *ve-het*, *vin-ni* forms *vi-het*, etc.

*Én várhatok, ti nem várhattok. Az anyánk nem várhat. Én olvashatok. Ők olvashattak volna. A tanuló nem írhatja a levelet. Ki nem tanul mikor tanulhat, az nem fogja tudni azt a mit tudhatna. Az ellenség megverethetett volna, de a vezér ügyetlen volt. Szerencsés az, ki (he who) más kárán\*) tanulhat. Nem mindenki mehet (can go) mennyországba. Ha mi tudhatnók, hogy mi fog történni, sok bajnak elejét vehetnénk. Mindnyájan hibázhatunk, mert tökéletlen teremtetek vagyunk. Ki jót tehet (can do) és nem teszi (does), az (he is) bűnös.*

I am able to read. My friend is not able to write. I can say my lesson. You cannot pronounce this word. My brother can speak French, and his friend can speak Hungarian. We are not able to learn our lesson. (The) Soldiers may fight against the enemy whilst the tradesmen attend to (*után*) their business. The power of tyrants cannot last, for it is self-consuming. If governments were able to carry out all the wishes of their sovereigns, they would become superfluous themselves. As soon as

---

\*) *Kár*, loss, *kára*, his loss, *kárán*, on his loss.

the people is able to govern itself, it will throw off the guardianship of monarchs.

*A' könyveim be nem kötethetnek* (cannot be bound) *e' héten* (this week). *Ezek a' levelek nem irathatnak ma.* *Rest tanulók nem dicsértethetnek.* *Idegen földön nehezen találtathatik azon szíves-ség melly* (which) *minket* (us) *tulajdon tűzhelyeinknél ápolgat.* *Messze földön kerestethetik a' hű barát,* *ha bennünk hűség nincsen.* *Nem mindnyájan taníttathatunk egy mesterségre.* *Ámbár vártathatnám* (I was able to let wait) *a' fiút, még is inkább siettetem.* *Én elbeszélthetném vele az egész ügyet, de unalmas azt hallgatni.* —

I cannot be expected at my uncle's. You could be received better (you possibly might be received better) if you made him a present. It is uncertain whether (*ha*) the battle could have been won. The enemies might have been vanquished, if the soldiers had had capable leaders. Gutta-percha can be used for (*ra*) fancy works; of it can be made baskets, plates, spoons, inkstands, picture and looking-glass frames. I could not let you wait any longer. If I were able to have my coat made at your tailor's, I should gain in (*n*) its price and in the beauty of its shape.

### D. Medium.

Many Verbs which really have an active or reflexive meaning are used as Neuter, and as such they receive Personal terminations of Conjugation



like those of the Passive Voice. *Lakni* to inhabit, means in its medial form to live, to dwell.

## INDICATIVE.

Pres. *lakom* I live, I dwell, *lakol* thou livest, *lakik* he lives; *lakunk*, *laktok*, *laknak*.

Past. *laktam* I have lived, I have dwelt, *laktál* thou hast lived, *lakott* he has lived; *laktunk*, *laktatok*, *laktak*,

Fut. *lakni fogok* I shall live, *lakni fogsz* thou wilt live, *lakni fog* he will live; *lakni fogunk* we shall live, *lakni fogtok* you will live, *lakni fognak*, they will live.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Lakjam* that I may live, *lakjál*, *lakjék*; *lakjunk*, *lakjatok*, *lakjanak*.

## CONDITIONAL.

*Laknám* I would live, *laknál*, *laknék*; *laknánk*, *laknátok*, *laknának*.

*Londonban több mint két millió ember lakik*\*). *Én igen szép tájon lakom, hanem te nem lakol olly szép vidéken. Sok bajjal küzdik az ember míg e' világot lakja* (inhabits). *Mi tetszik neked jobban, a' veres vagy a' zöld szín. Nekem úgy látszik hogy nincs igazad. Mindég igazat szóljunk bár ne is tessünk*\*\*\*) *másoknak. A' nap forogni látszik a' föld körül. Ha jót teszünk* (we do) *ne látszassék*\*\*\*)) *hogy önzésből tettük* (we did).

\*) Singular after the Numerals.

\*\*) *Tessünk* instead of *tetszünk* we may please.

\*\*\*)) *látszassék*, instead of *látszatják*, it shall appear.



*Angolország a' világnak minden részeivel kereskedik. A' nagykereskedő nem kereskedik kicsinyben (in retail). Kereskedjél hogy nyerjél valamit, mert nyeresébből élsz.*

We live in Oxford street, and you live in Holborn, but he lives in Kentish Town. If he would live at my uncle's, he daily could take a walk in the park. If England traded to Russia, it would gain a great deal. He trades (with) in drapery. My brother works at (in) the carpenter's trade, and I work at the printing trade. Men who do not work are a burden (*terhére*) to society. Men sin against the law of the nature, when they oppress their fellow creatures. Tyrants sin against society by ruling (when they rule) others against their will. The King domineers over his people instead of governing it (instead that he might govern it).

## VII.

### Irregularities in Verbal formations.

#### A. Verbal roots in „d“.\*)

Verbs the root of which is not a monosyllabical one, and terminating with *d*, preceded by a vowel, are liable to contraction in the Present Tense of the

---

\*) Verbs of this kind are Mediums, but in regard to *aludni*, the people and Grammarians do not yet agree; the former, though erroneously, using it as a Neuter and Medium. The forms in which it commonly occurs are subjoined, its Medial form has the same terminations as *lakni*. See p. 155.

Indicative Mood; the whole syllable *od*, *ud*, *öd*, *üd*, *ed* is missed, and the consonant *sz* is put instead. Thus, *feküdni*, to lie, has *fekszem* I lie; *aludni*, to sleep, has *alszom* I sleep.

Observ. If the penultima of the Verbal root has more than one consonant, such contractions are not made, but *d* is changed into *sz*: as, *alkudni* to bid, *alkuszm* I bid.

## 1.

## INDICATIVE.

Pres. *alszom* I sleep, *alszol* thou sleepest, *alszik* he sleeps, *alszunk* we sleep, *alszotok* you sleep, *alszanak* they sleep. — *Fekszem* I lie, *fekszel* thou liest, *fekszik* he lies; *fekszünk* we lie, *fekszetek* you lie, *fekszenek* they lie.

Past tense. *aludtam* I did sleep, I was sleeping, I have slept, *aludtál*, *aludott* and *aludt*; *aludtunk*, *aludtatok*, *aludtak* and *aludtanak*.

Fut. *aludni fogok* I shall sleep, etc., regular.

*Hazudni*, to tell a lie, and Verbs in which the syllable of contraction is preceded by *z* or *sz*, are not abbreviated, but the primitive root is used; thus, *hazudom* instead of *hazszom*.

*Az öcsém mindig haragszik ha valaki a' tollát elveszi* (tak esaway). *A' tanító megharagudott azon, hogy a' fiú nem tudta a' lezskéjét. Én nem haragszom rád* (reád: with you), *mert te nem tehetsz róla* (you cannot help it). *A' bátyám sokáig alszik. Ti még 10 órákor az ágyban fekszetek, te is addig*

(till then = as long) *fekszel. Mi lefekszünk tíz órákor, és alszunk hét óráig reggel. Én mindég alku-szom ha valamit veszek (buy). A' bátyám soha sem alkuszik, és azért drágán fizet. Én alkudtam. Ti nem alkudtatok. A' ki hazudik hitelt nem érdemel.*

We do not go to bed before 11 o' clock. My brother is always in bed at 10 o' clock. Do you sleep long (long you sleep)? We sleep for seven hours (till seven hours), but our friend sleeps only for five hours. I do not go to bed early. My brother is offended, because I did not lend him my book. You are always angry when you go to school. (The) Men that have once told a lie have no credit. He often tells a lie to defend his wickedness. Our teacher was offended yesterday, because one of his pupils (his one pupil) told a lie. I am never angry with you.

## 2.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

**Pres.** *aludjam* (commonly *aludjak*) shall I sleep, that I may sleep, *aludjál, aludjék; aludjunk* that we may sleep, shall we sleep, *alud-jatok, aludjanak.*

## CONDITIONAL.

**Pres.** *aludnám* (commonly *aludnék*) I would sleep, if I slept, *aludnál, aludnék* (commonly *alud-na*); *aludnánk, aludnátok, aludnának.*

**Past.** *aludtam volna* I would have slept, if I had slept, *aludtál volna, aludt volna; aludtunk volna, aludtatok volna, aludtak volna.*

The Imperative is the same as the Subjunctive Mood; in the second person of the Imperative Mood the termination *ál, él*, is often missed.

*Ne aludjál sokáig, mert hosszú álom árt az egészségnek. Aludj. Aludjunk* (let us sleep). *Ne haragudjatok azokra, kik* (who) *akaratlanúl megbántanak. Ha megharagudnátok mi nem mennénk N-hez. A' bátyám továbbig aludnék ha nem kellene* (were not obliged) *oskolába menni. Rest emberek mindig alhatnak. Én nappal nem alhatom de Károly mindig alhatik. Lefeküdhetünk* (can we go to sleep)? *Ne feküdjetek még le, mert még nincs 9 óra. Ha mi rajta* (about it, instead of *azon*) *megharagudtunk volna, nem jöttünk volna ide. Kérem meg ne haragudjanak hogy vissza nem hoztam a' könyvüket. Bár haragudjék is én neki nem adom.*

Go to bed. Let us go to bed (*feküdjünk le*). Do not tell lies, for you sin against yourself and against others. If he should tell a lie, he would be punished by his teacher. I should have told you a lie, if I had said it was not true. Never be angry with your neighbours. Be not offended at trifles. You would have been offended, if I had gone away without taking leave. Would you be offended, if I told you the truth? We are reposing; you have been reposing. Nature is in repose, and the airs of the birds do not sound (the birds their airs not sound). The sun has set. The sun sets. As soon as the sun sets the nocturnal birds leave their lurking places.

**B. Verbal roots in „n.“****3.***Venni* to buy, to take.

**Indicat. Pres.** *veszek* I buy, *veszel*, \*) *veszen* and *vesz*; *veszünk* we buy, *vesztek*, *vesznek*.

**Imp.** *vevék* I bought, *vevél*, *veve*; *vevénk* we bought, *vevétek*, *vevének*.

**Perf.** *vettem* I have bought, I bought, I was buying, *vettél*, *vett*; *vettünk*, *vettetek*, *vettenek*.

**Fut.** *venni fogok* I shall buy, *venni fogsz*, *venni fog*, etc.

**Subjunct.** *vegyek* that I may buy, shall I buy, *vegyél*, *vegyen*; *vegyünk*, *vegyetek* *vegyenek*.

**Condit. 1.** *vennék* I would buy, if I bought, *vennél*, *venne*; *vennénk*, *vennétek*, *vennének*.

**2.** *vettem volna* I would or should have bought, *vettél volna*, *vett volna*; *vettünk volna*, *vettetek volna*, *vettek volna*.

*Enni* to eat \*\*), *inni* to drink, *lenni* to become, *hinni* to believe, *vinni* to carry, to take, *tenni* to do,

---

\*) although *veszesz* is the proper form, yet *veszel* is commonly used.

\*\*) *Enni* and *inni* (which takes the personal affixes with hard vowels) are used in the Medial form; thus, *eszem* I eat, *eszel* thou eatest, *eszik* he eats, etc., and *iszom*, *iszol*, *iszik*, etc.



and their compounds have the same conjugational forms.

*A' nagybátyánk házat vett, mi pedig kertet veszünk. Vesz-e (wilt thou buy) könyvet? Nem, én könyvet venni nem fogok hanem földabroszokat. Ne vegyél ott ruhát mert nem árúlnak ott jó kelmét. Ha almát veszték ne egyétek (enni) meg, mert még nem érett. Vegyétek meg ezt a' papirost mert olcsó. Soha se higyetek azoknak kik egyszer hazudtak, könnyen megcsalhatnak. Az atyám elvette tőlem a' könyvet. Ne vegyétek el (do not take away) baráti-toktól azt mit (what) egyszer ajándékba adtatok. Könnyen balvéleményű lesz az, ki mindent hiszik. Ő ugyan azt állítja de én el nem hiszem.*

Do not take away the book from the learner. I believe that many men are mistaken in their judgement through want of knowledge. He who (a' ki) does good to (val) others, does services to himself. You must do with others as you wish that people should do with you. Did you eat the pears and apples? Eat these grapes and prunes. If I would have (had) eaten some bread and butter, I never had (could have) eaten any chesnuts. Do you believe that your brother will depart to-morrow? I believe he will (fog). You did not believe me (to me), when I told you. I shall believe you another time. My brother went for a soldier, and I shall go for a sailor. Did he go for a soldier in the horse-guards?



No; he went for a foot-soldier. The more we recede from the state of nature, the more difficult it becomes to be happy.

## 4.

*Menni* to go.

Indic. Pres. *megyek* I go, *mégysz* thou goest, *megy, men* he goes; *megyünk* we go, *mentek, mennek*.

Imp. *menék* I went, *menél, mene; menénk* we went, *menétek, menének*.

Perf. *mentem* I was going, I went, I have gone, *mentél, ment; mentünk* we have gone, we were going, we went, *mentetek, mentek* or *mentenek*.

Fut. *menni fogok* I shall go, *menni fogsz*, thou wilt go, *menni fog* he will go; *menni fogunk*, etc.

Subj. *menjek*, shall I go, that I may go, *menjél, menjen; menjünk, menjetek, menjenek*.

Cond. 1. *mennék* I would go, *mennél, menne*, etc.  
 2. *mentem volna* I would have gone, if I would have gone, *mentél volna, ment volna; mentünk volna*, etc.

*Ha az idő szép lesz, sétálni megyünk. Az anyám azt mondta, hogy ki ne menjek. Ha ki-*

*mennék az atyám haragudnék rám. Ki mondta hogy N. urhoz menjetek. Menjünk (let us go) haza mert késő. Ha elmennél, zárd (instead of zárjad) be a' szoba ajtót. Én Parisba megyek az öcsém pedig Brüsselbe megy. Kérem ne vegye rossz néven (do not take it ill) ha nem mennék önnel (with you). Mi elmegyünk, nem mentek ti is? Mi nem mehetünk mert az anyánk nem engedi.*

I should go to Paris, if my mother took (would take) me with her. Will you go for a walk (to walk) this afternoon (*ma délután*)? No; we shall not go for a walk. Can you carry this book? I shall take (carry) this book to the bookbinder. Do not take that boot to the shoemaker. The boy took his books and his writings to the school. Have you done your work? We did our work yesterday, and you will do yours to-morrow. He never does his work. Believe what I told you. I believe it, because your friend told me of it before he went to Paris. I should believe it, if he never had told a lie.

*Kinek kinek (to every body) ott hazája, ahol jól megy dolga (he does well). Nem megy az mindég úgy ahogy az ember magában felteszi. Teszem fel (suppose) hogy elmennék, mit fog ő azután csinálni. Ki vitte el az én könyvemet? A' bátyád azt magával vitte. Azt soha sem hittem volna hogy ő elmenjen. Ne hidd (hidjed) neki mert*

*pápista. \*) Én hiszem, mert magam' szemével*  
 (my own eye) *láttam. Hiszed-e azt hogy télen*  
*mennydörög? Hiszem, mert magam is hallottam.*  
*Boldogok kik nem látnak és még is hisznek.*

Take this newspaper up stairs. My brother took his coat to your tailor, for he had bought it of him. Never buy things without seeing them. I should like (*szeretnék*) to buy a horse, if I had money. The brother of your uncle suddenly became ill. I become ill if I eat fruit. Did you eat all the fruit which my mother has bought for you? We took some of it to your friend Charles, and some (*némit*) we ate in company with our friend Francis. Take these pears to your father; my brother has bought them for him; I believe they are good (ones). Do you (think) believe (that) we shall have some rain? Take this book back to the bookseller, and tell him (that) I shall not buy it.

### C. Verbal roots in „v“.

#### 5.

Indic. Pres. *lövök* I come, *jössz* thou comest, *jő*  
*(jön)* he comes, *jövünk* we come,  
*jöttök, jőnek (jönnek).*  
 Imp. *jövék* I came, *jövé, jöve;*  
*jövénk, jövétek, jövének.*

---

\*) Proverb, meaning to be cautious.

Perf. *jőtem* I came, I did come, I was coming, I have come, *jőtél, jőt, jőtünk, jötetek, jötek*.

Fut. *jőni* (and *jönni*) *fogok* I. shall come, will come, *jőni (jönni) fogsz, jőni fog; jőni fogunk, jőni fogtok, jőni fognak*.

Subj. *jőjek* (and *jöjjek*) shall I come, that I may come, *jőjél (jöjjél and jer) jöjjön; jőjünk* that we may come, shall we come, *jőjetek (jöjjetek) jőjenek (jöjjenek)*.

Cond. 1. *jőnék* (and *jönnék*) I would come, if I came, *jőnél, jőne; jőnék, jőnétek, jőnének*.

2. *jőtem volna* I would have come, *jőtél volna, jött volna; jőtünk volna, jötetek volna, jötek volna*.

Alike to the Verb *jőni* to come, are formed: *lőni* to shoot, *szőni* to weave, *híni* to call, *színi* to draw, to smoke (tobacco), and similar ones, and their compounds.

Obs. 1. Verbs of this kind are contracted from their primitive roots *jöv*, *löv*, *szöv*, *hiv*, *sziv*; this root is restored in all formations in which the affix begins with a vowel; on the contrary, if the affix begins with a consonant, the radical *v* is thrown off

and the radical vowel protracted: thus *lő-tem* instead of *löv-tem*, *hí-tam* instead of *hiv-tam*, etc.

2. The Verb *jőni*, forms its Tenses regularly as well as by means of assimilation of the consonant *v*, with the initial consonant of the personal affixes; thus, we form *jőni* and *jönni*, *jőjek* and *jőjje*. This has mislead some Grammarians to adopt this assimilation in the Conjugation of all other Verbs, but they forgot that *jönni* retains its short vowel when the *v* is assimilated, and prolongs it when the *v* is thrown off. This is not the case with the other Verbs, for their vowel always remains a long one, when the affix begins with a consonant. This is the reason why some authors write *hittam*, *löttem*, *híni*, *hínék*, etc.

*Ha ti holnap eljöttök hozzánk (to us) mulatozni fogunk. Én eljöttem volna hanem sok munkám miatt ki nem mehettem. Jőjtek el ma, mert holnap nem leszünk (shall be) otthon. Mi el fogunk jőni. Barátom ne jöjj (Imperative) hozzám, mert nem adhatom azt a' mit kértél. Jőjjetek velünk sétálni. Mi nem jövünk sétálni minthogy dolgunk van. Haza jött-e már a' nagybátyád? Még nem jött hazás (és) nem is várjuk csak három nap múlva. Hozzátok jönnék de félek hogy dolgotok lesz. Ne jöjj ma hanem holnap, akkor játszhatunk. Ha tegnap jőtetek volna még láthattátok volna a' képet mit az atyám Brüsselbe küldött. A' ki nem jön annak menni nem kell.*



My brother came from the play (theatre) last night (yesterday evening) at 11 o' clock. We came from the country (*falu*) into (*ba*) the town. Did you come from London? No; we came from Bath. Did you not go to London when you came from Paris? Yes. My friend came from France to see all the curiosities of London. We shall come to you to-night, when we have done (*elvégeztük*) our work. Do not come to day, for we shall be out (we not shall be at home). If you would come to-morrow morning we should go in the country. Shall I come this afternoon (*ma délután*)? No, you had better (*inkább*) come after to-morrow (*holnap után*). Shall we come to see (*látogatni*) you next (*jövő*) week?

*Én tegnap vadászni voltam de nem lőttem semmit. A' vadászok gyakran nem lőnek. Szeretnék lőni. Ki hívott (hit). gondolom hogy az öcséd hit téged (thee). Híjátok el azt az embert. Károly kihí mert valamit akar mondani. Nem akarsz egy pipa dohányt színi (to smoke)? Én nem szoktam színi (I am not used to smoking). Az atyánk mindig szivart szí. A' takács szövő (definite form of szövő) a' vásznat, az abroszokat és az asztal-kendőket. A' Posztós szöveti (lets weave) a' posztó-kelmét. Angolországban géppel szövetik a' posztót és a' vásznat, Magyarországon többnyire kézzel.*

When we were hunting we shot many hares and partridges. Can you shoot (do you know to



shoot)? No, I cannot shoot; but my brother shoots very well (very well shoots). I shot two deers yesterday. We have shot some wild ducks. Do not shoot when people are passing before you (*előttetek*). If you should shoot you would kill them. Did you call your brother? Call your younger brother as well. Your friend has called you, he wants to speak to you. Shall I call this gentleman. Call him. You never should call me when I am at work. What do you smoke, cigars or a pipe (tobacco)? I prefer smoking a pipe (tobacco). Did you ever smoke Havana segars? I did smoke them formerly, but now I prefer smoking Virginian tobacco.

#### **D. Verbal roots of „z, sz“.**

##### **6.**

Verbal roots terminating in *sz*, *z*, preceded by a vowel, commonly receive *ol*, *el*, *ül* in the second Person Singular Number instead of *sz*; the consonant *j*, is assimilated to the radical *sz*, *z*. In the third Person Sing. of the Perfect Tense the *t* is redoubled and preceded by a short vowel, which according to the Verbal root is either *o* or *ö* and *e*: thus, *hozott* he brought, instead of *hozt*, *főzött* he cooked, etc.

Obs. 1) If the verbal root ending in *z* be of two or more syllables the ultima is contracted according to § 5. Introd. Thus, from *szerezni* to purchase, we form: *szerzek*, *szerzel*, *szerez*, *szerzünk*, *szereztek*, *szereznek*. Verbs the roots of which are

contracted that way, retain the vowel before the *tt*, of the Perfect tense in all personal terminations, thus: *szerzettem, vérzettem*, etc.

*Te könyvet hozol én pedig papirost kértem. Hozzál (hozzál) kenyeret meg vaját. Ne hozzatok ide azt az asztalt. Mit hozol? Hozol-e almát vagy körtvét? The soha sem ékezel a' hol kell. Mit csinálsz halászol-e vagy madarászol? Te ma vadászol, mi pedig tegnap vadásztunk. Te vérzel \*) barátom hol sebesültél. A' mit te magadnak szerzel abban mással osztoszol. A' bátyám almát hozott. A' könyvem elveszett. A' leány érzette a' pirongatást. Én vérzettem.*

Thou bringest bread instead of meat. Dost thou bring pens or ink? Thou dost always bring things which are not wanted (what is not wanted — *mi nem kell*). Thou dost not fish. Art thou a hunting (huntest thou) or catching birds? Thou dividest into two parts, when thou ought to divide (*a' mikor osztani kellene*) into four (parts). Dost thou feel? Thou bleedest. Thou dost pull. Dost thou plague poor animals? Thou dost not torment poor children. When thou analyzest plants, thou makest use of a microscope. He has analyzed minerals. We have felt the misfortune. He has tormented a poor worm. He distributed money amongst the poor.

---

\*) instead of *vérezel* and *szerzezel*.

Verbs having a vowel before the termination of the Infinitive *ni*, and such as have a final *t* in their root preceded by a short vowel (as *vet*, *fut*, etc.), receive a short vowel (*o*, *ö*, *e*) before the Characteristic of the Perfect Tense, which in this case is reduplicated. For instance: *hallani* to hear, forms *hall-o-ttam* I have heard; *kiejteni* to pronounce, *kiejt-e-ttem* I have pronounced; *küzdeni* to struggle, *küzd-ö-ttem* I have struggled, etc.

*Nagyon sokat hallottunk beszélni a' régiek vitézségükről; hallottad hogy mit mondott. A' Tolvaj nem vallott meg semmit. Ő elrejtette azt a' mit mások loptak. Hová futottál a' mikor híttalak (called thee). Te engemet írni tanítottál a' bátyám pedig téged rajzolni tanított. Ti addig halasztottátok míg késő volt. Én nem halasztottam volna hanem az öcsém kért hogy ne siessek. Mit vetettetek abba (in that) a' kertbe. Mi virágot meg zöltséget vetettünk. Ki ütött meg? A' fiú megütötte a' lapdával. Ő megszorította a' kezemet és eltűnt. Nagyon szorítottak minket a' nagyszombati csata után. A' Magyarok meghódították Pannóniát 894 évben. Én megszólítottam az utcán hanem ő nem hallgatott rám. Károly kiejtette jól ezeket a' szavakat. Hallottad-e hogyan mondta ki ő? Ha jól kiejtetted volna azt a' szót, a' tanító nem igazított volna. Miért (why) nem igazítottad ha*

*láttad hogy hibázott. Mikor pénzt hozott én oda nyújtottam a' kezemet hogy tőle átvegyem.*

He has hidden himself, for he feared the punishment. - He stretched out his hand, when he heard (persons) speaking of fruit. Did you listen to (that) what he has said? I have not listened. My teacher has corrected me always, when I have made a mistake (*hibát ejteni*, to make a mistake). I have forgotten to learn my lesson. Charles has forgotten to take his books with him. William the Conqueror has conquered this island. The English nation delayed its assistance to foreign nations till it was too late. The clock struck one. We have sown seeds of flowers in our garden; our uncle has sown seeds of vegetables in his garden. The thief has run away. My brother has spoiled my blue ink. I have painted a fine picture.

## 8.

Dissyllabical Verbs with a final *t* in their root, and Verbs the roots of which terminate with *d*, *g*, *k*, receive the short vowel (*o*, *ö*, *e*,) before the *t* of the Perfect in the third person Sing. *Szeret-ni* to love, *szeretett* he loved, *adni* to give, *adott* he has given.

Obs. 1. Dissyllables in *d* have, in the third person Perfect, either a single *t* or *tt* preceded by a short vowel; thus, *szakad-ni* to tear, will be *szakadt* and *szakadott* it tore, *reped-ni* to crack, *repedt* and *repedett* it cracked.

2. *Látni*, to see, forms *láttam* I have seen, *láttál* thou hast seen, *látott* he has seen.

*Az öcsém haza sietett; ő nem szeretett volna tovább várni. Sokat fizetett az atyám a' házaért. István minap farkast kergetett. Ha ő megakadott volna én segitettem volna rajta (on him; him). Ki segített midőn ezt csináltad. A' bátyám segített, mert én őtet segitettem mikor ő dolgozott. A' fiú szaladott, én is elszaladtam. Megszakadt a' szíve a' hazáfnak hazájának leigázásán. Az óraláncz elszakodott's azért az óra nem megy. Az atyám Londonban lakott, de én mindég falun laktam. Az anyám nekem almát adott, és én ezt a' barátomnak adtam.*

I have paid you all that I owed to you, but my debtor did not pay me. My brother paid 50 *l.* for his piano. I should have paid him, if he would have given me a receipt for it. My friend hastened away. Did he run? He cut his finger when he was cutting meat. The teacher expelled that boy from his school, because he was disobedient. Did you ever see a lion? No, but our friend has seen a lion. He ran away because he was afraid of punishment. I loved you when you were obedient and behaved yourself well. I did not like (*szeretni*) the boy because of his insolence.

## 9.

The Hungarian language has the peculiarity of expressing the Objective case of the Personal Pronoun



of the second person, governed by any Active Verb, by means of an affix added to the Verbal root. This peculiar form is used only when the speaker himself is represented as Active. The affix used is *lak* and *lek*. Thus, I wait for thee or I expect thee, will be expressed by *vár-lak*, instead of *várom tégedet*; I beat you, will be *ver-lek* instead of *verem titeket*; *lát-lak* (*látni* to see) I see you and I see thee.

Whether the form *látlak* means „I see you“ or „I see thee“ will be understood by the sentence in which such a form is used. The same affix may be added to the root of the Perfect and Future, in all the Tenses of the Conditional, and the Tenses of the Potential and Factitive Verbal forms, and thus be formed: *vártalak* I waited for thee, *várni foglak* I shall wait for thee, *várjalak* that I may wait for thee, *várnálak* I should wait for thee, *várhatlak* I can wait for thee, *vártathatlak* I can let thee wait.

*Ha mindjárt eljössz még megvárlak. Én meglátogatlak volna tegnap de nagyon esett az eső, azért csak a' jövő héten foglak látogatni. Talán nagyon sokáig vártatlak (I let you wait). Mult hétfőn hozsám hivattalak. En védtelek (I have defended thee) a' tolvajok ellen, kik tegnap megtámadtak. En nem szeretlek, mert nem akarsz engedelmeskedni; szerettelek míg szorgalmatos voltál. Én majd haza vezetlek (take you home) mert nem esméritek az utatokat (your way). Vigyázz*



*hogy meg ne üsselek. Várjalak? Én többé nem várhatlak, mert fél óra múlva iskolába kell menni. Megverlek ha nem hagysz békét (keep the peace). Add (adjad) ide a' kezedet hogy a' vízből ki húzzalak. Hogy van az hogy a' színházban nem láthatlak. Te különben mindég oda szoktál járni. Én nem hallhatlak ha olly halkkal beszéltek.*

I cannot reach you, for you stand very far from me. I shall beat you if you spoil my book. I should love you if you were diligent. If I should have seen you, I would have waited for you. I cannot beat you, although you deserved it. I could offend thee, but I shall show to thee, that I esteem thee higher (*többre*) than my private interest. Could I not see you? I would visit you, if you were at home to-morrow. Did I hurt thee? I did not see you. If I could have recognised you, I should have spoken to you (addressed you). I have sent for you last night. Did I call you? No, I called you not. If he would have left you in the field, you would have lost your way. I do not know you, for I never have seen you before. Did I not draw you out of the pond. I appeased you when you were in great emotion about (*miatt*) the loss of your fortune.

### **VIII. Participles.**

The Verb of the Hungarian language forms its Participles by means of terminations added to the Verbal root, Active, Passive, Factitive, Potential, Medium etc..

Such terminations are: *va*, *ván*; thus, *várva* waited (waiting, having expected, being expected), *várván* waiting; *váratva* having been waited for, *váratván* being waited for; *várhatva*, *várhatván* being able to wait for; *vártatva*, *vártatván* leaving one waiting; *vártathatva*, *vártathatván* being able to let one wait.

The Participle of *va* is often used instead of an Adverb with any other personal form of the same Verb; for instance: *várva vártunk* we waited waitingly. Such forms of construction are only used to give the personal Verb a stronger expression.

*Egynehány szót az ajtóra írván kiszaladt. Károly nem ment iskolába azt mondván hogy a' lecskójét nem tudja. Én eladtam a' házamat nem tudván honnan pénzt szerezni. Nem szerezhetvén (not being able to procure) pénzt, én kénytelen voltam a' házamat eladni. Ő kényszerítve jár iskolába. Szeretve szeretett szüleinket el kellett hagynunk (we were obliged to leave). Hanibal elenségeitől üldözve, Ázsiába szökött. Gusztáv Adolph vitéziesen harczolva elesett. A' ki kényszerítve tanul nem nagy előmentelt tesz. Játszva tanul a' gyermek. Allva inni, ülve enni. Sietve járt mikor őt láttam. Nem mehetvén keresztül, visszatértünk. Hirtelen meghalt, nem csinálhatván végrendeletet.*

You were expected at your aunt's. We were forced to seek refuge in foreign countries, expelled from our own. Not being able to pay what he

owed, his property was sold. Louis Philippe, lulled in security, was surprised by the French people. He left the room, not saying whether he would return soon. As we are not able (not being able) to speak correctly, we do not like to speak a word. Hannibal, leaving Italy, deserted the path of fortune. Being left to myself (*magamra*), I was not able to finish the work. He wrote the letter standing. By keeping silence he acknowledged his fault. Having returned, he left this message for you. Having arrived at my home, I wrote to you a letter directly.

## IX.

### **The Verb *kell*, to want, to be obliged, must.**

#### 1.

The (impersonal) Verb *kell* is used in connection with Personal Pronouns in their forms: *nekem* to me, *neked* to thee, *neki* to him, to her, to it, *nekünk* to us, *nektek* to you, *nekik* to them, throughout all the Tenses, of which the Verb *kell* has only the third person. Thus:

Ind. Pres. *nekem kell* I want, I must, *neked kell* thou wantest, *neki kell* he wants, etc.

Past. *nekem kellett* I wanted, I was obliged, and I must, *neked kellett*, etc.

Fut. *nekem kelleni fog* I shall want etc.

Subj. Pres. *nekem kelljen* that I may want, that I may be obliged, etc.

Cond. 1. *nekem kellene* I should want, I should be obliged, that I might want, etc.

2. *nekem kellett volna* I should have wanted, I should have been obliged,

Observ. If more persons than one are expressed in the same sentence, the Verb *kell* is not repeated; as, *nekem ruha kell neked pedig kenyér*, I want clothes and thou wantest bread.

If instead of the third person of the Pronoun any Substantive be used, it will be constructed by the affix „*nak*“, to; as: my friend wants a book *a' barátomnak könyv kell*.

If the objects wanted are more than one, the third person plural of the Verb *kell* is used: *kellenek* are wanted, *kellettek* were wanted, *kelleni fognak* shall be wanted, etc.

*Az anyámnak kell szolgáló az atyámnak pedig inas. Kell-e neked alma? Nem, nekem körtve kell. Nekem nem kell kenyér hanem hús, Bélának pedig vajás kenyér. Hát\*) Károlynak nem kell kenyér? De (used as a particle in affirmative sentences) kell. Kinek kell szőlő? nekem és Gyulának. Nekem kellett volna ruha ha a' bálba akartam volna menni, neked pedig pénz kellett volna. Színházba nem járván nekem se pénz se szép ruha nem kell. Az ellenségnek puskapor és ágyu kellett.*

---

\*) The particle *hát* is somewhat like the English why and well, when used without any meaning. *Hát mit csináltok*, well, what are you a doing? *hát olvasunk*, why we are reading.

*Ha nektek fegyver kell, majd úd a' kormány. A' népnek hű vezér kell, hogy a' zsarnokok' cselszövényein győzedelmeskedjen.*

No objective case is used with the Verb *kell*.

I do want pens and ink, for I have bought paper only. Do you want fine pointed or common pens? I do not want the fine pointed (ones). Did you want (any) money? Yes, I did want (some), but now I do not want (any). Shall you want this book? Not to-day, but I shall want it to-morrow. If you should want it, I would send it home to you. We wanted a friend, who (*ki*) could (would be able) lend us (some) money. Such friends are often wanted. I wanted a book, thou dost want ink, and he wants paper. You always want something. I do want him. Do you want your mother? No, we want our aunt. Well, do you want no tea (don't you want...)? Yes, we do want (some). Does Charles want (any) bread and butter? No, but he wants some prunes and grapes. You do not want (any) apples, do you (want you)? Yes, and (some) pears as well.

## 2.

The Passive voice of *kell* is formed regularly; thus, I am wanted *kelletem*, that I may be wanted *küllessem*, I should be wanted *kelletném*, etc.

If the Objective, in Hungarian Nominative, case, governed by the Verb „to want“, should be replaced by any Infinitive whatever, in the Hungarian



language the Infinitive is used with the Possessive affixes. Thus, I want to read is: *olvasnom* (instead of *olvasni-om*) *kell*, and *nekem kell olvasn-om*; thou wantest to write, *neked irnod* (*irni-od*) *kell*; he wants to go *neki mennie kell*; we want to wait, *nekünk várunk kell* (*várni-unk*); they want to speak, *nekik beszélniök kell*. In the same way all other Tenses of the Verb „want, with any Infinitive whatever, may be formed.

As the Verb „to want,“ when meaning necessity, is replaced by „to be obliged“ and „must,“ all such forms, as: I am obliged or I must go, are expressed by *nekem mennem kell*, etc.

The personal distinction represented in *nekem*, *neked*, *neki* etc. being expressed plainly enough by the affixes added to the Infinitive, the Pronouns *nekem*, *neked* etc. become superfluous and are merely used emphatically.

The Verb „must“ (but not the Verb to be obliged) is often expressed simply by the Infinitive added to the Verb *kell*. Thus, *nekem kell olvasni*, I must read, but *olvasnom kell*, I am obliged to read.

*A bátyámnak francziaúl kell olvasni, nekem pedig németül. Ma el fog kelleni mennetek* (you will be obliged to go to-day). *Ha visszatérnünk kell csak karddal a' kézben térünk vissza. Nektek nem kellett volna elmennetök. Szomorú kinek (who) hazáját el kell hagynia. Az újságot olvasnom kell mert kü-*



*lönben nem tudnám mi van benne. Hát kellett-e elmenni, vagy akartál elmenni. A' bátyámra kell várnom, akár akarok akár nem. Kinek fog kelleni mennie? Nekem nem kell, nekem sem (neither I). Ha nem kell most elutaznotok (utazni) ne menjetez utnak (go on a journey) most, mert rossz az idő. Irnom kell az atyámnak. Irni kell az atyámnak. Nektek kellett olvasnotok az iskolában, nekik pedig ott kellett maradniok mert nem tudták a' lezékéjüket. Tanulnunk kell, különben megbüntet a' tanítónk.*

You are obliged to work, while your brother takes a walk. We are obliged to walk, while you are playing. I must read, you must write. I am obliged to read, thou art obliged to work. If I were obliged to go home, I should go by (on) the steam-boat. You would be very sorry (*Igen sajnálnátok*) if you were obliged to return this present. They are obliged to leave England, because they can get no employment. My brother was obliged to go to France, because his friend wanted him. Were you obliged to leave your country? Were your friends obliged to leave you? I was not obliged to do that, but I did it from my own will. People (men) are obliged to give way, when they experience constant urgency. My father was obliged to sell his horse, for it was very wild. He must sell his estates if he wishes to pay his debts. Soldiers are obliged to learn the different movements

of the army. The enemies must give way, if they are pressed hard. You never ought (must) to deny those that (*azoktól, kik*) beg of you. Parents often are obliged to deny (*megtagadni*) the petitions of their children. Children ought (should be obliged) to honour their parents.

## X.

### Future.

#### 1.

Besides the Future Tense mentioned above, there is a Verbal affix, in the Hungarian language, which expresses the future action of the Verb. This affix is „*and, end,*“ which joined to any verbal root (Active, Passive, Neuter, Factitive, Potential, Medial etc.) will give a new Verbal root expressing future time. Thus, *vár, várat, vártat, várhat, várathat, vártathat*, etc. will give as many roots for the future in: *várand* will wait, *váratand* will be waited for, *vártatand* will let wait, *várhatand* will be able to wait, *várathatand* can be waited for, *vártathatand* will be able to make (one) wait, etc.

These Radicals of the Future form a new Verb, which may receive all the different terminations of the Moods and Tenses of the primitive Verb (Active, Passive, Medium, Potential, Factitive etc.); even, Active Verbs have a Definite and Indefinite form of this Future.

The Tenses of *várand*, from *várni*, are:

Ind. Pres. *várandok* I shall or will wait,  
*várandsz*, *várand*; *várandunk* we  
 will wait, *várandtok*, *várandnak*.

Past. *várandottam* I shall or will have  
 waited, *várandottál*, *várandott*;  
*várandottunk* we will have waited,  
*várandottatok*, *várandattak*.

Fut. *várandni* (*várandani*) *fogok* I shall  
 be waiting (for the future), etc.

Subj. Pres. *várandjak* shall I be waiting (for  
 the future), and that I may be  
 waiting (for the future), *várandjál*,  
*várandjon*; *várandjunk*, *várandjatok*,  
*várandjanak*.

Cond. 1. *várandnék* I should be waiting (for the  
 future), *várandnál*, *várandna*; *várand-  
 nánk*, *várandnátok*, *várandnának*.

2. *várandottam volna* I should have  
 been waiting (for the future), *váran-  
 dottál volna*, *várandott volna*;  
*várandottunk volna*, *várandottatok  
 volna*, *várandottak volna*, etc.

The preceding scheme shews, how difficult it is to express these Verbal forms of the Hungarian language; even, the modern languages have no expressions whatever to represent the true meaning of many of these forms; and as the Hungarian language has been cultivated by men, who received their edu-

cation in foreign countries and foreign languages, such forms are less in use in writing, and entirely lost in familiar conversation.

Verbal Adjectives formed by *ó* and *ott*, in *várando* and *várando*, correspond with the Latin future Participle of the Passive voice in *dus*, and *várando* expresses a future necessity; thus, *ez a' somma holnap kifizetendő* means: this sum must be paid to-morrow.

*A' nagybátyánk holnapután eljövend, hogy minket látogasson. Azt mondta, hogy nekem ajándékozandja azt a' képet. Nem hiszem, hogy pénzt adand. Reménylendő hogy jobbra fordul sorsunk. Az ember ma nem tudja mit lesz teendő holnap. Minden ember halandó. A' barátod elmenend mielőtt téged látogasson. Ki mit kölesönöz azt visszatérítendje. A' föld mivelendő, hogy hasznot hajtson. Addig hámozandó a' hársfa míg hámlik (prov. hammer the iron while it is hot). Bár sok a' te-lyesítendő kötelességünk, mégis mindenik kielégítendő.*

## **XI. Pronouns.**

### **A. Personal.**

#### **1.**

*Én* I, *te* thou, *ő* he, she, it; *mi* and *mink* we, *ti* and *tik* you, *ők* they. *Engem* and *engemet* me, *téged* and *tégedet* thee, *őt* him, her, it; *minket* us, *titeket* you, *őket* them; instead of *minket*, *titeket* are often used: *bennünket* and *benneteket*.

The Personal Pronouns are never used before the Verb, except when emphasis or the construction of the sentence requires it (when they are Subjects of the sentence).

The Personal Pronouns often precede a Noun with its possessive affixes emphatically: as, *az én bátyám* my brother, in opposition to *a' te bátyád* thy brother, etc.

The *you* of addressing Persons is in the Hungarian language either *te* thou, among familiars and intimate friends, or *ön* (his person, he), commonly *maga* (he himself), among strangers; thus, either the Second or Third Person of the Singular Number; *kend* is used by the peasantry.

Besides these forms there has been introduced *kegyed*, the shortened form of *kegyelmed*, which latter is used by the peasantry in addressing their superiors. —

*Te nem láttál minket hanem mi láttunk tégedet. Ki (who) hozta ezt a' könyvet? Te, vagy a' bátyád. Barátom én holnap elutazom, 's azért jőtem hozzád hogy tőled elbúcsúzzam. Elmegyünk iskolába, jöttök ti is? A' tanító szidott beneteket mert nem tudtátok a' leczkéteket. Valljon (used in questioning if we eagerly wish to know something, like the English: I should like to know) ki volt tegnap én nálam? Te nálad is volt valaki. Titeket megbüntettetett a' mesteretek mert nem csináltátok jól a' munkátokat. Ő is eljött és a' bátya is, hanem ők*



*nem sokára el fognak menni. Kérlek barátom ne menj el olly hirtelen. Benteket nézem, hogy mit csináltok. Minket nézel? A' színházban volt-e tegnap édes atyád? En őtet nem láttam. Ő rendesen minden csötörtökön megy oda.*

I have seen you at the play-house, but you could not see me. My uncle has paid us a visit (visited us) before he left London. Will you see him to-night (*ma estve*)? No I shall not see him, for I am not going to him but to my aunt. Not my mother, but thy sister has bought this bird. Thou hast not been at Paris. Hast thou been at Pest? No, I have not been, but a friend of mine (*egyik barátom*) has been there. Our teacher teaches us French and Hungarian. Did you hear him speaking (to speak)? Hast thou seen those fine pictures? Yes, and bought them as well. Canst (knowest) thou speak Hungarian? They never will learn it (definite form). Wilt thou go to the play (the play-house)? Let me go to-night and thou stay at home.

## 2.

Őn (*kegyed, maga*) you, instead of which now and then: *az úr*, mister, gentleman, is used.

*Nem akarna ön hozzánk jönni? Inkább jöjjön ön hozzánk. En irtam önnek egy levelet, hanem ön nekem nem felelt. Ki ismeri önt? En az urat még nem láttam. Kérem B. ur lesz olly szíves ezt nekem elküldeni? Ugyan hogy gondolhatta azt ön?*

*Én azt öntől nem vártam volna soha. Hova akar ön utazni Németországba-e vagy Magyarországra. Én az ön tervét nem helyeselem; más tanácsot adnék önnek. Mit gondol (you, is missed) lesz-e esőnk, vagy sem. Kihez (to whom) fordúlt?*

Your, is expressed by means of the Possessive affix of the third person. Your book *a' könyve*; Yours means *önné*.

You never tell me when it is time to go to school. Did you see your brother to-night? Whose is that book? Yours. Is it yours or mine? I think it is yours. I know it is not his. You have not been in Germany, nor in Switzerland. With whom shall I send this to you? I have sent for you, but you did not come. Have you ever read the beautiful poems of Vörösmarty? Yes, but do you not prefer Berzseny? Did you ever see the capital of France? Do you think it is as large as London? You cannot imagine what an impression London makes on the minds of foreigners. How can you expect him doing that (that he will do that)?

## **B. Relative pronouns.**

Their Declension is like that of the Substantives.

### **1.**

*Ki* who, *melly* which, *mi* what. These are preceded by the Definite article *a'*, when they begin

the period, or when they refer to a certain determined Substantive.

*A' ki másnak vermet (verem) ás, maga esik belé. A' ki nem akar dolgozni, az ne is egyen. Az az ember, a' ki tegnap itt volt, ma elutazott. Emberek, kik mindenüket elvesztették, nem olly (so) szerencsétlenek mind azok, kiknek semmi sem sikerül. Azt a' képet, a' mellyet ma mutattam, egy híres festőtől kaptam. Azon növények, mellyek árnyékban nőnek, mindég halaványak. A' melly ország' népe nem mivelt, annak nincs szabadsága. Csak azon emberek kik, erkölcsileg miveltek, valóban szabad emberek. Kinek lelke testi tunyaság alatt vész, az elevenen holt.*

Men who are virtuous are satisfied with their own lot. Those who always find fault with others are generally faulty themselves. The horses which you have seen belong to my uncle. The garden which we have bought is 148 feet long, and 34 feet wide. That house, in which you live, is larger than that in which we do live. Did you know that before what I have told you now? This is the man whom you did look for. People, who lose their moral power, lost their external liberty. You do not know what I think of. What you think of I do not know, but I know that, what you have told me.

## 2.

*Milly*, *millyen* what, what sort, how, *ilyen*, *illy* such, so; *olly* such —, *a' minő* as; *minő* what sort, what —, *ollyan*, *olly* such; *mi* what, *az* that.

*Milly*, *millyen*, *minő* are used in the antecedent, *illy*, *ilyen*, *olly*, *ollyan* in the consequent.

The article *az* and *a'* precedes them if they refer to any determined Subject. *A' millyen* — *ollyan*, and *millyen* — *ollyan* often may be translated by like — like; as, *a' millyen a' mester ollyan a' szerszám* like masters like tools.

*Illyenek az emberek* (such are men). *Az ilyen emberek valódi terhek* (such men are real burdens). *Milly nagy hegyeket lát az ember ha a' Svajczban utazik. A' minő a' munka, ollyan a' fizetés. Ilyen ritkaságot csak Londonban láthatni. A' millyen a' gazda \*)*, *ollyan a' szolga. Olly szép zenét, minőt még soha sem hallottam. Ollyan az embernek a' sikere a' minő az ügyessége. Nem szeretnék olly munkát végezni a' minőt sok kézi-munkásnak végeznie kell.*

He promised to pay such a large sum, as will be difficult to get up (as to make up difficult will be). Such men, as live in Borneo, could not subsist

---

\*) *gazda* husbandman (master) used instead of *mester* master, because the principal occupation of the Hungarians is agriculture.

for a long time in Iceland. He has shown me such products as belong only to America. I saw such a number of books, as would be difficult to count (as to count would be difficult). Such plants as grow in tropical regions are cultivated in Europe artificially.

### C. Interrogative Pronouns.

*Ki? Kicsoda? Who? mi? kicsoda? what\*)? melyik? which? millyen? what sort? minő? what a? (micsoda and kicsoda are only used in the Nominat. Sing.)*

*Ki volt tegnap nálatok? Nem tudod kinél van a' könyvem? Minő színe van a' ruhádnak? Millyen állat a' kigyó minő színe van? Millyenek a' szemei? A' búzának ára Magyarországon nem olly magas mint Angolországban. Micsoda? Nem olly magas? Ki mondja azt? Egy Magyarországon utazó Angol. Kicsoda? Egy Angol. Millyen a' Magyar alkotmány? Mellyik esztendőben jöttek a' Magyarok a' mostani Magyarországba? Ki volt a' vezetőjük? Micsoda fegyverök és minő hadakozási módjuk volt? Kitől hallodtad hogy háboru lesz? Mit gondolsz a' jövő harcra felől (about)? Kinek van igaza (who is in the right)?*

---

\*) If what is followed by a Substantive, it is always expressed by *micsoda*, as *micsoda ruhát?* What dresses?



*Minek* (for what purpose, why, what for) *adtad neki ezt a' könyvet? Kiket láttál a' színházban?*

Whom do you expect? What do you say? What sort of birds have you shot? What colour are their feathers? What book have you lost? What dress have you bought? To whom did you give your money? From whom did you receive the picture? What do you call (*minek híják*) in Hungarian: window, table, door, room, house, street, town and capital? Which is the capital of England? Which town is the larger, London or Paris? In which room shall I find him? What sort of furniture have you in your rooms? Which is the best hotel in London? Who gave you the book? My brother. Who? My brother. With whom have you been in England? What did you do it with (with what)?

**D. Demonstrative and definitive Pronouns.**  
(variable like nouns.)

*Az* that, *ez* this, *amaz* that, *emez* this here; *magam* myself, *magad* thyself, *maga* himself, herself, itself; *magunk* ourselves, *magatok* yourselves. *magok* themselves; *kiki* every body, each (used of persons), *azon* (invariable) that, often in the meaning of: a; as, *azon dolog melly* — a thing which.

*Az a' könyv az enyém, ez a' tiéd. Azok a' könyvek a' miéink, ezek pedig a' nagybátyánk-éi. Amazokat eladni fogjuk, emezeket pedig ma vettük.*

*Annak \*) az állatnak nincsen lába, ennek pedig szárnyai vannak? Millyen tulajdonsága van annak a' fának. Azt az embert tegnap láttam. Magam nem mehetek, mást pedig nem küldhetek. Én magam sem (neither) tenném. Te magad mondtad, hogy levelet kaptál. Hisz ő maga sem tudja hogyan kelljen ezt csinálni. Valljon maga el fog-e menni vagy csak a' szolgáját küldendi (will send). Mi magunk megtudjuk ezt csinálni, nem kell a' ti segítségtek. Mindég jobb lesz ha magatok szóltok vele. Kinek kinek ott van hazája ahol jól van dolga (where he is doing well). Kiki tudja millyen nehéz erényt gyakorolni. Azon esetben, ha el nem jönne, neki irni fogok. Azon ember, ki soha életében jót nem tett, soha örömet nem érzett.*

That house, which you have seen yesterday, belongs to our uncle. Did you buy this book, or have you received it for a present? This is the man that inquired after you yesterday. Have you seen him yourselves? We will go to buy the book ourselves, for if you went they might deceive you. Have you spoken to himself? Thou shalt love (*szeressed*) thy neighbour as thyself. Men generally love themselves more than their neighbours (fellow men). We ourselves admonished him always to be cautious. If I had been there myself, that

---

\*) see Introduction — instead of *az-nak*.

never would have happened. Every body (*kiki*) knows best his own wants. Each (of them) has received his share himself.

## XII. Conjunctions.

Correlative ones are: *miért* why, — *mert* because, for; *ámbar*, *bár* although, — *mégis* nevertheless, yet; *mikor* when, — *akkor* then; *mint* as, — *úgy* as, so; *valamint* like, as, — *szintúgy* (*szintén-úgy*) so, the same; *mennyire*, *amennyire* so far, — *annyira*, as; *sem*, before consonants *se* neither, — *sem*, *se* nor; *is* as well, — *is* as, (and — and); — the Adverb *részint* partly, when used as a Conjunction in the antecedent, is repeated in the consequent.

*Miért hagyta el a' bátyád Londont? Mert levelet kapot hogy szülei szükséglik* (want him). *Ámbar neki nagyon nehezen esett a' szép várost elhagyni, mégis a' szülei eránti szeretett rábirta őt. Mikor a' szüleink bennünket elhagytak, akkor az öcsém sírva fakadt. Ki* (any one) *mint ágyát veti* (makes his bed), *úgy aludni fog* („do well and have it well“). *Sem én, sem az atyám nem fog a' városba menni. Se lovat, se pénzt nem hozott. Az állatok se nem beszélnek, se nem gondolkoznak úgy mint az emberek. Mikor Hannibal Ázsiába érkezett akkor Carthago nyakat hajtott* (submitted) *a' római iga alá. Carthago is, Róma is elesett.*

Neither you nor your friend can go over (*által*) to Paris. Why are they exiled from their own country? Because they struggled against injustice and perjury. Although the sacred rights of the people be suppressed for a time (*egy időre*), yet the day of their victory will arrive. As the flowers have the most splendid colours in the spring (*tavaszzal*), so (the) people are the most celebrated for their heroic deeds, in the time (*idején*) of their youth (on their youth's time). Has your brother done his lesson? Neither I have done mine (I neither etc.). You neither read nor write. I shall buy books as well as paper. He has lost his money as well as his purse.

### XIII. Adverbs.

Numerals: *egyszer* once, *kétszer*, twice, *háromszor* three times, *ötször* five times, *hatszor*, *tízszer*, etc. *először*, firstly, *másodszor* secondly, *negyedszer* fourthly, *ötödször*, *tizedszer*, etc.

Of time: *naponként* daily, *hetenként* weekly, *óránként* hourly, etc.

Of quality: *rosszul* badly, *jól* well, *rosszabban* worse, *jobbán* better, *vitézül* gallantly, *vitéziiesen* like a hero, *világosan* plainly, *világossabban* more plainly, etc.

*Itt van-e az édes atyád is? Nincs itt, ő otthon van. Ki van itthon? Honnan jön az arany? Azt*

*tudom, hogy más honnan jön mint Angolországból. Ha holnap jőtök én nektek oda adhatom a' könyvet. Most menj mindjárt. Én ma nem mehetek az oskolába. Csak egy pillanatig várjál, ő azonnal itt lesz. Talán inkább szeretne haza menni. Igen gyakran esik az eső Angolországban. Olaszországban mindég szép idő van. Igazán mondvá (in truth) ő se nem költő, se nem szónok. Hiszen (enclitical, has no meaning in English) én neki világosan mondtam, hogy ma jöjjön el. A' barátom bizonyosan még ma el fog jőni. Mennél nagyobb a' hegy, annál nehezebb arra fel menni. Mennél többet olvas az ember, annál többet tanul. Mennyivel tovább alszunk, annyival rövidebb ideig élünk, mert életünk minden órája vesztesség, a' mellyikben alszunk.*

(The) Kings act unjustly, when they make war against their own people. If you tell it once to me (If once etc.), I shall know it another time. The more you speak, the less they will understand. He knows it perhaps himself (what) how he ought to act (how he must act). My brother left London yesterday and arrived at Paris to-day. (The boys went to school already (The boys already to school went). Thy friend has left France long ago. Formerly people were under the government of Patriarchs. The steam-engine has been invented recently. America has been discovered more than 350 years ago (350 *esztendővel ezelőtt*). Formerly men knew only three parts of the earth. The more men



know, the more wants they have. The sooner you finish your lessons, the sooner you shall play. How do you know, whether my brother has arrived, or not. We often have been in the king's gardens, but as often as we go we find new pleasure. Whence do you come? I come from Brussels at this moment (*e' pillanatban*).

---



## II. DIVISION.

### **THEORY OF THE LANGUAGE.**

# THE HISTORY OF

THE CITY OF BOSTON, FROM THE FIRST SETTLEMENT TO THE PRESENT TIME.

## **A. GRAMMATICAL FORMS. — ETYMOLOGY.**

The Etymological formations, as well as the Syntax, of the Hungarian language are conformable to the character of Oriental languages.

The language has scarcely any Declension for objective terms (Substantives and Adjectives), no primitive possessive Pronouns, is poor in Prepositions strictly taken, but seems to be inexhaustible in Verbal formations. These latter may be extended to such an immense number of various Verbal roots, that all other European languages are but poor and incomplete representatives of Verbal forms in comparison with it.

As these are the principal ones in the language, they may be premised, although many Grammarians prefer to begin with the Nouns.

### **I. Verbs.**

#### **1. Verbal roots.**

##### **A. Primitive roots.**

In other European languages we are in the habit of expressing the Verbs in the Infinitive, as their simple form, in the Hungarian language we must inquire after the root of the Verb. The Infinitive



of any Verb ends with the syllable *ni*, preceded by a vowel or a consonant. The root of Verbs always has a final consonant; thus, if the termination of the Infinitive be taken off, and the remainder of the verb has a final vowel, this vowel must be omitted as well, and then the remainder will be the root of the Verb.

The Verb *ülni*, to sit, has its root in *ül*; *vallani*, to confess, has it in *vall*. — Such Verbal roots are called primitive Verbal roots, and are for the greatest part monosyllabical ones, at least in all primitively Hungarian Verbs. They are either regular ones, when the Verbal roots remain entirely unchanged whatever termination may be joined to them, or irregular ones, when they are liable to different transformations as often as some terminations are added to them; in order to form the different Tenses of the Verb. Irregularities are produced: by a contraction of the Verbal root; by inserting a consonant between the vowel of the root and that of the personal termination of the Verb, which is then assimilated to that of the personal termination as often as this begins with a consonant; or by exchange of consonants, especially of the consonants *d*, *sz*, *v*. —

#### α) Contractions.

Contractions are produced by the omission of a vowel or of a consonant in the last syllable of the verbal root.

Vowels can be omitted only in Verbs the root of which is of more than one syllable.

Consonants are omitted in a few, — only monosyllabical Verbal roots.

### Omission of vowels.

The vowel of the last syllable of a polysyllabic Verbal root is omitted if the concurrence of consonants does not harden the pronunciation of the Verb, or if the last vowel is not a long one, because long vowels never do admit elision. — As Euphony is always to be taken into consideration, such abbreviations cannot be admitted if the penultima has a final consonant. For instance: *bon-czol*, does not admit: *bon-czl*.

1. If the last syllable of the Verbal root is formed by a combination of the liquids *l*, *n*, *r* with the consonant *g*; as: *csiko-rog*, (*csikorogni*) to creak contracted into *csikorg* (*csikorgom*); — *dögöl*, the root of *dögölni* to die (said of animals), *döglik* it dies; — *zörög-ni* to make a noise, *zörgök* I make a noise.

*Farag*, to carve, retains its root without any change; *faragok* I carve (wood.)

2. If the consonants *g*, *z* combine in the last syllable, or instead of *g*, the labial *b* or dental *d* precedes the consonant *z*. *Mozogni* to move; *mozog*, contracted *mozg*, *mozgok* I move; *habozni* to fluctuate, to foam; *habz*, *habzik*, it fluctuates. This is the reason of formations like that of *alapszik* it is founded, instead of *alaposzik*.

3. If the last syllable is formed by the consonants *l, m, n, r*, or if the consonants *sz, z, zs, cs*, should meet with them; as, *kínoz-ni* to plague, to trouble; contracted, *kínz, kínzom* I plague; — *poroz-ni* to dust, *porzom* I dust; — *érdemel-ni* to deserve, *érdeml, érdemlek* I deserve. —

4. The dentals *d, t*, followed by *r*, admit the same abbreviation. *Sodor-ni* to fling, to twist; *sodr, sodrom* I fling; *györtör-ni* to trouble, *gyötröm* I do trouble.

Observ. These abbreviations very often recur in the Infinitive Mood, but in such instances the vowel is replaced when the root is used by itself: as, in the third person of the Present Tense in the Singular Number in the Active; or the root is not used by itself and the third person receives the termination *ik*, as, in the Medium. *Sodrani* instead of *sodorni*, *gyötreni* instead of *gyötörni*; *habzani* instead of *habozni*, of which is, *habzik* it foams.

#### Omission of Consonants.

There are only a few Verbs which admit such a contraction, and these are the Verbs: *szőni* to sew (with a needle), *lőni* to shoot, *ríni* to cry, *nőni* to grow, *jőni* to come, *sírni* to cry, to yell, *róni* to tally (to mark), *híni* to call, *színi* to suck, *víni* to contest, to fight a duel, *búni* to hide, to conceal one's self, *fúni* to blow; which are formed by contraction of the radicals: *szöv (szövní)*, *löv, rív, növ, jöv*, etc. — the consonant *v* being left out and the radical vowel prolonged.

Observ. 1. If the Personal terminations begin with a vowel, the primitive roots (ending with the consonant *v*) are used; thus we have: *növök* I grow, *nötem* I have grown.

Observ. 2. The Verbal roots *hi*, *szi*, *vi*, *bú*, *fú* have, besides their preceding roots, the respective roots, *hiv*, *sziv*, *viv*, *búj*, *fúj*, equally used in familiar conversation as well as in writing.

### β. Insertions and assimilations of Consonants.

A few monosyllabical Verbal roots deviate in their radical formations so far as to shew a new root for nearly each Tense. The only analogy noticed in their transformation is, that they redouble the consonant of the personal termination of those Tenses which have an initial consonant. Such are: the Perfect Tense (*t*), the Conditional and Infinitive Moods (*n*). The following Verbs are of this kind: *hinni* to believe, the root of which is *hi*; *vinni* to carry, *vi*; *venni* to buy, *ve*; *enni* to eat, *e*; *inni* to drink, *i*; to which may be added *menni* the root of which is *men*, — its Present in the Indicative Mood is formed by the root *megy*. In regard to these, I refer to the first part Numb. VII: Irregular Verbs.

### γ. Changing of Consonants and omission of Vowels.

Verbal roots terminating with the syllables *ed*, *od*, *öd*, *ud*, *üd*, especially when preceded by the

palatels *g*, *k*, or the liquids *r*, *l*, suffer a double alteration of their primitive root. Firstly the vowel *e*, *o*, *ö*, *u*, or *ü* is omitted; secondly the dental *d* is changed into *sz* for the Present, into *v* for the Imperfect Tense, of the Indicative Mood. In the other Tenses the primitive root is restored. — *Alud-ni* to sleep, changes its root „*alud*“ into „*alsz*;“ and I sleep means *alszom* (instead of *aludom*); *dicseked-ni* to glory, to have a pride (in), forms *dicsekszem*, I glory; *meneked-ni* to take refuge, to save one's self, forms *menekszem*; *gazdagod-ni* to grow rich, forms *gazdagszom*. In the Imperfect Tense they form: *alvám*, I slept (instead of *aludám*); *dicsekvém*, instead of *dicsekédém*, etc. —

Observ. 1. Verbs in which *g* precedes the final syllable of the root are preferably used as regulars in the Imperfect Tense; thus, *megeléged-ém* is preferable to *megelégv-ém*, I was satisfied; *megbetegedém* I became ill, is better than *megbetegvém*.

Observ. 2. If the penultima of the root be preceded by a double consonant no contraction will take place, but the change of *d* into *sz* and *v*, is effected. — *Alkud-ni* to bid (in the price), *alkuszm* I bid, and *alkuvám* I bade, etc.

All the primitive Verbal roots are divided into three classes: Active, Neuter and Medial Verbal roots. Active Verbal roots are of a Transitive, the Neuter ones of an Intransitive meaning; Medial roots are of an Intransitive and Reflexive meaning, which in most of the European languages are con-



structed with the objective case of the Personal Pronouns; in the Hungarian language, the Passive Verbal affixes are used instead.

### B. Derivative roots.

Under this Section I comprehend such Verbal roots as are derived from primitive Verbs, in order to form a Verb of a different Gender from that of the primitive Verb; thus, the Verbs derived from Nouns, Adjectives, etc., or from other Verbs, as long as their Generic meaning does not change, are hereby excluded.

Such derivate Verbal roots are the roots:

#### α) Of the Passive Voice.

The Passive Voice is formed by means of the syllables *at*, *et*, added to the root of the Active Voice. *Verni*, to beat, forms *veret*, *veretem* I am beaten, etc., *írni*, to write, *írat-ni* to be written.

Obs. 1. Verbs the Active root of which terminates with a *t*, preceded by a long vowel or the consonant *j*, and polysyllabical Verbs commonly form their Passive root by addition of the syllable *tat*, *tet*. *Tanít-ani* to teach, *taníttat-ni*, to be taught; *enged-ni* to allow, *engedtét-ni*, to be allowed; *bonczol-ni* to dissect, to anatomize, *bonczoltat-ni*, to be dissected; *kormányozni* to govern, *kormányoztat-ni* to be governed.

Obs. 2. *Fúj-ni* to blow, *lő-ni* to shoot, *ró-ni* to mark on a tally, *tenni* to put, form: *fuvat-ni*, *lövet-ni*, *rovat-ni*, *tétet-ni*.

## β) Of Factitive and Permissive Expressions.

Such Expressions, in the English language, are formed by means of the Verbs: to make, to cause, to have, to let, as, I cause him to write, I let him read, I have my coat made, etc. The Hungarian language admits the formation of Factitive and Permissive roots from any Active Verb or such Neuters as are used with the Objective case, by the addition of the syllable *tat*, *tet* to the primitive Verbal root. *Várni* to wait, *vártat-ni* to let any one wait; *kés-ni* to tarry, *késtet-ni* to cause delay.

Obs. 1. *Enni*, *hinni*, *inni*, *venni* form: *etet-ni* to feed, *hitet-ni* to cause to believe, *vétet-ni* to cause to buy.

Obs. 2. In some instances the Factitive root is used instead of the Passive one, as in polysyllabical Verbs, and the Passive root instead of a Factitive and Permissive one, as in monosyllabical Verbs. *Irat-ni*, to be written, to let write, and to cause to be written; *olvastat-ni* to be read, and to make one read.

## γ) Of Frequentativums.

These are used when a repeatedly performed action is to be represented. Verbs of this kind are formed by means of the syllables *gat*, *get*, and *kál*, *kél*; as, *tanít-ani* to teach, *tanítgat-ni* to be often teaching; *írkál-in* to write repeatedly.

Observ. 1. In most Verbs this Frequentative syllable is preceded by the vowel *o* or *e*, especially

when Euphony requires it. *Ver-ni* to beat, *vereget-ni* to be beating repeatedly; *néz-ni* to look, *nézeget-ni* to be often looking.

Observ. 2. If the primitive Verbal root terminates with the liquid *l* or *r*, a Verbal root may be formed for diminutive-frequentative actions by means of the additional syllable *dogál*, *degél*; for instance, *irdogál*, he is writing a little at a time.

#### δ) Of the Potential Mood.

If the possibility of the action, expressed by any Verb whatever, is represented, or the capability of the Active subjects is to be expressed, a new root is formed by the additional syllable *hat*, *het*. This syllable may be added to primitive Verbal roots as well as to derivative ones. *Ir-ni* to write, *irat-ni* to be written; *ver-ni* to beat, *veret-ni* to be beaten, *vertet-ni* to have any one beaten, *vereget-ni* to beat repeatedly, *verdegél-ni* to beat repeatedly but a little at a time, have their Potential roots in: *ir-hat* he is able to write, *irat-hat* may be written, can be written; *verhet* he can beat, *verethet* may be beaten or being possible to beat him, *vertethet* he is able to beat or able to empower others to beat any one, *vereget-het*, he may beat repeatedly, *verdegél-het*, etc.

#### ε) Of the Future.

This is formed by the addition of *and*, *end*, to any of the preceding or other Verbal roots.

The root of the Future, formed that way, involves the notion of conditionality when used in any of the Tenses, and that of necessity and duty in the form of the Verbal Adjective (the Present Participle according to some Grammars). The preceding roots *ir*, *irat*, *irhat*, *irathat*, *ver*, *veret*, *vereget*, *verdegél*, *verhet*, *verethet*, *veregethet*, *verdegélhet*, will give as many new roots for the Future: *irand*, (he) will write; *iratand*, will be written or (he) will let write; *irhatand*, (he) will be able to write; *irathatand*, (he) will be able to have written; *verend*, (he) will beat; *veretend*, will be beaten; *veregetend*, (he) will beat frequently; *verdegéle*nd, (he) will beat frequently softly; *verhetend*, (he) will be able to beat; *verethetend*, will be able to let him beat, and might be beaten; *veregethetend*, (he) will be able to beat repeatedly etc.

As it is not the intention of this work to give an extensive Etymology of the language, the preceding formations of derivative Verbal roots may suffice to indicate the fertility of the Hungarian Verbs.

To give a short view of the formations of the different roots, the following are subjoined:

- |                  |  |
|------------------|--|
| Active           | <i>Ver-ni</i> , to beat.                                   |
| Passive          | <i>Veret-ni</i> , to be beaten.                            |
| Frequentative    | <i>Vereget-ni</i> , to beat frequently.                    |
| Diminutive-Freq. | <i>Verdegél-ni</i> , to beat frequently (but not so hard). |
| Frequentative    | <i>Verdes-ni</i> , to beat frequently.                     |

Diminutive

*Verint-eni*, to beat a little.

Reciprocal

*Vereked-ni*, to beat each other, to fight.*Verõd-ni*, to knock one's self against;

When the active subject at the same time is the passive object as well.

*Vergõd-ni*, to get through (to fight with unfavourable circumstances).

From each of these may be formed

Potential roots:

*Verhet-ni*, being able to beat.*Verethet-ni*, being exposed to being beaten.*Veregethet-ni*, being able to beat frequently.*Verdegélhet-ni*.*Verdeshet-ni*.*Verinthe-ni*.*Verekedhet-ni*, being able or having opportunity to fight,*Verõdhet-ni*.*Vergõdhet-ni*.

Neuter

*Mozog-ni*, to be in motion.

Active

*Mozgat-ni*, to move.*Mozdúl-ni*, to move (one's self), to move on.*Mozdit-ani*, to put in motion.*Mozgadoz-ni*, to be in a repeated motion.*Mozzan-ni*, to stir. Etc.



As we often use Metaphorical expressions, when the language affords no proper term for the representations of our thoughts, many of these Verbal roots are used metaphorically; this Rhetorical licence is one of the sources of Verbal abundance.

From the root *vesz*, to perish, may be formed:  
*veszt-eni*, to lose (Factitive: to cause to perish).

*veszít-eni*, to lose (to permit perishing).

*veszteget-ni*, to squander (to let become lost frequently).

*vesztegel-ni*, to be idle (to lose time continually or frequently).

*veszeked-ni*, to quarrel (to lose words and friendship for one another).

Those who wish to see the whole extent of the derivation of roots may consult „Comarinus Csipkés Hungaria illustrata 1655“ or the „System of the Hungarian language by the Hungarian Academy.“

## 2. Conjugation.

### A. Tenses, Persons, Moods.

The different representations of action, expressed by any Verb, relative to Time, when it took place; to Persons, who are active, and to Modality of action or activity itself, gave origin to what is called the „Conjugation of the Verb.“

This Conjugation of a Hungarian Verb is performed by means of different affixes joined to the Verbal roots.

In consideration of the Verbal roots themselves there are two different classes of Conjugational affixes; one for the Active and Neuter, the other for the Passive and Medium (Neutro-Passive).

Time is represented as: past, present, and future, comprehending an infinite series of successive changes. The Grammatical forms for these representations (Tenses) will be as many as there may be made distinctions of time.

The European languages distinguish Present, Past, and Future. The more Nations become cultivated in Rhetoric, the more combinations of the different stations of time will occur and the more Tenses will be required in the Grammar of their language.

The Hungarian language, having been attached to the familiar home of the agriculturists, is not so rich in Grammatical forms of Tenses, and in familiar conversation we may do with two; the one for the present and future, Present Tense \*), and the other for the past, Perfect Tense. The intermediate Tense, Imperfect, and the compound one, the Pluperfect, are Tenses more of the solemn style and not familiar in the home of the true Hungarians. The compound Future is a foreign element.

---

\*) For the future the Hungarian Verb may form a new root — see above.

**Persons.** The notion (idea) of this expression being a logical consequence of the distinction made between: speaker, spoken to, and spoken of, — the Hungarian Verb has as many distinctions relative to Persons as all other European languages; but, with regard to the distinction of Gender, the Hungarians have retained the Oriental character, making no distinction of Gender whatever. The distinction of Gender made in Grammar is incomprehensible to Hungarians; just as the want of that distinction would puzzle foreigners. Grammar indeed and language may dispense with the distinction of *he*, *she*, *it*, if they be replaced by any other word that would comprehend them all.

**Modality is the Logic of the Verb.** The Verb is either: in apodictical relation to the subject, in the Indicative and Imperative Moods; in an assertorial one, in the Subjunctive Mood; in a hypothetical or problematical one, in the Conditional; or, lastly, in an Infinitive or Indefinite relation, in the Infinitive Mood. The Hungarian language has proper Verbal forms for each of the different Moods.

#### **B. Characteristics of the different Tenses and Moods.**

Affixes used to express the different personal relations, are added to the Characteristic of the Verb.

**Characteristic** is the final consonant of the Verbal root, remaining after the personal affixes are taken off.

In the Hungarian language there are distinguished Characteristics:

1. That of the Present, Imperfect and Future, which is the root of the Verb itself. There are as many such Characteristics as there are radical terminations. *Vár*, (to) wait; *kínoz*, (to) plague; *ad*, to give; *szab*, (to) cut out; *száll*, (to) fly; etc.

2. That of the Perfect, which is only one, and always *t*. The Characteristic of the Perfect is added to the Verbal root (primitive or derivative), either immediately, or by means of a vowel; in the latter case the *t* is doubled.

α) The Characteristic *t* is added by means of one of the vowels *o*, *ö*, *e*, (*o* for hard, *ö*, *e* for soft Verbs):

To polysyllabic Verbal roots when they end with the consonants *d* or *t*, preceded by a long vowel or another consonant. *Tanít* — (to) teach, *tanított* — taught; *mond* — (to) say, *mondott* — said; *hajt* — (to) drive, *hajtott* — driven.

To Verbal roots terminating with a double consonant; all contracted roots are such. *Érdemel* — (to) deserve, contracted *érdeml* —, *érdemlett* — deserved; *gyakorl* — (from *gyakorol*) (to) practise, *gyakorlott* — practised.

To Monosyllabical roots terminating with *t*. *Fut* — (to) run, *futott* — run; *köt* — (to) bind, *kötött* — bound, etc.

**Observ.** *lát* — (to) see, has *látt* — seen, for the first and second, *látott*, for the third person. Some of the monosyllabical roots terminating with *t*, have a regular and augmented form as well, *hatt* and *hatott*, from the primitive *hat* — (to) have impression; *jutt* and *jutott*, from *jut* — (to) reach, (to) get to, (to) become.

β) The Verbal root receives the Characteristic without the accession of a vowel, whenever it does not belong to the preceding rule. *Olvas* — (to) read, *olvast* — read; *vár* —, *várt* —; *var* — (to) sew, *vart* — sewed; *talál* — (to) find, *talált* — found; *vártat* — (to) leave waiting, *vártatt* — left waiting; *tol* — (to) push, *tolt* — pushed.

**Obs.** Verbs the roots of which terminate with the consonants *b*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *gy*, *k*, *m*, *p*, *s*, *sz*, *v*, *z*, and polysyllables with a final *t*, receive the cementing vowel *e*, *o*, *ö* only in the third Person of the Singular Number. *ad*, *adott*; *fagy* — (to) freeze, *fagyott* he froze; *döf* — (to) butt, *döfött*; *lak* — (to) dwell, (to) inhabit, *lakott* he dwelt.

3. The Characteristic of the Subjunctive and Imperative Mood is *j*, which is added immediately to the Verbal root. *Vár* —, *várj* —; *lép* (to) step, *lépj* —; *lak* —, *lakj* —; etc.

**Obs. 1.** Verbal roots with a final *t*, *z*, *sz*, *z* change this Characteristic *j* into *s*, *sz*, *z*. — See Introduction § 3.

**Obs. 2.** The 3<sup>d</sup> Person and the whole Plural of the Pres. Tense Ind. Mood of the Definite Form



receive *j* as their characteristic as well, which is assimilated to the final consonants *s*, *sz*, *z*, but remains unchanged after *t* final. —

4) The Characteristic of the Conditional is *n* added to the Verbal root either immediately as in: *ad* —, *adn* —; *vár* —, *várn* —; *lát* —, *lát n* —; *kér* — (to) petition, *kér n* —; *es* — (to) fall, *esn* —; or by means of the vowels *a*, *e*, to such roots as receive the Characteristic of the Perfect with a cementing vowel (see 2. α)) *Tanít* —, *tanítan* —; *mond* —, *mondan* —; *segít* — (to) assist, *segíten* —; etc.

### C. Forms and Personal terminations.

The Active Voice has two distinct Forms of Conjugation: a Definite and an Indefinite one. The Neuter is only used in the Indefinite form of the Active Voice.

The Passive Voice has personal terminations different from those of the Active, though related to them. These terminations are used with Verbs the meaning of which is a neutral one, and which are known (in Hungarian Grammars) as Verbs of *ik*, because their third Person of the Sing. Number ends with *ik*, or as Neutro-Passives, because they have the external form of the Passive voice and the internal meaning of a Neuter Verb. I preferred to call them „Mediums“ similar to the Greek, and in fact most of them are of the same meaning as the Greek Medium, their Passive form not being regarded.

1. THE PERSONAL TERMINATIONS  
OF THE INDEFINITE FORM OF THE ACTIVE VOICE  
AND NEUTER.

*I n d i c a t i v e M o o d.*

Hard ones.

Soft ones.

Present Tense.

Sing. <i>ok, sz, root;</i>	<i>ek (ök), sz, root;</i>
Plur. <i>unk, tok, nak.)*</i>	<i>ünk, tek (tök), nek.</i>

Imperfect.

Sing. <i>ék, ál, a;</i>	<i>ék, él, e;</i>
Plur. <i>ánk, átok, anak.</i>	<i>énk, étek, ének.</i>

Perfect.

Sing. <i>am, ál, Charact.;</i>	<i>em, él, Charact.;</i>
Plur. <i>unk, atok, anak.</i>	<i>ünk, etek, enek.</i>

Pluperfect

has the same terminations as the Perfect, but to each Person is added the word „*vala*“.

Future

is a compound Tense of the Present of *fog-ni* to seize, to catch, and the Infinitive of that Verb the Future of which is required. The whole is a foreign product.

On the Tenses of the Future radical *and* or *end*, see below.

---

\*) All the Verbs, that receive a cementing vowel before the Characteristic of the Perfect, receive such a vowel before all the Personal terminations which begin with a consonant, except the *j* of the Subjunctive. Thus instead of *tok*, they have *otok*, and *anak* instead of *nak* etc.. The soft ones receive the corresponding soft vowel, as *ötök, enek*, etc.

*S u b j u n c t i v e.***Hard.****Soft.****Present.**

Sing.	<i>ak, ál*), on;</i>		<i>ek, él, en;</i>
Plur.	<i>unk, atok, anak.</i>		<i>ünk, etek enek.</i>

**Past.**

As the Perfect of the Indicative Mood with the addition of *légyen*, to each Person.

*C o n d i t i o n a l.***Hard.****Soft.****Present.**

Sing.	<i>ék, ál, a;</i>		<i>ék, él, e;</i>
Plur.	<i>ánk, átok, anak.</i>		<i>énk, étek, ének.</i>

**Past.**

The Past Tense of the Conditional is the same as the Perfect in its Personal forms, each receives the additional word *volna*.

*I m p e r a t i v e.*

The Imperative Mood has no proper forms, the Present Tense of the Subjunctive Mood being used instead. Thus:

Sing. Charact., —		Charact.,
Plur. <i>atok</i> , —		<i>etek.</i>

*I n f i n i t i v e.*

*ni*, for hard and soft Verbs.

---

\*) Instead of the terminations *ál, él*, the form of the Imperative which has no termination, *j* being the Characteristic of the Subj. and Imper. Moods, may be used.

## 2. PERSONAL TERMINATIONS OF THE DEFINITE FORM OF THE ACTIVE VOICE.

### *I n d i c a t i v e.*

**Hard.**

**Soft.**

#### Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>om, od, a;*)</i>		<i>em (öm), ed (öd), i;</i>
Plur.	<i>uk, átok, ák.</i>		<i>ük, itek, ik.</i>

#### Imperfect.

Sing.	<i>ám, ád, á;</i>		<i>ém</i>	<i>éd,</i>	<i>é;</i>
Plur.	<i>ók, átok, ák.</i>		<i>ök,</i>	<i>étek,</i>	<i>ék.</i>

#### Perfect.

Sing.	<i>am, ad, a;</i>		<i>em,</i>	<i>ed,</i>	<i>e;</i>
Plur.	<i>uk, átok, ák.</i>		<i>ük,</i>	<i>étek,</i>	<i>ék.</i>

#### Pluperfect.

The personal terminations of the Perfect, each Person receiving the additional „*vala*“.

#### Future.

The Infinitive and the Present Tense of *fogni*, in its Definite form.

### *S u b j u n c t i v e.*

**Hard.**

**Soft.**

#### Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>am, ad, a;</i>		<i>em, ed, e;</i>
Plur.	<i>uk, átok, ák.</i>		<i>ük, étek, ék.</i>

#### Perfect.

Like the Perfect of the Indicative Mood, to which is added *légyen*.

---

\*) Preceded by *j*, the same as the Plural. See B., Characteristics. 3.

*C o n d i t i o n a l.***Hard.****Soft.****Present.**

Sing.	<i>ám, ád, á;</i>		<i>ém, éd, é;</i>
Plur.	<i>ók, átok, ák.</i>		<i>ők, étek, ék.</i>

**Past.**

In the Past is used the Perfect of the Indicative Mood, to each Person of which is added *volna*.

The Imperative Mood is supplied by the Subjunctive. Instead of the longer form of the second Person *ad*, commonly the shorter one with a simple *d*, is used; in such cases the Characteristic *j* is suppressed as well.

### 3. PERSONAL TERMINATIONS OF THE PASSIVE VOICE AND MEDIUM.

*I n d i c a t i v e.***Hard.****Soft.****Present.**

Sing.	<i>om, ol, ik;</i>		<i>em (öm), el (öl),**)</i>	<i>ik;</i>
Plur.	<i>unk, tok, nak.)*</i>		<i>ünk, tek (tök), nek,</i>	

**Imperfect.**

Sing.	<i>ám, ál, ék;</i>		<i>ém, él, ék;</i>
Plur.	<i>ánk, átok, anak.</i>		<i>énk, étek, ének.</i>

---

\*) Medial Verbs that receive a vowel before the *t* of the Perfect Tense have the vowel *o* before *tok*, and *a* before *nak*. (See Characteristic of the Perfect.)

\*\*) *öm, öl, tök* are only used with Medial Verbs the root of which has *ö* for its vowel.



Hard.

Soft.

## Perfect.

Sing. <i>am, ál,</i>	Charact.;	<i>em,</i>	<i>el,</i>	Charact.;
Plur. <i>unk, atok, anak (ak).</i>		<i>ünk,</i>	<i>etek,</i>	<i>enek (ek).</i>

## Pluperfect

is formed like that of the Active voice.

## Future,

like that of the Active voice.

*S u b j u n c t i v e .\*)*

## Present.

Sing. <i>am, ál,</i>	<i>ék;</i>	<i>em,</i>	<i>él,</i>	<i>ék;</i>
Plur. <i>unk, atok, anak.</i>		<i>ünk,</i>	<i>etek,</i>	<i>enek.</i>

## Perfect

is formed like the Perfect of the Active Voice.

*C o n d i t i o n a l .*

## Present.

Sing. <i>ám,</i>	<i>ál,</i>	<i>ék;</i>	<i>ém,</i>	<i>él,</i>	<i>ék;</i>
Plur. <i>ánk,</i>	<i>atok,</i>	<i>anak.</i>	<i>énk,</i>	<i>etek,</i>	<i>enek.</i>

## Perfect

is formed like the Perfect of the Active Voice.

In forming the Imperative Mood the rules given for the Active Voice are to be observed here as well.

*I n f i n i t i v e .*

*ni.*

No vowel precedes this termination in the Passive Voice; as regards the Medium see the Active Voice.

---

\*) On assimilation of the characteristic see Introduction § 3.

## D. Paradigma of the Conjugation of the Verb.

## 1. ACTIVE.

## α) Verbs with hard vowels.

## a. INDEFINITE FORM.

*I n d i c a t i v e M o o d.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találok</i> , I find
	<i>Találsz</i> , thou findest
	<i>Talál</i> , he finds;
Plur.	<i>Találunk</i> , we find
	<i>Találtok</i> , you find
	<i>Találnak</i> , they find.

## Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találék</i> , I found
	<i>Találál</i> , thou foundst
	<i>Talála</i> , he found;
Plur.	<i>Találánk</i> , we found
	<i>Találátok</i> , you found
	<i>Találának</i> , they found.

## Perfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találtam</i> , I have found
	<i>Találtál</i> , thou hast found
	<i>Talált</i> , he has found;
Plur.	<i>Találtunk</i> , we have found
	<i>Találtatok</i> , you have found
	<i>Találtanak</i>
	and } , they have found.
	<i>Találtak</i>

## Pluperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találtam vala</i> or <i>volt</i> , I had	} found.
	<i>Találtál vala</i> , thou hadst	
	<i>Talált vala</i> , he had	
Plur.	<i>Találtunk vala</i> , we had	
	<i>Találtatok vala</i> , you had	
	<i>Találtak vala</i> } <i>Találtak vala</i> }, they had	

## Compound Future.

Sing.	<i>Találni fogok</i> , I shall or will	} find.
	<i>Találni fogsz</i> , thou wilt	
	<i>Találni fog</i> , he will	
Plur.	<i>Találni fogunk</i> , we shall or will	
	<i>Találni fogtok</i> , you will	
	<i>Találni fognak</i> , they will	

*S u b j u n c t i v e M o o d.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találjak</i> , that I may	} find.
	<i>Találjál</i> , that thou mayst	
	<i>Találjon</i> , that he may	
Plur.	<i>Találjunk</i> , that we may	
	<i>Találjatok</i> , that you may	
	<i>Találjanak</i> , that they may	

## Past Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találtam legyen</i> , that I might	} have found.
	<i>Találtál legyen</i> , that thou mightest	
	<i>Talált legyen</i> , that he might	
Plur.	<i>Találtunk legyen</i> , that we might	
	<i>Találtatok legyen</i> , that you might	
	<i>Találtak legyen</i> , that they might	

*Conditional.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találnék</i> , I should or would	}	find.
	<i>Találnál</i> , thou wouldst		
	<i>Találna</i> , he would		
Plur.	<i>Találnánk</i> , we should or would	}	
	<i>Találnátok</i> , you would		
	<i>Találnának</i> , they would		

## Past Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találtam volna</i> , I should or would	}	have found.
	<i>Találtál volna</i> , thou wouldst		
	<i>Talált volna</i> , he would		
Plur.	<i>Találtunk volna</i> , we should or would	}	
	<i>Találtatok volna</i> , you would		
	<i>Találtak volna</i> , they would		

*Imperative.*

Sing.	<i>Találj</i> , find (thou);
Plur.	<i>Találjatok</i> , find (you).

*Infinitive.*

*Találni*, to find.

Obs. 1. The Pres. Tense of the Subjunctive Mood is used to express forms like those: „Let us go, let them go, let him go,“ *menjünk, menjenek, menjen*.

Obs. 2. All the Neuter Verbs are conjugated according to the Indefinite Form of the Active Voice.

## b. DEFINITE FORM.

## I n d i c a t i v e M o o d.

## Present Tense.

Sing. *Találom*, I find (it)  
*Találod*, thou findest (it)  
*Találja*, he finds (it);

Plur. *Találjuk*, we find (it)  
*Találjátok*, you find (it)  
*Találják*, they find (it).

## Imperfect.

Sing. *Találám*, I found (it)  
*Találád*, thou foundst  
*Találá*, he found;

Plur. *Találók*, we found  
*Találátok*, you found  
*Találák*, they found.

## Perfect.

Sing. *Találtam*, I have found (it), I did find (it)  
*Találtad*, thou hast found  
*Találta*, he has found;

Plur. *Találtuk*, we have found  
*Találtátok*, you have found  
*Találták*, they have found.

## Pluperfect.

Sing.	<i>Találtám vala</i> or <i>volt</i> , I had	} found (it).
	<i>Találtad vala</i> , thou hadst	
	<i>Találta vala</i> , he had	
Plur.	<i>Találtuk vala</i> , we had	}
	<i>Találtátok vala</i> , you had	
	<i>Találták vala</i> , they had	



## Compound Future.

Sing.	<i>Találni fogom</i> , I shall	} find (it).
	<i>Találni fogod</i> , thou wilt	
	<i>Találni fogja</i> , he will	
	<i>Találni fogjuk</i> , we shall	
	<i>Találni fogjátok</i> , you will	
	<i>Találni fogják</i> , they will	

## S u b j u n c t i v e.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találjam</i> , that I may	} find (it).
	<i>Találjad</i> , that thou mayst	
	<i>Találja</i> , that he may	
Plur.	<i>Találjuk</i> , that we may	
	<i>Találjátok</i> , that you may	
	<i>Találják</i> , that they may	

## Past Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találtam légyen</i> , that I might	} have found (it).
	<i>Találtad légyen</i> , that thou mightest	
	<i>Találta légyen</i> , that he might	
Plur.	<i>Találtuk légyen</i> , that we might	
	<i>Találtátok légyen</i> , that you might	
	<i>Találták légyen</i> , that they might	

## C o n d i t i o n a l.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találnám</i> , If I found, if I would	} find.
	<i>Találnád</i> , If thou foundst, if thou wouldst	
	<i>Találná</i> , If he found, if he would	

Plur. *Találnók*, If we found, if we would  
*Találnátok*, If you found, if you would  
*Találnák*, If they found, if they would } find (it).  
 Past Tense.

Sing. *Találtam volna*, I would } if I have  
*Találtad volna*, thou wouldst } have if thou have  
*Találta volna*, he would } have if he have  
 Plur. *Találtuk volna*, we would } if we have  
*Találtátok volna*, you would } have if you have  
*Találták volna*, they would } if they have  
 Imperative.

Sing. *Találd*, find (thou) (it).

Plur. *Találjátok*, find (you) (it).

### β) Verbs with soft vowels.

#### a. INDEFINITE FORM.

#### Indicative Mood.

#### Present Tense.

Sing. *Török*\*) I break  
*Törsz*, thou breakest  
*Tör*, he breaks;

Plur. *Törünk*, we break  
*Törtök*, \*) you break  
*Törnek*, they break.

#### Imperfect Tense.

Sing. *Törék*, I broke  
*Törél*, thou brokest  
*Töre*, he broke;

\*) Verbs with *e*, as their radical vowel, have a short *e* instead of *ö*.

- Plur. *Törénk*, we broke  
*Törétek*, you broke  
*Törének*, they broke.

## Perfect Tense.

- Sing. *Törtem*, I have broken, I did break  
*Törtél*, thou hast broken  
*Tört*, he has broken;

- Plur. *Törtünk*, we have broken  
*Törtetek*, you have broken  
*Törtenek* }  
and } , they have broken.  
*Törtek* }

## Pluperfect Tense.

- Sing. *Törtem vala* or *volt*, I had  
*Törtél vala*, thou hadst  
*Tört vala*, he had  
Plur. *Törtünk vala*, we had  
*Törtetek vala*, you had  
*Törtek vala*, they had } broken.

## Compound Future.

- Sing. *Törni fogok*, I shall or will  
*Törni fogsz*, thou wilt  
*Törni fog*, he will  
Plur. *Törni fogunk*, we shall or will  
*Törni fognak*, you will  
*Törni fognak*, they will } break.

*S u b j u n c t i v e M o o d.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Törjek</i> , that I may <i>Törjél</i> , that thou mayst <i>Törjön</i> , that he may	} break.
Plur.	<i>Törjünk</i> , that we may <i>Törjetek</i> , that you may <i>Törjenek</i> , that they may	

## Past Tense.

Sing.	<i>Törtem légyen</i> , hat I might <i>Törtél légyen</i> , that thou mightest <i>Tört légyen</i> , that he might	} have broken.
Plur.	<i>Törtünk légyen</i> , that we might <i>Törtetek légyen</i> , that you might <i>Törtek légyen</i> , that they might	

*C o n d i t i o n a l.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Törnék</i> , I should <i>Törnél</i> , thou wouldst <i>Törne</i> , he would	} break.
Plur.	<i>Törnénk</i> , we should <i>Törnétek</i> , you would <i>Törnének</i> , they would	

## Past Tense.

Sing.	<i>Törtem volna</i> , I should have broken. <i>Törtél volna</i> , thou wouldst have broken <i>Tört volna</i> , he would have broken
-------	---

- Plur. *Törtünk volna*, we should have broken  
*Törtetek volna*, you would have broken  
*Törtek volna*, they would have broken.

*Imperative.*

- Sing. *Törj*, break (thou);  
 Plur. *Törjetek*, break (you).

*Infinitive.*

*Törni*, to break.

*b. DEFINITE FORM.*

*Indicative Mood.*

*Present Tense.*

- Sing. *Töröm*, I break (it), I do break (it), I am  
 breaking (it)  
*Töröd*, thou breakest etc.  
*Töri*, he breaks etc.  
 Plur. *Törjük*, we break etc.  
*Töritek*, you break etc.  
*Törik*, they break etc.

*Imperfect Tense.*

- Ping. *Törém*, I broke (it)  
*Töréd*, thou brokest  
*Töré*, he broke;  
 Plur. *Törők*, we broke  
*Törétek*, you broke  
*Törék*, they broke

*Perfect Tense.*

- Sing. *Törtem*, I have broken (it), I did break,  
*Törted*, thou hast broken etc.  
*Törte*, he has broken etc.



- Plur. *Törtük*, we have broken etc.  
*Törtétek*, you have broken etc.  
*Törték*, they have broken etc.

## Pluperfect.

- |       |                                 |                |
|-------|---------------------------------|----------------|
| Sing. | <i>Törtem vala</i> , I had      | } broken (it). |
|       | <i>Törted vala</i> , thou hast  |                |
|       | <i>Törte vala</i> , he had      |                |
| Plur. | <i>Törtük vala</i> , we had     |                |
|       | <i>Törtétek vala</i> , you had  |                |
|       | <i>Törték vala</i> *), they had |                |

## Compound Future.

- |       |                                      |               |
|-------|--------------------------------------|---------------|
| Sing. | <i>Törni fogom</i> , I shall or will | } break (it). |
|       | <i>Törni fogod</i> , thou wilt       |               |
|       | <i>Törni fogja</i> , he will         |               |
| Plur. | <i>Törni fogjuk</i> , we shall       |               |
|       | <i>Törni fogjátok</i> , you will     |               |
|       | <i>Törni fogják</i> , they will      |               |

*S u b j u n c t i v e M o o d.*

## Present Tense.

- |       |                                 |               |
|-------|---------------------------------|---------------|
| Sing. | <i>Törjem</i> , that I may      | } break (it). |
|       | <i>Törjed</i> , that thou mayst |               |
|       | <i>Törje</i> , that he may      |               |
| Plur. | <i>Törjük</i> , that we may     |               |
|       | <i>Törjétek</i> , that you may  |               |
|       | <i>Törjék</i> , that they may   |               |

---

\*) Instead of *vala*, may be used *volt*.

## Past Tense.

Sing.	<i>Törtem légyen</i> , that I might	} have broken.
	<i>Törted légyen</i> , that thou mightest	
	<i>Törte légyen</i> , that he might	
Plur.	<i>Törtük légyen</i> , that we might	
	<i>Törtétek légyen</i> , that you might	
	<i>Törték légyen</i> , that they might	

## C o n d i t i o n a l.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Törném</i> , I should, or would	} break (it).
	<i>Törnéd</i> , thou wouldst	
	<i>Törné</i> , he would	
Plur.	<i>Törnők</i> , we should, or would	
	<i>Törnétek</i> , you would	
	<i>Törnék</i> , they would	

## Past Tense.

Sing.	<i>Törtem volna</i> , I should, or would	} have broken (it).
	<i>Törted volna</i> , thou wouldst	
	<i>Törte volna</i> , he would	
Plur.	<i>Törtük volna</i> , we should, or would	
	<i>Törtétek volna</i> , you would	
	<i>Törték volna</i> , they would	

## I m p e r a t i v e.

Sing.	<i>Törd</i> , break (it).
Plur.	<i>Törjétek</i> , break (it).

Obs. Neuter Verbs have no Definite form.

## 2. PASSIVE VOICE.

## α) Verbs with hard vowels.

*I n d i c a t i v e M o o d .*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találtatom</i> , I am	}	found.
	<i>Találtatol</i> , thou art		
	<i>Találtatik</i> , he is		
Plur.	<i>Találtatunk</i> , we are	}	
	<i>Találtatok</i> , you are		
	<i>Találtatnak</i> , they are		

## Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találtatám</i> , I was	}	found.
	<i>Találtatál</i> , thou wast		
	<i>Találtaték</i> , he was		
Plur.	<i>Találtatánk</i> , we were	}	
	<i>Találtátok</i> , you were		
	<i>Találtatának</i> , they were		

## Perfect.

Sing.	<i>Találtattam</i> , I have	}	
	<i>Találtattál</i> , thou hast		
	<i>Találtatott</i> , he has		
Plur.	<i>Találtattunk</i> , we have	}	been found.
	<i>Találtattatok</i> , you have		
	<i>Találtattak</i>		
	and	}	
	<i>Találáltatanak</i>		

## Pluperfect.

Sing.	<i>Találtattam vala</i> , or <i>volt</i> I had	}	been found.
	<i>Találtattál vala</i> , thou hadst		
	<i>Találtatott vala</i> , he had		

- Plur. *Találtattunk vala*, we had  
*Találtattatok vala*, you had  
*Találtattak vala*, they had

} been found.

Compound Future.

- Sing. *Találatni fogok*, I shall or will  
*Találatni fogsz*, thou wilt  
*Találatni fog*, he will  
Plur. *Találatni fogunk*, we shall or will  
*Találatni fogtok*, you will  
*Találatni fognak*, they will

} be found.

*S u b j u n c t i v e M o o d.*

Present Tense.

- Sing. *Találtassam*, that I may  
*Találtassál*, that thou mayst  
*Találtassék*, that he may  
Plur. *Találtassunk*, that we may  
*Találtassatok*, that you may  
*Talátassanak*, that they may

} be found.

Past Tense.

- Sing. *Találtattam légyen*, that I might  
*Találtattál légyen*, that thou mightest  
*Találatott légyen*, that he might  
Plur. *Találtattunk légyen*, that we might  
*Találtattatok légyen*, that you might  
*Találtattak légyen*, that they might

} be found, and  
have been found.

*C o n d i t i o n a l.*

Present Tense.

- Sing. *Találatnám*, I should be found  
*Találatnál*, thou wouldst be found

	<i>Találtatnék</i> , he would	} be found.
Plur.	<i>Találtatnánk</i> , we should	
	<i>Találtatnátok</i> , you would	
	<i>Találtatnának</i> , they would	

## Past Tense.

Sing.	<i>Találtattam volna</i> , I should	} have been found.
	<i>Találtattál volna</i> , thou wouldst	
	<i>Találtatott volna</i> , he would	
Plur.	<i>Találtatunk volna</i> , we should	
	<i>Találtattatok volna</i> , you would	
	<i>Találtattak volna</i> , they would	

*Imperative.*

The Present Tense of the Subjunctive Mood.

*Infinitive.**Találtatni*, to be found.

## β) Verbs with soft vowels.

*Indicative Mood.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Kötetem</i> , I am bound
	<i>Kötetél</i> , thou art bound
	<i>Kötetik</i> , he is bound;
Plur.	<i>Kötetünk</i> , we are bound.
	<i>Kötettek</i> , you are bound.
	<i>Kötetnek</i> , they are bound.



## Imperfect.

Sing.	<i>Kötetém</i> , I was	} bound.
	<i>Kötetél</i> , thou wast	
	<i>Köteték</i> , he was	
Plur.	<i>Köteténk</i> , we were	
	<i>Kötetétek</i> , you were	
	<i>Kötetének</i> , they were	

## Perfect.

Sing.	<i>Kötettem</i> , I have	} been bound.
	<i>Kötettél</i> , thou hast	
	<i>Kötetett</i> , he has	
Plur.	<i>Kötettünk</i> , we have	
	<i>Kötettetek</i> , you have	
	<i>Kötettek</i> , they have	

## Pluperfect.

Sing.	<i>Kötettem vala (volt)</i> I had	} been bound.
	<i>Kötettél vala</i> , thou hadst	
	<i>Kötetett vala</i> , he had	
Plur.	<i>Kötettünk vala</i> , we had	
	<i>Kötettetek vala</i> , you had	
	<i>Kötettek vala</i> , they had	

## Compound Future.

Sing.	<i>Kötetni fogok</i> , I shall or will	} be bound.
	<i>Kötetni fogsz</i> , thou wilt	
	<i>Kötetni fog</i> , he will	
Plur.	<i>Kötetni fogunk</i> , we shall or will	
	<i>Kötetni fogtok</i> , you will	
	<i>Kötetni fognak</i> , they will	

## S u b j u n c t i v e M o o d.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Kötessem</i> , that I may	} be bound.
	<i>Kötessél</i> , that thou mayst	
	<i>Kötessék</i> , that he may	
Plur.	<i>Kötessünk</i> , that we may	
	<i>Kötessetek</i> , that you may	
	<i>Kötessenek</i> , that they may	

## Past Tense.

Sing.	<i>Kötettem légyen</i> , that I might have	} been bound.
	<i>Kötettél légyen</i> , that thou mightest	
	<i>Kötetett légyen</i> , that he might	
Plur.	<i>Kötettünk légyen</i> , that we might have	
	<i>Kötettetek légyen</i> , that you might	
	<i>Kötettek légyen</i> , that they might	

## C o n d i t i o n a l.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Kötetném</i> , I should or would	} be bound.
	<i>Kötetnél</i> , thou wouldst	
	<i>Kötetnék</i> , he would	
Plur.	<i>Kötetnénk</i> , we should or would	
	<i>Kötetnétek</i> , you would	
	<i>Kötetnének</i> , they would	

## Past Tense.

Sing.	<i>Kötettem volna</i> , I should or would	} have been bound.
	<i>Kötettél volna</i> , thou wouldst	
	<i>Kötegett volna</i> , he would	
Plur.	<i>Kötettünk volna</i> , we should or would	
	<i>Kötettetek volna</i> , you would	
	<i>Kötettek volna</i> , they would	

*Imperative Mood.*

The Present Tense of the Subjunctive is used as the Imperative Mood.

*Infinitive.*

*Kötetni*, to be bound.

3. MEDIUM. — VERBS OF *IK*.\*)*Indicative Mood.*

## Present Tense.

- Sing. *Csalódom*, I delude myself  
*Csalódöl*, thou deludest thyself  
*Csalódik*, he deludes himself;  
 Plur. *Csalódunk*, we delude ourselves  
*Csalódtok*, you delude yourselves  
*Csalódnak*, they delude themselves.

## Imperfect.

*Csalódam*, I deluded myself, I was deluding myself, etc.; exactly like the Imperfect of the Passive Voice.

## Perfect.

*Csalódtam*, I have deluded myself, I was deluding myself; like the Perfect of the Passive V.

## Pluperfect.

*Csalódtam vala* or *volt*, I had deluded myself, I have been deluding myself; like the Plup. of the Pass. V.

\*) *ikes Ige*, Verbs of *ik*, called so because the third Person of the Present Tense Sing. receives *ik*.

## Compound Future.

*Csalódni fogok*, I shall or will delude myself; like the Future of the Passive.

*S u b j u n c t i v e M o o d.*

## Present Tense.

*Csalódjám*, that I may delude myself; like the Subjunctive of the Passive.

## Past Tense.

*Csalódtam legyen*, I might have deluded myself; etc.

*C o n d i t i o n a l.*

## Present Tense.

*Csalódnám*, I should or would delude myself, etc.

## Past Tense.

*Csalódtam volna*, I might have deluded myself, etc.

*I m p e r a t i v e.*

Sing. *Csalódj*, delude thyself;

Plur. *Csalódjatok*, delude yourselves.

Obs. The Present Tense of the Subjunctive Mood is used as the Imperative Mood as well, the compound forms of the Imperative: let him delude himself, let us delude ourselves, etc. are also expressed by the Present Tense of the Subjunctive Mood.

*I n f i n i t i v e.*

*Csalódni*, to delude one's self.

---

Derivative Verbal roots have the same forms of conjugation; but it is to be remarked, that all deri-

vative Verbal roots which have a transitive meaning receive the forms of the Active Voice; such as have a reflexive meaning receive the forms of the Medium. *Csal-ni* to deceive, *csalhat-ni* to be able to deceive (can deceive), forms: *csalhatok*, *csalhatsz* etc.; — *csalatkoz-ni* (to deceive one's self) to be mistaken, forms: *csalatkozom*, *csalatkozol*, *csalatkozik*, etc. —

#### 4. FUTURE ROOT OF — „AND“.

All Verbal roots, Derivative as well as Primitive ones, can be conjugated with the Future radical „and“. The Active root *vár* (*várni*, to wait or to expect) and the Medium *lakik* (*lakni* to dwell, to live) may serve as a pattern of this kind. —

##### a. Active.

##### *I n d i c a t i v e M o o d.*

##### Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Várandok</i> , I shall or will	} be waiting.
	<i>Várandsz</i> , thou wilt	
	<i>Várand</i> , he will	
Plur.	<i>Várandunk</i> , we shall or will	
	<i>Várandatok</i> , you will	
	<i>Várandanak</i> , they will	

##### Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Várandék</i> , I would	} be waiting
	<i>Várandál</i> , thou wouldst	
	<i>Várandá</i> , he would	



Plur. *Várandánk*, we would  
*Várandátok*, you would  
*Várandának*\*), they would } be waiting.

## Perfect Tense.

Sing. *Várandottam*, I will  
*Várandottál*, thou wilt  
*Várandott*, he will  
Plur. *Várandottunk*, we will  
*Várandottatok*, you will  
*Várandottak*, they will } have waited.

## Pluperfect

is formed from the Perfect by the addition of *vala* or *volt*, to each Personal form.

*S u b j u n c t i v e M o o d.*

## Present Tense.

Sing. *Várandjak*, I shall wait\*\*)  
*Várandjál*, thou shalt wait  
*Várandjon*, he shall wait  
Plur. *Várandjunk*, we shall wait  
*Várandjatok*, you shall wait  
*Várandjanak*, they shall wait.

## Past Tense.

*Varándottam legyen*, etc., like the Past Tense of the Active V.

---

\*) The Medial form is: *Várandám*, *Várandál*, *Várandék* etc.

\*\*) The Subjunctive may often be translated by „will be obliged to wait“.

*C o n d i t i o n a l.*

## Present.

Sing.	<i>Várandnék</i> , I should	} be waiting.
	<i>Várandnál</i> , thou wouldst	
	<i>Várandna</i> , he would	
Plur.	<i>Várandnánk</i> , we should	
	<i>Várandnátok</i> , you would	
	<i>Várandnának</i> , they would	

## Past.

*Várandottam volna*, I would have been waiting,  
etc., like the Active.

*I n f i n i t i v e.*

*Várandni*, will be waiting, to be waiting.

## b. Medium.

*I n d i c a t i v e M o o d.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Lakandom</i> , I will be	} living or dwelling.
	<i>Lakandol</i> , thou wilt be	
	<i>Lakandik</i> , he will be	
Plur.	<i>Lakandunk</i> , we will be	
	<i>Lakandatok</i> , you will be	
	<i>Lakandanak</i> , they will be	

## Imperfect.

Sing.	<i>Lakandám</i> , I would be	} living or dwelling.
	<i>Lakandál</i> , thou wouldst be	
	<i>Lakandék</i> , he would be	

Plur. *Lakandánk*, we would be  
*Lakandátok*, you would be  
*Lakandának*, they would be } living or dwelling.

Perfect.

Sing. *Lakandottam*, I will  
*Lakandottál*, thou wilt  
*Lakandott*, he will  
Plur. *Lakandottunk*, we will  
*Lakandottatok*, you will  
*Lakandottak*, they will } have lived or dwelt.

Pluperfect.

*Lakandottam vala* or *volt*, etc., like the Passive.

### *S u b j u n c t i v e.*

Present Tense.

Sing. *Lakandjam*, I shall be  
*Lakandjál*, thou shalt be  
*Lakandjék*, he shall be  
Plur. *Lakandjunk*, we shall be  
*Lakandjatok*, you shall be  
*Lakandjanak*, they shall be } living or dwelling.

Past Tense.

*Lakandottam légyén*, etc.

### *C o n d i t i o n a l.*

Present.

Sing. *Lakandnám*, I should be  
*Lakandnál*, thou wouldst be  
*Lakandnék*, he would be } living or dwelling.

Plur. *Lakandnánk*, we should be  
*Lakandnátok*, you would be } living or dwelling.  
*Lakandnának*, they would be }

Past.

*Lakandottam volna*, etc., like that of the Passive.

*I n f i n i t i v e.*

*Lakandni*, (to) will be living.

## 5. CONTRACTED VERBAL ROOTS.

### a. Active Voice.

#### INDEFINITE FORM.

*I n d i c a t i v e M o o d.*

Present Tense.

Sing. *Sodrok*, I twist, and I spin  
*Sodrasz* and *sodorsz*, thou twistest  
*Sodor*, he twisteth;

Plur. *Sodrunk*, we twist  
*Sodortok*, you twist  
*Sodornak* }  
*Sodranak* }, they twist.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. *Sodrék*, I twisted, I spun.  
*Sodrál*, thou twistedst  
*Sodra*, he twisted;

Plur. *Sodránk*, we twisted  
*Sodrútok*, you twisted  
*Sodrának*, they twisted.

## Perfect.

- Sing. *Sodrottam* }  
*Sodortam* } , I have twisted, I was twisting  
*Sodrottál* }  
*Sodortál* } , thou hast twisted  
*Sodrott*, he has twisted;
- Plur. *Sodrottunk* }  
*Sodortunk* } , we have twisted  
*Sodrottatok* }  
*Sodortatok* } , you have twisted  
*Sodrottak*, they have twisted.

## Pluperfect.

- Sing. *Sodrottam vala* }  
*Sodortam vala* } , I had twisted  
*Sodrottál vala* }  
*Sodortál vala* } , thou hadst twisted  
*Sodrott vala*, he had twisted;
- Plur. *Sodrottunk vala* }  
*Sodortunk vala* } , we had twisted  
*Sodrottatok vala* }  
*Sodortatok vala* } , you had twisted  
*Sodrottak vala*, they had twisted.

## Compound Future.

- Sing. *Sodorni fogok*, I shall or will twist  
*Sodorni fogsz*, thou wilt twist  
*Sodorni fog*, he will twist;
- Plur. *Sodorni fogunk*, we shall or will twist  
*Sodorni fogtok*, you will twist  
*Sodorni fognak*, they will twist.



*S u b j u n c t i v e M o o d.*

## Present Tense.

- Sing. *Sodorjak*, that I may twist  
*Sodorjál*, that thou mayst twist  
*Sodorjon*, that he may twist;
- Plur. *Sodorjunk*, that we may twist  
*Sodorjatok*, that you may twist  
*Sodorjanak*, that they may twist.

## Past Tense.

- |       |   |   |                     |                 |
|-------|---|---|---------------------|-----------------|
| Sing. | <i>Sodrottam légyen</i>                   | } | , that I might      | } have twisted. |
|       | <i>Sodortam légyen</i>                    |   |                     |                 |
|       | <i>Sodrottál légyen</i>                   | } | , that thou mightst |                 |
|       | <i>Sodortál légyen</i>                    |   |                     |                 |
|       | <i>Sodrott légyen</i> , that he might     |   |                     |                 |
| Plur. | <i>Sodrottunk légyen</i>                  | } | , that we might     |                 |
|       | <i>Sodortunk légyen</i>                   |   |                     |                 |
|       | <i>Sodrottatok légyen</i>                 | } | , that you might    |                 |
|       | <i>Sodortatok légyen</i>                  |   |                     |                 |
|       | <i>Sodrottak légyen</i> , that they might |   |                     |                 |

*C o n d i t i o n a l.*

## Present.

- Sing. *Sodranék* and *Sodornék*, I should twist or spin  
*Sodranál* and *Sodornál*, thou wouldst twist  
*Sodrana* and *Sodorna*, he would twist
- Plur. *Sodranánk* and *Sodornánk*, we should twist;  
*Sodranátok* and *Sodornátok*, you would twist  
*Sodranúnak* and *Sodornúnak*, they would twist.

## Past Tense.

- Sing. *Sodrottam volna* } , I should have twisted  
*Sodortam volna* }

- Sodrottál volna* } , thou wouldst have twisted  
*Sodortál volna* }  
*Sodrott volna*, he would have twisted;  
 Plur. *Sodrottunk volna* } , we should have twisted  
*Sodortunk volna* }  
*Sodrottatok volna* } , you would have twisted  
*Sodortatok volna* }  
*Sodrottak volna*, they would have twisted.

*I m p e r a t i v e.*

- Sing. *Sodorj*, twist (thou)  
 Plur. *Sodorjatok*, twist (you).

*I n f i n i t i v e.*

*Sodorni*, to twist, to spin.

The Definite form, the Personal terminations of which see above, is liable to the same contractions as the Indefinite form given in this paradigm.

According to this Paradigm are formed: *Bujdokol*\*) , to wander about; *csatol*, to fasten with a buckle, metaphorically to enclose; *csépel*, to thrash; *ebédel*, to dine; *énekel*, to sing; *esdekel*, to implore; *gátol*, to hinder; *gyászol*, to mourn; *gyötör*, to plague; *hajol*, to stoop; *hegyez*, to point; *jegyez*, to mark; *koboz*, to confiscate; *kovácsol*, to forge; *nádol*, to steel, to harden (iron); *padol*, to cover with boards, to wainscot; *pecsétel*, to seal; *perel*, to plead (and to quarrel); *pótol*, to make

---

\*) The termination of the Infinitive „*ni*“ being a secondary form, is missed and the Verbs are given in their roots.

amends; *rabol*, to rob; *sajog*, to smart; *tanácsol*, to give advice, *tipor*, to tread; *tolmácsol*, to interpret; *tudakol*, to inquire; *ünnepel*, to celebrate; *vádol*, to accuse, to charge (with).

Obs. 1. *Bujdokol*, *esdekel*, *hajol*, are used as Mediums as well.

Obs. 2. Verbal roots with soft vowels receive the same vowels in their Personal terminations.

## b. Medium.

### *I n d i c a t i v e M o o d.*

#### Present Tense.

Sing. *Alszom*, I sleep and I am sleeping  
*Alszol*, thou sleepest etc.

*Alszik*, he sleeps;

Plur. *Alszunk*, we sleep

*Alszatok*, you sleep

*Alszanak* and *aluszna*, they sleep.

#### Imperfect.

Sing. *Aluvám* and *Alvám*, I slept

*Aluvál* and *Alvál*, thou sleptest

*Aluvék* and *Alvék*, he slept;

Plur. *Aluvánk* and *Alvánk*, we slept

*Aluvátok* and *Alvátok*, you slept

*Aluvának* and *Alvának*, they slept.

#### Perfect.

Sing. *Aludtam*, I have slept, I was sleeping, I did

*Aludtál*, thou hast slept, etc.

[sleep

*Aludt* and *Aludott*, he has slept;

Plur. *Aludtunk*, we have slept  
*Aludtatok*, you have slept  
*Aludtak* and *Aludtanak*, they have slept.

## Pluperfect

has the same Personal formations, with the addition of *vala* or *volt* to each Person.

## Compound Future.

Sing. *Aludni fogok*, I shall sleep  
*Aludni fogsz*, thou wilt sleep  
*Aludni fog*, he will sleep;

Plur. *Aludni fogunk*, we shall sleep  
*Aludni fogtok*, you will sleep  
*Aludni fognak*, they will sleep.

*S u b j u n c t i v e M o o d.*

## Present Tense.

Sing. *Aludjam*, that I may sleep and if I sleep  
*Aludjál*, that thou mayst sleep  
*Aludjék*, that he may sleep;

Plur. *Aludjunk*, that we may sleep  
*Aludjatok*, that you may sleep  
*Aludjanak*, that they may sleep.

## Past Tense.

*Aludtam legyen*, that I may have slept, etc.

*C o n d i t i o n a l.*

## Present Tense.

Sing. *Aludnám*\*), I should sleep  
*Aludnál*, thou wouldst sleep  
*Aludnék*, he would sleep;

---

\*) Commonly the forms of the Neuter *aludnék*, *aludnál*, *aludna* are used.

Plur. *Aludnánk*, we should sleep  
*Aludnátok*, you would sleep  
*Aludnának*, they would sleep.

Past Tense.

*Aludtam volna*, I would have slept, etc.

*I m p e r a t i v e.*

Sing. *Aludj*, sleep (thou);  
 Plur. *Aludjatok*, sleep (you).

*I n f i n i t i v e.*

*Aludni*, to sleep.

The Verb *Feküd*, to lie; and all those mentioned pag. 111 sub γ. have the same Conjugation.

The Verbal roots: *Alapod*, to be founded; *beteged*, to become ill; *csillapod*, to cease, to abate; *eléged*, to be satisfied; *feneked*, to grudge, to menace; *gazdagod*, to become rich; *gyanakod*, to suspect; *gyarapod*; to increase; *haragud*, to be angry; *hideged*, to become cold; *kövéred*, to fatten; *meleged*, to get warm; *növeked*, to increase, to grow larger; *öreged*, to grow old; *részeget*, to be intoxicated, to get drunk; *tanakod*, to consult; *teleped*, to settle in a place; *üleped*, to precipitate (in Chemistry), have both forms of Conjugation, the regular and the contracted; thus, *alapodom* and *alapszom*, *alapodik* and *alapszik*, etc.

Observ. The Verbal roots *bűnhőd*, to be punished; *dühöd*, to rage; *soványod*, to grow lean; change their characteristic „d“ without a contraction



of the root; thus, *bűnhöszöm*, not *bűnhszem*; *dűhöszik*, not *dűhszik*; *soványoszik*, not *soványszik*.

Obs. 2. Such Verbal roots as have not a *d* as their radical, are liable merely to contraction, not to the alteration of their radical consonant into *sz*, as: *haboz* to wave, to foam, *fuldokol* to be choking, form *habzom*, etc. and *fuldoklom* etc.

In regard to the other irregular Verbs the roots of which terminate with *n*, as *ven-ni*, *len-ni*, *hin-ni*, *vin-ni*, *in-ni*, *en-ni*, *men-ni*, the student is referred to „Compositions VII. Verbal roots in *n*“; only it may be added, that the Verbs *enni* and *inni* are used as Mediums, and have the Medial form.

The irregular Verbs the roots of which end with a vowel, as *jő*, *hi*, *lő*, *ri*, *szi*, *sző*, etc. have been mentioned as well in „Compositions VII. Verbal roots of *v*“, their characteristic being *v*.

### E. Objective Conjugation.

Before concluding the Section of Conjugation, the propriety of the Hungarian language of having a peculiar termination for the first Person of Transitive Verbs, when a Person is spoken to, must be mentioned. This form is always used when the active Verb governs the Objective Case of the Personal Pronoun of the second Person, this Objective Case being then expressed by an objective termination.

These objective Terminations are:

## Verbs with hard vowels | Verbs with soft vowels

*I n d i c a t i v e.*

Present	<i>lak</i>	<i>lek</i>
Perfect	<i>alak</i>	<i>elek.</i>

*S u b j u n c t i v e.*

Pres. and Perf.	<i>alak</i>	<i>elek.</i>
-----------------	-------------	--------------

*C o n d i t i o n a l.*

Present	<i>álak</i>	<i>élek</i>
Past	<i>alak</i>	<i>elek</i>

These Terminations are added to the Characteristic of the Verbs.

Obs: Such Tenses as have any auxiliary word to complete their form, retain the auxiliary in the Objective Conjugation as well.

***Paradigm.***

(Verbs with soft vowels receive the corresponding terminations.)

## 1. ACTIVE.

Ind. Pres. *Várlak*, I wait for thee, and I wait for ye.

Perf. *Vártalak*, I have waited for thee or ye.

Subj. Pres. *Várjalak*, that I may wait for thee or ye.

Perf. *Vártalak legyen*, that I might have waited for thee or ye.

Cond. Pres. *Várnálak*, I should wait for thee or ye.

Past. *Vártalak volna*, I should have waited for thee or ye.

## 2. FACTITIVE.

- Ind. Pres. *Vártatlak*, I leave thee or ye waiting;  
 Perf. *Vártattalak*, I have left thee or ye waiting;  
 Sub. Pres. *Vártassalak*, that I may let thee or ye wait;  
 Past. *Vártattalak legyen*, that I might have left thee or ye waiting.  
 Cond. Pres. *Vártatnálak*, I should leave thee or ye waiting;  
 Past. *Vártattalak volna*, I should have left thee or ye waiting.

## 3. POTENTIAL.

- Ind. Pres. *Várhatlak*, I may (or I am able to) wait for thee or ye;  
 Perf. *Várhattalak*, I might have waited or I was able to wait for thee or ye.  
 Subj. Pres. *Várhassalak*, that I may (may be able to) wait for thee or ye.  
 Past. *Várhattalak legyen*, I might have waited for thee or ye.  
 Cond. Pres. *Várhatnálak*, I should be able to wait for thee or ye.  
 Past. *Várhattalak volna*, I should have been able to wait for thee or ye.

## F. Participles.

There are two different kinds of Verbal forms generally mentioned as Participles of the Verb; their Terminations are:

for Verbs with hard vowels; for Verbs with soft vowels

Present	<i>ó</i>	<i>ő</i>
Imperfect	<i>va, ván</i>	<i>ve, vén</i>
Perfect	<i>t, ott</i>	<i>t, ett, ött*)</i>
Future	<i>andó</i>	<i>endő.</i>

In reality only the forms of *ván* and *va* are Participles, the former of which supplies the Present, the latter the Past, Participle of other European languages. The other forms are derivative forms used as Substantives and Adjectives, especially the form of *ó*, to which belongs the form of „*andó*,“ it being the Verbal Adjective of the Future radical *and*. Thus, *találó* means a finder, *váró* a waiting subject; so also is the form of *t, ott, t, ett, ött* used Adjectively. In order to avoid mistakes, these forms commonly called Participles, will be considered as Adjectives derived from Verbs (Adjectiva Verbalia).

The Participles, the Terminations of which are the same for all the Verbal roots, then are:

#### 1. OF REGULAR ROOTS.

##### *A c t i v e.*

<i>Találván</i> , finding;	<i>Törvén</i> , breaking;
<i>Találva</i> , found, having found.	<i>Törve</i> , broken, having broken.

---

\*) The third Person of the Perfect Tense of the Indicative Mood is the same as this Perfect Participle.

*P a s s i v e.*

*Találtatván*, being found; *Töretvén*, being broken;  
*Találtatva*, having been found. *Töretve*, having been broken.

*M e d i u m.*

*Csalódván*, deluding one's self;  
*Csalódva*, deluded.

*N e u t e r.*

*Élvén*, living;  
*Élve*, having lived, lived.

## 2. CONTRACTED ROOTS.

*A c t i v e.*

*Sodorván*, twisting, spinning;  
*Sodorva*, twisted, spun.

*M e d i u m.*

*Alván* and *Aluván*, sleeping;  
*Alva*, slept, having slept, (being asleep).

3. FUTURE ROOT (*and, end*).*A c t i v e.*

*Várandván*,  
*Várandva*.

*P a s s i v e*

*Váratandván*,  
*Váratandva*. —

**3. Derivation and Composition of new Verbs.**

The derivative Verbal roots mentioned above are such as may be formed from any Active, or Active, Passive, Medium and Neuter Verb, and are



expressed by a periphrastical Conjugation in other European languages; the Verbal roots to be considered in this Section are such as may be considered as Primitive roots in regard to those mentioned above, of which may be formed Factitive, Potential, Passive etc. radicals.

A concise and brief enumeration of Etymological forms strictly taken is subjoined.

New Verbs may be formed by means of Derivation and Composition.

#### A. Derivative Verbs.

Verbs are derived from Substantives, Adjectives, Adverbs, Prepositional terms (Postpositions) and other Verbs.

From Substantives (derivative and primitive ones) are derived Verbal roots

1) by means of the consonant *l*.

a) *l* added without any auxiliary vowel to such Substantives as terminate with a vowel, forming Active Verbs: *Kapa* the hoe, *kapál-ni* to dig; *mese* tale, *mesél-ni* to tell; *borona* the harrow, *boronál-ni* to harrow.

b) *l*, with the vowels *e*, *o*, *ö*, as often as the Substantive has a final consonant; *por* powder, *porol-ni* to powder; *per* process, law-suit, *perel-ni* (to make process) to quarrel, to carry on a law-suit; *terh* load, *terhel-ni* to burden, to load.

Obs. Some of these Verbs belong to the class of the *Mediums*, and are mostly Neuter in foreign

languages. *Sikam* (from *sík* plan), *sikamolík* contracted *sikamlík* (to) slide; *villám* lightning, *villámolík*, contracted *villámlík*, it lightens.

c) *l*, with the vowel *ú*, *ű*, forms Neuter Verbs: *terül-ni* to extend, from *tér* space; *lapúl-ni* to become flat, from *lap* plate; *alapúl-ni* to be founded, from *alap* foundation; *kerül-ni* to avoid (to go round), from *kör* circle.

## 2. By means of the consonant *g*.

a) *g*, preceded by the vowels *o*, *ö*, *e*, forms Intransitive Verbal roots: *csepeg-ni* to drip, from *csep* drop; *ragyog-ni* to be bright; *zajog-ni* to make a noise; *émelyeg-ni* to be loathsome, to disgust; *mosolyogni* to smile.

b) *g*, preceded by the syllable *in*, *on*, *en*, *ön*: *zajong-ni* to brawl, *kering-eni*, or *kereng-eni* to move in a circle; from *kör* circle, *zaj* noise.

3) By means of the consonants *szt*, with an auxiliary vowel, are formed Factitive Verbs from other Verbal roots and Substantives: *Epeszt-eni* to (make) gall, to make angry, from *epe* gall; *veszt-eni* to loose, from *vész* danger.

4) By means of the consonant *z*, with or without auxiliary vowels, according as the Substantives terminate with a vowel or a consonant, are formed Neuter Verbs. *Hangoz-ni* to sound, from *hang* sound; *okoz-ni* to cause, from *ok* cause; *felez-ni* to divide in two parts, from *fél* half; etc.

5) By means of additional syllables. Especially

- a) *ít*, forming Active Verbs. *Tanít-ani* to teach, from *tan* science; *terít-eni* to spread out, from *tér* space; *sípít-ani* to scream, from *síp* whistle, fife (organ-pipe); *lapít-ani* to make flat, from *lap* plate.
- b) *doz*, *dez*, forming Neuter and Medial Verbs. *Epedez-ni* to grieve, from *epe* gall; *sarjadosz-ni*, to spring off, from *sarj* sprout; *fiadosz-ni*, contracted *fiadzani*, to bring forth young (said of animals).

Obs. If the Verb be a Medium, the last Syllable is generally contracted when the Personal terminations of the Conjugation are added; thus, *sarjadz-om*, *sarjadz-ol*, *sarjadz-ik*, instead of *sarjadosz-om*, etc.

- c) *haszt*, *heszt*, forming Active Verbs of a diminutive meaning: *porhaszt-ani* to moulder (the ground), to break into minute parts.
- d) *kod*, *ked*, forming Mediums from Substantives, expressing any occupation, if the Substantives end with *os*; as, *asztaloskod-ni* to do a carpenter's work, *asztalos* carpenter.
- e) *lél*, *lal*, *lál*, forming Neuter Verbs; the syllables *el*, *ol*, form Actives of the same Substantive. *Szám-lál-ni* to count, from *szám* number, (*számol-ni* to reckon); *kémlel-ni* to spy, from *kém* the spy, *cséplel-ni* to thrash, from *csép* flail.
- f) *tal*, *tel* form Active Verbs. *Vigasztal-ni* to console, from *vigasz* comfort, consolation.

6. Derivative Substantives of *ász* are also used as Verbal roots. *Halász-ni* to fish, *vadász-ni* to hunt, etc., from *halász* fisher, *vadász* huntsman.

From Adjectives are derived Active, Neuter, and Medial Verbs.

1. Active Verbs of a frequentative meaning are formed: by the syllables *gat*, *get*: as, *édesget-ni* to sweeten; by *ít*: *világosít-ni* to make light, *kékít-eni* to make blue, *zöldít-eni* to make green; by the syllable *tal*, *tel*: *magasztal-ni* to extol, from *magas* high, *híresztel-ni* to announce, to make known, from *híres* renowned, known.

2. Neuter Verbs: by means of the syllables *úl*, *ül*, *ad*, *od*; as, *nagyobbúl-ni* to grow larger, *derül-ni* to clear up, *józanúl-ni* to become sober; *kékül-ni* to grow blue, *zöldül-ni* to grow green; *higgad-ni* to become liquid, from *híg* liquid; *vigad-ni* to be merry, from *víg* merry.

3. Medial Verbs: by the syllables *od*, *ed*, *öd*; as, *nagyobbod-ni* to become larger, *vénhed-ni* to grow old, *soványod-ni* to fall away, from *sovány* meagre, *világosod-ni* to become light; — *kod*, *ked*; as, *okoskod-ni* to argue, from *okos* prudent; *fösvényked-ni* to covet, from *fösvény* avaricious.

The impersonals *zöldellik* it is greenish, *kékellik* it is blueish, *fehértlik* it is whitish, etc. are derivative diminutive Verbs. —

From Adverbs are derived:

1. Active and Neuter Verbs, by the syllables *ít*, *get*, *el*, and the consonant *z*, preceded by an auxiliary

vowel. *Közelít-ni* to bring near; *rögtönöz-ni* to extemporize; *felebbez-ni* to appeal; *felel-ni*, to answer; from *közel* near, *rögtön* suddenly, *felebb* higher up, *fel* up, on.

2. Medial Verbs, by means of the syllables *ked*, *kod*: *hirtelen* suddenly, hastily, *hirtelenked-ni* to overhurry, *esztelen* unreasonable, *esztelenked-ni* to commit follies, etc.

From Prepositions are formed Active Verbs; as, *túlzit-ani* and *túloz-ni* to exaggerate, *mellékel-ni* to enclose, *mellőz-ni* to avoid, *aláz-ni* to humble, to lower; from *túl* beyond, *mellé* beside, next, *alá* under.

From other Verbs are derived Active, Neuter, Frequentative, Medial Verbs, etc. The most frequently occurring syllables of Derivation are the following: *ad*, *al*, *an*, *am*, *amod*, *amol* contracted *aml*, *amosz* contracted *amsz*, *aszt*, *at*; as: *fogad-ni* to receive, *gyulad-ni* to inflame, *fuval-ni* to blow, *fogan-ni* to become pregnant, *mozsan-ni* to stir, *fogam-ni* to become pregnant, *futamol-ni* to take to flight, *iramol-ni* to run, *folyamod-ni* to petition, *futamod-ni* to fly, *fogamsz-ani* to become pregnant, *fogyaszt-ani* to lessen, *szalaszt-ani* to rout, *forgat-ni* to turn, *dongat-ni* to beat, etc.; from their respective roots *fog*, *gyúl*, *fű*, *moz*, *fut*, *ir*, *foly*, *fogy*, *szalad* (*szal* and *száll*), *forog* contracted *forg*, *dong*.

Verbs with the derivative syllables *am*, *amod*, *aml*, *amsz*, are Mediums.



*bol, ből*; as, *zörömböl-ni* to make a rattling noise, *dörömböl-ni* to make a thunder-like noise; from *zören-ni* to rattle, *dören-ni* to thunder.

*csál, csél, csol*; as, *faragcsál-ni* to cut figures, *roncsol-ni* to spoil; from *farag, ront*.

*dal, degél, del, des, dez; dogál, dos, doz, dögél, dököl, dűl, dúl*; as, *vagdal-ni* to cut in pieces, *verdegél-ni* to beat a little repeatedly, *tördel-ni* to break in small pieces, *csipdes-ni* to pinch repeatedly, *irdogál-ni* to write frequently, *mardos-ni* to bite, *kapdos-ni* to snatch, *üldögél-ni* to sit down repeatedly, *ödlököl-ni* to slaughter, *fordúl-ni* to turn about (Neuter); from their respective roots *vág, ver, tör, csíp, ír, mar, kap, ül, öl, for*.

*egét, emed, em, et*; as, *vereget-ni* to beat frequently, *vetemed-ni* to think of, to give one's self to, *kerenget-ni* and *keringet-ni* to give a circular motion; from *ver, vet, kereng*.

*gúl, gél*: *hajgál-ni* to throw, *rongál-ni* to destroy, *dorgál-ni* to censure; *keresgél-ni* to look for (steadily).

*int*: *verint-eni* to touch, *csavarint-ani* to turn round once; from *ver, csavar*.

*Ked, kod* give Medial Verbs: *emelked-ni* to rise, *elmélked-ni* to muse, to meditate, *álmélkod-ni* to be astonished; from *emel, elmél, álmél*.

*lat, let*; as, *oszlát-ni* to disperse, *foszlát-ni* to undo, to pick (draw out the threads of silk or woollen stuff).

*ódoz*, *ődöz* contracted *ódz*, *ődz*, *oz*, *ez*, form Medial Verbs: *Lopódz-ani* to steal (as, to steal away), *kérődz-eni* to ruminate, *fáradoz-ni* to take pains. *szt*, *sztel*; in these syllables of Derivation the primitive dental *d* is changed into *sz*; by means of them Active Verbs are derived from Neuter ones. *Repeszt-eni* to split, *engesztel-ni* to expiate, from *reped*, *enged*.

### B. Compound Verbs.

In the Hungarian language Compound Verbs are formed, by Adverbs, Prepositions (Postpositions) and Prepositional affixes, a few Substantives and Verbal particles, prefixed to Verbs.

1. Adverbs relative to direction (where from and where to) and place form compound Active, Neuter and Medial Verbs, according to with what Verbal root they combine. For instance: *ki* out, *kimen-ni* to go out, *kiver-ni* to expel, *kizár-ni* to exclude, *kingyilatkoz-ni* to declare; *fel* up, upwards, *felkel-ni* to get up, *felül-ni* to sit up, *fel-fuval-kod-ni* to be haughty; *le* down, *leten-ni* to put down, *leül-ni* to sit down; *hátra* behind, backwards, *hátramarad-ni* to remain, *hátrahagy-ni* to leave behind.

2. Prepositions may be compounded with Verbs, like Adverbs; *alá* under, *alúl* from under, underneath: *alúlír-ni* to sign, *aláír-ni* to sign, *alávet-ni* to subjugate; *ellen* against (contra, re), *ellenáll-ani*

and *ellentáll-ani* to resist, *ellenmond-ani* to contradict; *által*, contracted *át* through, across, over (trans), *általlát-ni*, contracted *átlát-ni*, to see through, to penetrate.

3. Prepositional affixes are not used in their primitive form, but with the Possessive affixes of the third Person Singular, as, *belé*, *hozzá*, *rá* instead of *reá*: as, *belévág-ni* to hew in, metaphorically to interrupt a speaker, *hozzájárul-ni* to accede, *rááll-ani* to consent.

4. Substantives. It is against the genius of the Hungarian language to form new Verbs by means of Composition of Verbs with Substantives, the language being so rich in syllables of derivation. The only more frequently occurring Verb of that kind is *hátírni* to indorse, in other instances the Periphrastical expression is preferable.

5. Verbal Particles. These are only used in composition with Verbs. Such are *el* and *meg*; *el* means away, — *meg* has no proper meaning in English, although it often may be translated by off; it is used when the speaker wishes to express an action really finished or to be finished. *Ir-ni* to write, *megírni* (to make it written) to achieve writing; *fül-ni* to choke; *megfül-ui* to become choked; *ven-ni* to take, *elven-ni* to take away, *megven-ni* to buy. *Meg* often gives the Verb a metaphorical meaning: *vet-ni* to throw, *elvet-ni* to throw away, *megvet-ni* to despise. — The Present Tense of Verbs compounded with *meg* often expresses the Future of the

simple Verb. *Élek* I live, *megélek* I shall live, I shall get my living.

Compound Verbs retain the same forms of conjugation, as the simple ones.

## II. Nominal Forms.

Substantives and words used instead of Substantives.

The forms under which the Substantive appears in the Hungarian language, are quite different from those of other European languages.

There is no distinction of Gender nor any Declension as we find in other European languages.

Before the different forms of the Substantives are detailed, that part of speech which the Hungarian Academy, in its „System of the Hungarian language,“ ingeniously styled the Prenoun, and which commonly is called the Article, may be mentioned.

It is indeed somewhat different from the article of other European languages, for it is used neither to distinguish the Gender, as in German and French, nor for the sake of determining nearer the Substantive, yet it is an indispensable precursor of the Substantive: this Prenoun is *az*, it remains invariable, and is incombable with any affixes of the Substantive. The Euphonistical and Orthographical remark only may be noted, that, instead of *az*, *a'* is used as often as the Substantive begins with

a consonant; thus, we say: *az anya* the mother, *az olló* the scissors, *a' ház* the house, *a' szoba* the room, etc.

### 1. Characteristic of the Objective Case.

The Characteristic of the Objective Case, both for the Singular and Plural, is *t*, which is always added by means of a vowel when the concurrence of consonants would harden the pronunciation.

Euphony and the alteration of the primitive roots of Substantives have produced some Irregularities. In order to facilitate the learning of such deviations from the general rule: „the vowels, by means of which affixes are joined to the roots, must correspond with those of the root, hard or soft ones“, leading rules are given in the following Subdivisions.

#### A. The root of the Substantives remains unchanged.

a) The characteristic *t* is added without any vowel:

1) To all Substantives that have a final vowel: *az Erdő* the wood, *az erdőt* the wood; *a' róza* the rose, *a' rozsát*\*); *a' kefe* the brush, *a' kefét*; *az olló* the scissors, *az ollót*; *az áru* wares, *az árut*.

2. To Substantives with a final *j*, *l*, if they are not monosyllables, *ny*, *r* and *s*, the dissyllables of a final *sz*, *z*, and the monosyllables of *r*. *A' zörej* the noise, *zörejt*; *az asztal* the table, *az*

---

\*) On prolongation of *a*, see Intro. § 4.



*asztalt*; *a' leány* the girl, *leányt*; *a' buzogány* a club, for fighting, *a' buzogányt*; *a' kár* the damage, *a' kárt*; *a' hús* the meat, *a' húst*; *az asztalos* the joiner, *az asztalost*; *a' szakasz* the section, *a' szakaszt*; *a' vadász* the huntsman, *a' vadászt*; *a' kalauz* the guide, *a' kalauzt*.

To this rule belong the Substantives: *kín* pain, *kínt*; *sír* grave, *sírt*; *zsír* fat, *zsírt*.

Excepted from this rule are the monosyllables with a final *s*, if preceded by a short vowel, and the Adjectives of *os*, *vár* the castle, and those that shorten the last syllable (see below); all of them have *at* instead of a simple *t*; as, *vas* iron, *vasat*; *az okos* the prudent (man), *az akosat*; *a' madár* the bird, *a' madarat*; *a' kút* the well, *kutat*; *a' bogár* the insect, *bogarat*, etc.

## b) *t* is preceded by a vowel.

### 1. By *a* (for hard words).

In monosyllabical Substantives with a long or short *a*, such as do not belong to the preceding rules. *A' vás* the skeleton, *vásat*; *a' száj* the mouth, *szájat*; *vaj* butter, *vaját*.

In monosyllabical Substantives that have *i* in their root, except those mentioned in Introduction, § 5. Such are *díj* the salary, *dijat*; *híd* the bridge, *hidat*; *in* the muscle, *inat*; *a' szíj* the strap, *szíjat*; and the Adjectives *lég* fluid, *higat*; *víg* merry, *vigat*, when used by themselves or as Substantives.

In the Comparative and Superlative degrees of Adjectives, when they are used without a Substantive, or when they follow their Substantive: *gazdagabb* richer, *gazdagabbat* a richer one; *jobb* better, *jobbat* a better one; *a' legjobbat* the best one; etc.

When the Substantive is used with the Possessive affixes ending with a Consonant: as, *asztalomat* my table.

## 2. By *o* (for hard words).

In all Substantives that are not comprehended under the preceding rules. *A' fulánk* the sting, *fulánkot*; *a' parancs* the commandment, *parancsot*; *a' kaland* the adventure, *kalandot*; and in the Substantives *csík* the stripe; *ír* butter-milk.

## 3. By *e* (for soft words).

In all Substantives the roots of which have *i*, *e* or *é*, for their radical vowels. *Réteg* stratum, *réteget*; *a' vitézség* the bravery, the valour, *vitéséget*; *a' veriték* the sweat, *veritéket*.

In all those that shorten the primitively long vowel of their last syllable. *A' szekér* the coach, *a' szekeret*; *a' gyökér*, the root, *a' gyökeret*, etc.

In monosyllables with a final *l* or with another final consonant preceded by *l* or *r*. *A' fül* the ear, *fület*; *a' föld* the earth, *földet*; *a' völgy* the valley, *völgyet*.

## 4. By *ö* (for soft words).

In Substantives having for their vowels *ö*, *ő*, *ü* or *ű*, and not belonging to the preceding rules. *Az*

*ezüst* the silver, *ezüstöt*; *füst* the smoke, *füstöt*; *köd* the fog, *ködöt*; *az elnök* the president, *elnököt*; etc.

- B. The root of the Substantive changes when the *t* of the objective case is added.

Alterations in the form of the Nominative are produced by a Contraction of the last syllable, by changing the root of the Substantive into a different one from that used as the Nominative.

#### a) Contraction.

The Contraction may be effected

1) By abbreviating the long vowel of the last syllable. Such abbreviations take place in the following Substantives and words used as Substantives: *agár*, grey-hound, *bogár* insect, *cserép* shard, earthen ware, *dél* noon, *dér* frost, *derék* the trunk, (as Adjective, excellent and brave), *ég* the sky, *egér* mouse, *egyéb* other, *elég* (used as a Substantive) enough, *ér* the vein, *ész* reason, *fazék* pot, *fedél* cover, *fél* half, *fenék* bottom, *fonál* file, thread, *fövény* sand, *fűz* willow, *geréb* rail, obstacle, *gunár* gander, *gyökér* root, *hét* the week, *hév* heat, *jég* ice, *kanál* and *kalán* spoon, *kenyér* bread, *kerék* wheel, *kevés* little, *kéz* hand, *kosár* basket, *kötél* rope, *közép* the middle, *kút* the well, *légy* the fly, *lév* the juice, *levél* a letter, *lúd* goose, *madár* the bird, *mész* lime, *mocsár* morass, marsh, *nyár* summer, *nehéz* heavy, *négy* four, *név* the name, *pohár* the glass, cup, *rész* copper, *rúd* a pole, *sár* mud, *sudár* summit,

top of trees, *sugár* the ray, *szamár* the ass, *szél* the wind, *szekér* the coach, car, *szén* coal, *tehén* cow, *tél* winter, *tenyér* and *terény* the palm (of the hand), *tíz* ten, *tűz* fire, *úr* Mister, a gentleman, *út* the way, *veréb* a sparrow, *víz* the water. Objective Case: *Agarat*, *bogarat*, *cserepet*, etc.

2) By neglecting the short vowel of the last syllable.

In Substantives, or words used as Substantives, ending with the syllable *alom* or *elem*, as: *fájdalom* pain, *fejedelem* duke, *álmom* the sleep; having: *fájdalmat*, *fejedelmet*, *álmat*.

Except *elem* the element, which forms *elemet*. As often as the Consonants *l*, *ly*, *r* meet with the consonant *m* in the last syllable. *Selyem* silk, *ólmom* lead, *köröm* finger-nail and the claws, — *selymet*, *ólmot*, *körmöt*.

Except *öröm* the joy; Objective Case *örömet*. When *l*, *ly*, *r* combine with *k* to form the final syllable. *Árok* the ditch, the trench, *ökör* the ox, *gyílok* the stabber, *akol* the sheep-cot, having *árkot*, *ökröt*, etc..

Except *alak* the shape, *gyerek* the child, *kerek* the wheel, *örök* eternal.

When the final *g* in its syllable is preceded by *l*, *ly*, *r*. *Dolog* the thing, the work, *kéreg* the bark, the crust; — *dolgot*, *kérget*. —

Except *balog* left-handed, *bélyeg* a stamp, *gombolyag* a clew (of thread), ball, *gyalog* on foot, *görög* Greek, *hályog* cataract, *hólyag* bladder, *meleg*

warm, *öreg* old, *tályog* an ulcer, *vályog* an unburnt brick, *zálog* the pawn, the forfeit.

When the final consonant *k* is preceded by *t*, *ty*, *sz*, <sup>+cs</sup>*c*z in the last syllable. *Átok* the imprecation, *vétek* the sin, *trücsök* the cricket (an insect); Obj. Case *átkot*, *vétket*, *trücsköt*.

When the consonant *b* or *p* forms the last syllable with a final *l*, *ly*, or *r*. *Köböl* a coop, in Hungary a measure for corn, containing 4 bushels, *öböl* the bay, the sine in Trigonometry, *cseber* a large tub, *csupor* a small pot.

In the following words: *bátor* bold, *bodor* frill, *fészek* the nest, *fodor* the curl, frill, *gödör* the pit, *gyomor* the stomach, *haszon* the profit, *irem* moisture, *írom* the couch, *kapocs* the iron-cramp, hook, *koboz* lyre, *lator* the highway-man, *majom* the ape, *meder* the bed of the river, *szatyor* market-basket, *szeder* the bramble, blackberry, *tegez* the quiver, *torony* the tower, steeple, *űszök* the fire-brand, *vászon* linen, *veder* the pail.

The following words form the Objective case promiscuously, contracted and regularly: *Ajak* the lips, *ászok* the pole, *kazal* the stock, rick of hay, and a shock of corn, *ezer* thousand, *fátyol* gauze, a veil, *sátor* the tent, *vékony* thin.

#### b. Transformation of the root.

There are a few Substantives which, when used in the Objective case, have a different root



from what they have when used in the Nominative case. Such are:

1) The monosyllables of a long *é, ó, ő* and *ű*.

The following are the different roots of the Nominative and Objective case.

Nominative Case.      Root of the Objective case.

<i>Fő</i> the head	<i>Fej</i>
<i>Fű</i> the grass	<i>Fűv</i>
<i>Hó</i> the snow	<i>Hav</i>
<i>Kő</i> the stone	<i>Köv</i>
<i>Ló</i> the horse	<i>Lov</i>
<i>Lé</i> the soup and the juice	<i>Lev</i>
<i>Mű</i> the work, composition, performance	<i>Műv</i>
<i>Nő</i> the wife	<i>Nej</i>
<i>Nyű</i> the maggot	<i>Nyűv</i>
<i>Só</i> the salt	<i>Sav</i>
<i>Szó</i> the word	<i>Szav</i>
<i>Tó</i> the lake	<i>Tav</i>
<i>Tő</i> the trunk	<i>Töv</i>
<i>Vő</i> the son-in-law	<i>Vej,</i>

Observ. 1. The words *nő* woman, *só* common salt, *tő* needle, are used regularly; *szó* may be used regularly in the Objective case of the Singular Number.

Observ. 2. To hard words the *t* is added with the vowel *a*, to soft words with the vowel *e*.

2) Dissyllables with a final *u, ú* or *ű* are liable to abbreviation, their final *ú* and *ű* being neglect-

ed when the *t* of the Objective case is added, which therefore is preceded by the vowel *a*.

These are:

Nominative	Root of the Objective Case.
<i>Borjú</i> the calf	<i>Borj</i>
<i>Daru</i> the crane	<i>Darv</i>
<i>Enyű</i> the glue	<i>Enyv</i>
<i>Faggyú</i> tallow	<i>Faggy</i>
<i>Falu</i> the village	<i>Falv</i>
<i>Fattyú</i> the bastard	<i>Fatty</i>
<i>Fenyű</i> the pine (tree)	<i>Fenyv</i>
<i>Fiú</i> the son	<i>Fi</i>
<i>Gyapjú</i> the fleece, the wool	<i>Gyapj</i>
<i>Hamu</i> ashes	<i>Hamv</i>
<i>Hosszú</i> long	<i>Hossz</i>
<i>Ifjú</i> the youth	<i>Ifj</i>
<i>Könnyű</i> easy	<i>Könny</i>
<i>Sarjú</i> aftermath, young grass	<i>Sarj</i>
<i>Varjú</i> the crow	<i>Varj</i>

Obs. 1. *Borjú*, *daru*, *falv*, *faggyú*, *fenyű* *hamu*, *sarjú*, *varjú* are also used regularly, but it is a transgression against the precepts of purity of the language.

Observ. 2. *Fiú*, the boy, has regular forms, *fiút*, *fiúk*.

3) The following Substantives: *terh* the load, burden, *pelyk* the down, *kelyh* the calice, *vemh* the foal (young horse) are obsolete as Nominatives, but are used as roots for all Grammatical

forms. In the Nominative Case *teher*, *pehely*, *kehely*, *vehem* are used for the sake of Euphony.

*Lélek* the soul, is contracted into *lelket*; *mag* the seed, forms *magot* and *magvat*.

The formation of the Objective Case being the foundation of all the following Etymological formations, it was necessary to dwell on this subject a little longer, in order to exhaust it, and to prepare the way for the subsequent forms under which Substantives make their appearance in the Hungarian language. All other Affixes that may be joined to Substantives retain the same Radical which has been used for the Objective case; the student being acquainted with the different forms of the Objective case, it needs of only the knowledge of the different affixes that can be added to Substantives, to enable the student to give all the different Etymological forms.

#### **4. The charakteristik of the Plural.**

The word plural means the comprehension of many Objects of the same sort in one term.

Some of the Substantives represent in their Nominative case such a plurality; and are therefore called Collective Substantives; collective Substantives do not assume the external character of the Plural. When Collective Substantives are used as a generic expression of many Objects taken collectively, they can have no Plural,

for, as they really do not represent many single species, their plural must be defective.

In the Hungarian language all Collective Substantives must be considered as generic representations, that is to say, they express the kind of objects to which they have reference; and therefore the Collective Nouns of the Hungarian language admit no form of Plurality. Such Nouns are the names of all kinds of fruit, as: *alma* apple and apples, *körtve* pear and pears; the names of all sorts of corn, *búza* wheat, *borsó* peas and a pea, *paszuly* beans and a bean; the names of vegetables, as: *répa* turnips and a turnip; Nouns when used as indicating the whole kind, not collecting any objects individually, as: *fa* meaning wood, not *fa* the tree, *pénz* money, not *pénz* the coin; or in the expressions: *halat fogtunk* we have caught fishes, etc.; Nouns used in English with the partitive „some“ as: some bread *kenyér*, some wine *bor*, etc.

All other Nouns are comprehended under the Section of Distributive Nouns, and have a different form when they represent Plurality.

The form of the Plural, in the Hungarian language, is expressed by an additional *k*. Euphony and an easy articulation require that this *k* be preceded by a vowel, in regard to which the vowels used for the Objective case of the Singular Number are to be used with the Plural *k* as well.

Thus, in order to form the Plural, we have merely to exchange *t* with *k*, the former expressing the Objective of the Singular, the latter the Nominative of the Plural. *A' rózsá* the rose, Object. case *a' rózsát* the rose, Nom. Plur. *a' rózsák* the roses; *fal* the wall, Obj. Sing. *falat* the wall, Nom. Plur. *falak* the walls, etc.

Substantives with a final *l*, *ny*, *r*, *s*, *sz*, *z*, which have no vowel before the *t*, have *o* before the Plural *k* when their radical vowels are hard ones, and *e* when their radical vowels are soft ones. *Asztal*, *asztalt*, Plur. Nom. *asztalok*; *kín*, *kínt*, Nom. Plur. *kínok*; *kés* the knife, *kést*, *kések*, etc.

The Objective Case of the Plural Number has the same characteristic as the Singular, viz, *t*, which is added to the Plural form, with the vowel *a* for hard words and with the vowel *e* for soft words. *Asztalok*, Objective Plural *asztalokat*; *kések*, *késeket*; *Törökök* the Turks, *törököket*, etc.

### 3. Possessive Affixes.

A. Possessors are represented by the Personal Pronouns.

Whilst other European languages have Pronominal Adjectives, to indicate the possession of objects and to distinguish the persons possessing, the Hungarian language, according to Eastern custom, has certain Characteristics, which, added



to Substantives representing the Objects possessed, will express the different Personal relations of the possessors themselves.

These characteristics are called the Possessive Affixes, and they are derived from the Personal Pronouns *én, te, ő, mind, ti, ők*. They are the following.

1. Object possessed is but one.

The Possessor is one,

1st Person	— <i>m</i>	my;
2d	„ — <i>d</i>	thy;
3d	„ -- <i>ja</i> ; for soft words	— <i>je, his, her, its.</i>

The Possessors are more than one,

For hard words:

For soft words:

1st Pers.	— <i>nk</i> , our;	— <i>nk</i> , our;
2d	„ — <i>tok</i> , your;	— <i>tek, tök</i> , your;
3d	„ — <i>jok</i> , their;	— <i>jök</i> , their.

The Possessive Affixes, all of them having an initial consonant, are added by means of a vowel, in regard to which I refer to the rules given for the Characteristic of the Plural; for the same form of the Substantive and the same vowel that precede the *k*, precede these affixes as well; but the affixes of the third person and that of the first in the Plural have some exceptions. The latter assume the vowel *u* for hard and *ü* for soft words, when the Substantive terminates with a consonant; thus, instead of *ké-*

*senk* our knife, there is *késünk* our knife. The consonant *j* easily combines with other consonants; therefore, the affixes of the third Person are added without any auxiliary vowel.

This *j* is missed entirely;

- a) when the Substantive is contracted and when it changes the root of its Nominative according to the rules given for the objective case;
- b) when the Substantive has a final *b, g, h, p, v*;
- c) when it terminates with the syllables *ság, ség, ok, ek, ök, ök, ék, et*.

In all the preceding cases only the vowel *a* or *e*, and *ok* or *ök*, are added to the root of the Plural of the Substantive.

From these general rules deviate:

a) Dissyllabical Substantives with a final *ő*, changing this vowel into *e* before the Affixes *je* and *jök*. *Erdő* the wood, *erdeje* his wood; *szőlője* his vineyard, etc.

b) The Substantives: *anya* mother, *anya* father, *bátya* brother (elder brother), *nénje* elder sister, lose their final vowel before the Affix of the third Person Singular and Plural; thus, *anyja* his mother, *anyjok* their mother, etc. *Húga* the younger sister, *öcse* the younger brother, remain unchanged in the third Pers. Sing., and have *öcsök*, *húgok* in the third Pers. Plur.

c) The following Substantives: *ajtó* the door,

*disznó* the swine, *biró* the judge, and *sas* the eagle, form *ajtaja* his (her and its) door, *ajtajok* their door; *diszna*; *birája* and *birájok*; *sassa* and *sassok*. *Száj* the mouth, forms: *szám* my mouth, *szád* thy mouth, *szája* his mouth, *szánk* our mouth, *szátok* your mouth, *szájok* their mouth.

Obs. The termination of the third person Plural *jok* and *jök* is now and then changed into *juk* and *jük*, especially when the Nominative Plural and the third Person with the Plural possessive affixes would be alike; thus, instead of *tükrök*, there is *tükrük* their mirror.

2. The Objects possessed are more than one.

The plurality of Objects possessed is expressed by the vowel *i*; the affixes have in that case the following form:

One possessor:		Two or ore possessors:	
1. Person	— <i>im</i> , my;	1. Pers.	— <i>ink</i> , our;
2. „	— <i>id</i> , thy;	2. „	— <i>itok</i> , <i>itek</i> , your;
3. „	— <i>i</i> , his,	3. „	— <i>ik</i> , their.
	hers, its;		

These affixes are used indiscriminately for soft and hard words, and were formerly added to the Radical of the Substantives without any auxiliary vowel; at present they are only used after a final vowel, and the third Person Sing. of *a*, *e* is considered as the Radical for these Plural Affixes when Substantives terminate in a con-

sonant. *Barát* the friend, *barátja* his friend, *barátjaim* my friends. —

Substantives which form the third Person Singular irregularly preserve such irregularities in the addition of the Plural affixes. Especially:

a) The Dissyllabical Substantives of *ő* change that into *e* before the Plural Affixes, as *mező* the field, *mezeim* my fields.

b) *Ajtó*, *biró* form *ajtaim* my doors, *biráim* my judges, etc.

In compound Substantives of the form: *hazafi* patriot, countryman, *atyafi* relative, *név-nap* name-day, the first part of the compound word is used with the Possessive affixes, like a simple Substantive, and the second part with the affix of the third Person Singular. *Atyám-fia* my relative, *atyám-fiai* my relatives; *hazám-fiai* my countrymen; *nevem-napja* my name-day.

#### B) Possessors are expressed by a Substantive.

When the Possessor is represented by any Substantive whatever, this is used in the Possessive Case, which in most of the European languages is a peculiar form of Declension.

The Hungarian language has, again, different affixes to express this Possessive Case. There is to be distinguished the use of the possessive case independently from the Substantive indicating the

object or objects possessed, from the possessive case constructed with this Substantive.

As often as the Possessive Case is used by itself, the Substantive receives the affix *é*. The Plural of this affix is *—éi*, formed according to the principle of the Possessive Affixes. — *A' szomszéd* the neighbour, *a' szomszédé* the neighbour's, *a' szomszédéi* the neighbour's; *a' szomszédoké* the neighbours'.

When the Possessive Case is constructed with another Substantive, the Prepositional Affix — *nak* is used: In that case the Hungarian language has a propriety of construction, which see below, under „Syntax — Constructions with Prepositional Affixes.“ —

All these different Forms of Possessive expressions are to be considered as new roots of the Substantive, to which may be added the characteristic of the Objective Case and the Prepositional Affixes (*ba* in, *ból* out, *nak* to, etc.). For instance *könyv* book, *könyvem-et* my book, *könyveim-et* my books, *könyvé-t* that of the book, *könyvéit* those of the book, *könyvemben* in my book, etc.



#### 4. Paradigm of the different forms of a Substantive.

A) Regular forms. — The root of the Substantive remains unchanged.

Words with hard vowels. Words with soft vowels.

##### 1.

Sing. Nom.

*Az óra* the watch      *A' kefe* the brush

Object. Case.

*Az órát* the watch;      *A' kefét* the brush;

Plur. Nom.

*Az órák* the watches      *A' kefék* the brushes

Object. Case.

*Az órákat* the watches;      *A' keféket* the brushes.

Poss. Affixes Sing.

*Az órá'm* my watch      *A' kefé'm* my brush

*Az órá'd* thy watch      *A' kefé'd* thy brush

*Az órá'ja* his (her, its) watch;      *A' kefé'je* his (her, its) brush;

*Az órá'nk* our watch      *A' kefé'nk* our brush

*Az órá'tok* your watch      *A' kefé'tek* your brush

*Az órá'jok* their watch.      *A' kefé'jök* their brush

Objects possessed are several.

*Az órá'im* my watches      *A' kefé'im* my brushes

*Az órá'id* thy watches      *A' kefé'id* thy brushes

*Az órá'í* his (her, its) watches;      *A' kefé'í* his (her, its) brushes;

*Az órá'ink* our watches      *A' kefé'ink* our brushes

*Az órá'ítok* your watches      *A' kefé'ítek* your brushes

*Az órá'ik* their watches.      *A' kefé'ik* their brushes.

Poss. Case Sing.

<i>Az óráé</i> that of the watch	<i>A' keféé</i> that of the brush
<i>Az óráéi</i> those of the watch;	<i>A' kefééi</i> those of the brush;
<i>Az óráké</i> that of the watches	<i>A' keféké</i> that of the brushes
<i>Az órákéi</i> those of the watches.	<i>A' kefékéi</i> those of the brushes.

2.

Sing. Nom.

<i>A' láb</i> the foot	<i>A' könyv</i> the book
------------------------	--------------------------

Object. Case.

<i>A' lábat</i> the foot;	<i>A' könyvet</i> the book;
---------------------------	-----------------------------

Plur. Nom.

<i>A' lábak</i> the feet	<i>A' könyvek</i> the books
<i>A' lábakat</i> the feet.	<i>A' könyveket</i> the books.

Poss. Affixes Sing.

<i>A' lábam</i> my foot	<i>A' könyvem</i> my book
<i>A' lábad</i> thy foot	<i>A' könyved</i> thy book
<i>A' lába</i> his (her, its) foot;	<i>A' könyve</i> his (her, its) book;

<i>A' lábunk</i> our foot	<i>A' könyvünk</i> our book
<i>A' lábatok</i> your foot	<i>A' könyvetek</i> your book
<i>A' lábuk</i> their foot.	<i>A' könyvök</i> their book.

Objects possessed are several.

<i>A' lábaim</i> my feet	<i>A' könyveim</i> my books
<i>A' lábaid</i> thy feet	<i>A' könyveid</i> thy books
<i>A' lábai</i> his (her, its) feet;	<i>A' könyvei</i> his (her, its) books;

<i>A' lábaink</i> our feet	<i>A' könyveink</i> our books
<i>A' lábaitok</i> your feet	<i>A' könyveitek</i> your books
<i>A' lábaik</i> their feet.	<i>A' könyveik</i> their books

Poss. Case Sing.

<i>A' lábé</i> that of the foot	<i>A' könyvé</i> that of the book
<i>A' lábéi</i> those of the	<i>A' könyvéi</i> those of the
foot;	book;

Plur.

<i>A' lábaké</i> that of the feet	<i>A' könyveké</i> that of the books
<i>A' lábakéi</i> those of the feet.	<i>A' könyvekéi</i> those of the books.

B) Irregular forms. -- The root of the Substantive is altered.

1.

Sing. Nom.

*A' madár* the bird      *A' kéz* the hand

Obj. Case.

*A' madarat* the bird;    *A' kezet* the hand;

Plur. Nom.

*A' madarak* the birds    *A' kezek* the hands

Obj.	Case.
1.	1.
2.	2.
3.	3.
4.	4.
5.	5.
6.	6.
7.	7.
8.	8.
9.	9.
10.	10.
11.	11.
12.	12.
13.	13.
14.	14.
15.	15.
16.	16.
17.	17.
18.	18.
19.	19.
20.	20.
21.	21.
22.	22.
23.	23.
24.	24.
25.	25.
26.	26.
27.	27.
28.	28.
29.	29.
30.	30.
31.	31.
32.	32.
33.	33.
34.	34.
35.	35.
36.	36.
37.	37.
38.	38.
39.	39.
40.	40.
41.	41.
42.	42.
43.	43.
44.	44.
45.	45.
46.	46.
47.	47.
48.	48.
49.	49.
50.	50.
51.	51.
52.	52.
53.	53.
54.	54.
55.	55.
56.	56.
57.	57.
58.	58.
59.	59.
60.	60.
61.	61.
62.	62.
63.	63.
64.	64.
65.	65.
66.	66.
67.	67.
68.	68.
69.	69.
70.	70.
71.	71.
72.	72.
73.	73.
74.	74.
75.	75.
76.	76.
77.	77.
78.	78.
79.	79.
80.	80.
81.	81.
82.	82.
83.	83.
84.	84.
85.	85.
86.	86.
87.	87.
88.	88.
89.	89.
90.	90.
91.	91.
92.	92.
93.	93.
94.	94.
95.	95.
96.	96.
97.	97.
98.	98.
99.	99.
100.	100.

*A' madarakat* the birds. *A' kezeket* the hands.

Poss. Aff. Sing.

<i>A' madaram</i> my bird	<i>A' kezem</i> my hand
<i>A' madarad</i> thy bird	<i>A' kezéd</i> thy hand
<i>A' madara</i> his (her, its) bird;	<i>A' keze</i> his (her, its) hand;

*A' madarunk* our bird    *A' kezünk* our hand  
*A' madaratok* your bird    *A' kezetök* your hand  
*A' madarok* their bird.    *A' kezök* their hand.

Objects possessed are more.

<i>A' madaraim</i>	my birds	<i>A' kezeim</i>	my hands
<i>A' madaraid</i>	thy birds	<i>A' kezeid</i>	thy hands
<i>A' madarai</i>	his (her, its)	<i>A' kezei</i>	his (her, its)
	birds;		hands;
<i>A' madaraink</i>	our birds	<i>A' kezeink</i>	our hands
<i>A' madaraitok</i>	your	<i>A' kezeitek</i>	your hands
	birds		
<i>A' madaraik</i>	their birds.	<i>A' kezeik</i>	their hands.

Poss. Case. Sing.

*A' madáré* that of the *A' kézé* that of the hand  
bird  
*A' madáréi* those of the *A' kézéi* those of the hand;  
bird;

Plur.

*A' madaraké* that of the *A' kezeké* that of the  
birds hands  
*A' madarakéi* those of *A' kezekéi* those of the  
the birds. hands.

2.

Sing. Nom.

*A' majom* the ape      *A' vétek* the vice

Obj.	Case.
1.	1.
2.	2.
3.	3.
4.	4.
5.	5.
6.	6.
7.	7.
8.	8.
9.	9.
10.	10.
11.	11.
12.	12.
13.	13.
14.	14.
15.	15.
16.	16.
17.	17.
18.	18.
19.	19.
20.	20.
21.	21.
22.	22.
23.	23.
24.	24.
25.	25.
26.	26.
27.	27.
28.	28.
29.	29.
30.	30.
31.	31.
32.	32.
33.	33.
34.	34.
35.	35.
36.	36.
37.	37.
38.	38.
39.	39.
40.	40.
41.	41.
42.	42.
43.	43.
44.	44.
45.	45.
46.	46.
47.	47.
48.	48.
49.	49.
50.	50.
51.	51.
52.	52.
53.	53.
54.	54.
55.	55.
56.	56.
57.	57.
58.	58.
59.	59.
60.	60.
61.	61.
62.	62.
63.	63.
64.	64.
65.	65.
66.	66.
67.	67.
68.	68.
69.	69.
70.	70.
71.	71.
72.	72.
73.	73.
74.	74.
75.	75.
76.	76.
77.	77.
78.	78.
79.	79.
80.	80.
81.	81.
82.	82.
83.	83.
84.	84.
85.	85.
86.	86.
87.	87.
88.	88.
89.	89.
90.	90.
91.	91.
92.	92.
93.	93.
94.	94.
95.	95.
96.	96.
97.	97.
98.	98.
99.	99.
100.	100.

*A' majmot* the ape;     *A' vétkek* the vice;

Plur. Nom.

*A' majmok* the apes      *A' vétkek* the vices

Obj. Case.

*A' majmokat* the apes. *A' vétkeket* the vices.

Poss. Aff. Sing.

*A' majmom* my ape      *A' vétkem* my vice

*A' majmod thy ape      A' vétked thy vice*

*A' majma* his (her, its) *A' vétke* his (her, its) vice;  
ape;

*A' majmunk* our ape    *A' vétküink* our vice

*A' majmotok* your ape *A' vétketek* your vice

*A' majmuk*\*) their ape. *A' vétök* their vice.

Objects possessed are more.

*A' majmaim my apes    A' vétkeim my vices*

*A' majmaid thy apes    A' vétkeid thy vices*

*A' majmai* his (her, its)    *A' vétkei* his (her, its)  
 apes;                                vices;

*A' majmaink* our apes *A' vétkeink* our vices

*A' majmaitok* your  
apes

*A' majmaik* their apes. *A' vétkeik* their vices

Poss. Case. Sing.

*A' majomé* that of the ape

*A' majoméi* those of the ape

Plur.

*A' majmoké* that of the apes

*A' majmokéi* those of the apes.

\*) In order to distinguish it from the Plural Nom. majmok.



## 3.

Sing. Nom.

*A' szó* the word      *A' fő* the head

Obj. Case.

*A' szavat* the word;      *A' fejet* the head;

Plur. Nom.

*A' szavak* the words      *A' fejek* the heads

Obj. Case.

*A' szavakat* the words. *A' fejeket* the heads.

Poss. Aff. Sing.

*A' szavam* my word      *A' fejem* my head*A' szavad* thy word      *A' fejed* thy head*A' szava* his (her, its) *A' feje* his (her, its) head;  
word;      etc.

Objects possessed are more.

*A' szavaim* my words etc.

## 4.

Sing. Nom.

*A' fiú* the son      *Az anyű* the glue

Obj. Case.

*A' fiat* the son;      *Az anyvet* the glue;

Plur. Nom.

*A' fiak* the sons      *Az anyvek* the glues

Obj. Case.

*A' fiakat* the sons.      *Az anyveket* the glues.

Poss. Aff. Sing.

*A' fiam* my son      *Az anyvem* my glue*A' fiad* thy son      *Az anyved* thy glue*A' fia* his (her, its) son; *Az anyve* his (her, its) glue;  
etc.

## 5. Derivation and Composition of Substantives.

### a) Derivation of Substantives.

The Hungarian language is as productive in the Derivation of Substantives as of Verbs. Substantives may be derived from Verbs, Adverbs, Substantives and Prepositions.

The Affixes of Derivation being used promiscuously for Verbs and Substantives, it will be of some use to mention the most frequently used affixes of Derivation, in order to form Substantives, in their alphabetical order:

*a*, exchanged with *ó*, is used to form Substantives from Verbal roots. *Bugyoga* a bubbling spring, a jar with a very narrow neck, from *bugyog-ni* to bubble; *huza-vona* toil, from *húz-ni*, *von-ni* to draw.

*áb*, — *Hasáb* a log (of wood), cleft wood, from *hasít-ni* to cleave.

*acs*, added to Substantives and Verbal roots. *Uracs* a person pretending to belong to the gentry, *szivacs* the sponge, from *szí-ni* (*szív-ni*) to suck; *dugacs* the bung, from *dug-ni* to stuff, to cork a bottle. The syllable *acs* is contracted if the Verbal root has a final *r*, preceded by a vowel. *Vakaracs*, instead of *vakaracs*, the scraper, and the loaf made of the scrapings of the dough,

from *vakar-ni* to scrape; *habaracs*, instead of *habaracs*, anything spouted out, from *habar-ni* to spout out.

*adalom*, with Verbal roots and Substantives; as, *for-ni* to boil, *foradalom* revolution; *úr* gentleman, lord, *uradalom* dominion.

*ag*, added to Verbal roots. *Forgatag* a whirl, whirlwind, water-spout; from *forgat-ni* to turn round.

*al*, *ál* and *ály*, used to form Substantives from Verbal roots. *Fonal* the file (filum), yarn, from *fon-ni* to spin; *viadal* the fight, from *vív-ni* (*viad*) to combat; *hivatal* the office, from *hivat-ni* to be called for; *halál* death, from *hal-ni* to die; *dagály* swelling, tumour; *akadály* the impediment, from *akad-ni* to stick, to be fixed.

*alék*, added to Verbal roots; *osztalék* the pro-rata, *mártalék* the sauce, *tartalék* a reserve.

*alom*, gives Derivative Substantives, firstly from Verbal roots: *hatalom* might, from *hat-ni* to influence; *fáradalom* the fatigue, from *fárad-ni* to be tired, to take trouble; — secondly, from Adjectives, *vigalom* merriment, from *víg* merry.

*am* and *ám*, used with Verbal roots. *Folyam* the stream, *foly-ni* to flow; *nyílám* calibre, *nyíl-ni* to be opened; *villám* the lightning, whose root is *vill*, of which only the participle *villó*, a body

that gives light, phosphor, is used; *csillám* the glimmer, from the obsolete *csill* to shine.

*any*, a derivative syllable which recovered its right recently, and is especially used for the formation of scientific terms. *Villany* electricity, *higany* mercury, from *hig* fluid; *folany* fluor.

*ár*, by means of which Substantives are formed from others, meaning a person employed in any office, or a tradesman. *Kulcsár* housekeeper, caterer, from *kulcs* key; *tanár* professor, from *tan* science; *timár* tanner, *titkár* (contr. of *titok-ár*) secretary, from *titok* secret; *kádár* cooper.

*ás*, when added to Verbal roots, forms concrete Substantives, which in English are expressed by the Participle. *Alvás* contracted *alvás* sleeping, *varás* sewing, *szaladás* running; from *alud-ni*, *var-ni*, *szalad-ni*.

*ász* is used to form Substantives from other Substantives; it is in principle identical with the syllable *ár*. *Halász* fisher, *vadász* huntsman. Alterations or contractions of the primitive form of the Substantive, made in the Plural, must be observed when this syllable of Derivation is used. *Madarász* fowler, *lovász* a groom, horsebreaker.

*at*, *atyú*, *antyú*, used with verbal roots, and the Derivative Substantives of *ász*. *Halászat* fishing, *szobrászat* statuary; *változat* change, *vitorlázat* sails; *szivattyú* the pump, from *szi-ni* to suck, *szavatyu* organ of speech; *sarkantyú* the spur.

*cs*, added to Substantives, in order to form diminutives. This consonant of Derivation is added to the Plural form of the Substantive, *k* being exchanged with *cs*. *Kő* stone, *Kövecs* gravel.

*csó, cső*, by means of which Substantives are formed from Verbal roots. *Lépcső, hágsó*, steps, *bölcső* the cradle.

*cška, cske*, used for diminutive Substantives, is always added to the Plural form instead of the Plural *k*. *Szemek* the eyes, *szemecske* the little eye; *tűkör* the mirror, Pl. *tűkrök* the mirrors, *tűkröcske* the small mirror; *asztal*, table, Pl. *asztalok*, *asztalocska* a small table; *fiú* the son, Pl. *fiak*, *fiacska* little son.

*cz, cza, cze*, used as a derivative affix with Substantives, Adjectives and Verbal roots. *Különcz* a strange fellow, *ifjonz* a lad, from *külön* separate, *ifjú* young; *utcza* street, from *út* way.

*d*, used with Adverbs and Verbal roots. *Előd* predecessor, from *elő* before; *segéd* assistant.

*da (oda, ede)*, added to Verbal roots, forms derivative Substantives, meaning the place in which the action represented by the Verb is performed: as, *nyomda* printing office, *nyomni* to press; *lovagda* riding school, *lovagolni* to ride on horseback; — to Substantives, in order to form concrete Substantives relative to place — *tanoda*



school, from *tan* science; *csónakda* rowing-school, from *csónak* the boat.

*dék*, and its identical *dok*, form Substantives when added to Verbal roots. *Szándék* and *szándok* resolution, *ajándék* and *ajándok* the present; from *szán-ni* to resolve, *ajánl-ani* to present.

*e*, a derivative affix for Verbal roots used instead of *ő*. *Szüle* parent, *zsenge*, the first fruit (firstling), *sürge* hurry, instead of *szülő*, *zsengő*, *sürgő*.

*edelem*, added to Substantives and Verbal roots. *Fej* head, *fejedelem* prince, sovereign; *vesz-ni* to perish, *veszedelem* danger; *törni* to break, *töredelem* penance.

*eg*, the radical of *egész*, whole, is used with Substantives and Verbal roots. *Rét* a meadow, lay, *réteg* stratum; *rengeteg* an extensive forest.

*ej*, with Verbal roots. *Zörej*, a rattling noise.

*ék* and *ek*; used to form Derivative Substantives of Verbs and Substantives. *Boriték* the cover, *fenyíték* discipline, *vétek* sin, *étel* food; from *borít-ani* to cover, *fenyít-eni* to punish, *vét-eni* to sin, *enni* to eat; *tájék* country, region, *környék* environs, from *táj* environs, *körny* surrounding.

*el*, *él*, *ély*. *Hitel* credit, *jövetel* arrival, *kötél* the rope, *veszély* danger; from *hin-ni* to believe, *jöni* to come, *köt-ni* to bind, *vesz-ni* to become lost.

*elék*, with roots of Verbs. *Kötelék* the bonds,

*főzelék* vegetables, from *köt-ni* to bind, *fűz-ni* to cook.

*elem.* *Szerelem* the love, *engedelem* obedience, *tűrelem* patience, from *szeret-ni* to love, *enged-ni* to yield, *tűrni* to endure.

*em.* *Jelem* character, *terem* saloon, from *jel* a sign, *tér* space.

*emény.* *Vetemény* crop, *nyeremény* profit, from *vet-ni* to sow, *nyer-ni* to gain.

*ény* and *eny*, the latter used especially for technical expressions. *Lepény* a cake, *terény* the palm (of the hand), *mellény* waistcoat, *kötény* the apron, *vizeny* hydrogen, *szeneny* carbonic gas, *éleny* oxygen; from *lap* a plate, *tér* space, *mell* the chest, *köt-ni* to bind, *víz* water, *szén* the charcoal, *él-ni* to live.

*ep.* *Ülep* sediment, *szerep* the part of a play-actor.

*ér, er*, identical with *ár*. *Pinczér* the butler, *czímer* the firm; from *pincze* cellar, *czím* title; *tölcsér* the funnel, from *tölténi* to fill, is somewhat irregular.

*és*, for soft words instead of *ás*. *Verés* beating, *fekvés* position (lying), *vetés* (the) sowing, *sértés* offence.

*ész*, identical with the derivative syllable *ász*. *Kertész* gardener, *festész* (portrait) painter.

*et, etyű, entyű*, for soft words instead of *at*,

*atyú*. *Nevezet* nomination, *vezérlet* guidance, direction, *csengetyű* a small bell, *röppentyű* the rocket, from *nevez-ni* to name, *vezérl-eni* to guide, *csenget-ni* to ring (the bell), *röp* the flight.

*i*, forming Substantives derived from Nouns proper, which in the English language in most instances are expressed by means of the Genitive case and the Noun common "inhabitant". *Budai* an inhabitant of the city of Buda, *győri* an inhabitant of the city of Győr, *szabolcsi* an inhabitant of the county of Szabolcs. This syllable of Derivation is often replaced by *béli*; if that be the case, the respective common Noun must be used with the Proper Noun; *szabolcs-megyebéli* inhabitant of the county of Scabolcs.

*ju*. *Gyapju* wool, from *gyap* wadding; this is more a Composition than a Derivation.

*ka, ke*, for diminutive Substantives, used when the Substantive is of more than one syllable with a final consonant easily combining with *k*; such consonants are *cs, cz, l, n, ny, r*, preceded by a vowel. *Scivacska* a small sponge, *lapoczka* a shovel, *asztalka* a small table, *leányka* a little girl, *kenyérke* little bread, a small loaf.

*mány*. *Szakmány* socage, *zsákmány* prey.

*n*, preceded by a corresponding vowel, used with Numerals in order to express a comprehension of individuals collectively. *Hatan* six of them, *kilenczen* nine of them.

*né, nő*, meaning female. *Kertészné* female gardener and the gardener's wife; *szomszédné* female neighbour.

*nok,nök*, may be added to Adverbial and Verbal roots, and Substantives. *Elnök* president, *ülnök* assessor, *bajnok* champion; *tárnok* in Compounds, as, *pénz-tárnok* treasurer, from *elő* before (the Latin pre) *ül-ni* to sit, *baj* trouble, *tár* store.

*ó, ő*, mentioned in Grammars as the present Participle of the Verb. *Adó* giver and contributions, figuratively taxes, *varó* sewer, *kérelmező* petitioner.

*odalom. Irodalom* literature, *bonyodalom* perplexity.

*omány*, forming concrete Substantives. *Tartomány* country, *hagyomány* the legacy.

*omás*, forming abstract Substantives derivative of Verbs. *Vallomás* confession, *tudomás* notice.

*ot. Gyapot* cotton, from *gyap* wadding.

*s*. Substantives, which are derived by means of the consonant *s*, have the same meaning as those derived by means of the consonants *ár, ér, /ász, ész*; the primitive Substantive is liable to alterations like those when the plural *k* is added, and the vowel that precedes the plural *k* is used also before the consonant of Derivation, *s*. *Asztalos* cabinet-maker, *kerekes* coach-maker, *fazekas*, the potter, *nyerges*, the saddler, *üstös* the brazier; from *asztal* the table, *kerék* the wheel,

*fazék* the pot, *nyereg*, the saddle, *üst* the copper (copper-kettle).

*ság, ség*, Derivative affixes, used with Adjectives, Adverbs and Prepositions, in order to form abstract Substantives; *ság* for Adjectives with hard, *ség* for those with soft vowels. *Jóság* the goodness, *magasság* the height, *vastagság* the thickness, *felség* majesty, *ellenség* the enemy, *túlság* excess, exaggeration; from *jó* good, *magas* high, *vastag* thick, *fel* above, up, *ellen* against, *túl* beyond.

*szág (szég)*, formerly very likely a Substantive which at the present time is used as a syllable of derivation. The English and German languages have a somewhat similar form in the syllables "dom" — "thum". *Ország* the realm (kingdom), from *ör-szág* country to be defended, *jószág* possessions, funded property.

*tyű*. *Kéz* the hand, *keztű* gloves.

*ű, ű*; *Borű* clouds, *gyanű* suspicion, *gyűrű* ring, *betű* letter (character in the alphabet), type. In many of the derivative Substantives of this kind, *ű* is used instead of *ő*: as, *vésű* chisel, instead of *véső*, from *vés-ni* to chisel, to engrave.

#### b) Compound Substantives.

Compound Substantives may be formed:

1) By means of the simple connexion of two Substantives.



a) Nouns common with each other. *Országgyűlés* diet, parliament (Land-congregation), *népiskola* community-school (people-school), *törvényhatóság* jurisdiction, *gőzhajó* steamer, *vasút* railway (iron-road); *béerkocsi* hackney-coach.

b) Nouns proper with their respective Nouns common. *Pestmegye*, county of Pest; *Magyarország*, Hungary (realm of Hungary); *Angolország*, England, *Biharmegye*, county of Bihar; *Jászkerület*, district the Jazygians.

2. Substantives and Adjectives being connected together.

a) The Adjective precedes. *Közakarat* general consent, *újváros* new-town, *hideglegés* fever, *forróláz* inflammatory fever.

b) The Substantive precedes. There are but few compound Substantives of this kind. *Várnagy* castellan, *hadnagy* lieutenant, *tábornagy* general, *körömfekete* the top of the finger-nail, *érdekfél* partaker.

3. By a combination of Prepositions and Substantives or Adjectives. *Ellenőr* controller (*ellen* against, *őr* guard), *ellenfél* the adverse part, (*ellen* contre, *fél* half), *túlsúly* preponderance, *túlköltség* supererogate, *utánöntet* counterfeit, *átmérő* (*általmérő*) diameter.

4. By Adverbs and Substantives. *Felföld* upper-country, high-land *külföld* foreign country, *előjel* prognostic sign, *utósereg* rear-guard.

5. By means of Verbal Adjectives joined to Substantives. *Kárvallott* a man having suffered damage; *kaza-áruló* a traitor of the country, *agyafurtság* shrewdness.

b. By means of the Verbal Adjective *való* (belonging to), governing the Prepositional affix *ra, re, ba, be*. *Nyakravaló* (belonging to the neck) neck-tie, *zsebbevaló* (belonging into the pocket) handkerchief, *akasztófáraló* (being fit for the gallows) gallows-clapper, *semmirevaló* (fit for nothing) good-for-nothing.

Obs. An Orthographical remark may be made; that, when three Substantives are connected together in order to form a compound one, the last is joined by means of a hyphen. *Gyapjúszövet-gyár* manufactory of woollen cloth; also, when two Substantives do not form a Compound Substantive, strictly taken: as, *vas-drót* iron-wire, *csont-faggyú* bone-fat, etc.; or if the former part of the Composition is expressed in the form of an Adjective: *gőzhajózási-társulat*, steam-boat-company; *vasuti-részvény*, railway-share.

### III. Attributes.

The Verb and the Substantive must be considered as the principal Parts of Speech. The notions expressed by each of them may be accompanied by some secondary notion, explaining the quality, quantity, any relation to time and

place, or intensity and strength, represented in the principal term.

Words expressing such secondary notions (ideas) are called **Attributive Terms**, and are generally comprehended under the Grammatical section of **Adjectives** and **Adverbs**, the former as **Attributes of Substantives**, the latter as **Attributes of Verbs**.

**Attributive Terms** may be represented so as to express a higher degree of intensity than they primitively did; such representations give origin to forms called **Comparison**. There are two degrees of **Comparison**, that of the **Comparative**, when the qualities of two objects are compared; that of the **Superlative**, when, among three Objects, the quality of the third exceeds that of the compared one.

The Hungarian language has the property of using the **Adjective**, and in many instances the **Adverb**, as a **Substantive**, for which expressions the English language has recourse to circumscripti<sup>o</sup>ns, or the **Numeral**, one; as, give me the book, which? the large one. *Add nekem a' könyvet, melyiket? a' nagyot.*

### 1. Adjectives.

When the **Adjective** is used as a **Substantive**, all affixes, except the **Possessive** ones, even the article *az* or *a'*, may be used with it. In that

case, the rules on the use of affixes, given for Substantives, are applied to the Adjective as well.

When the Adjective is an attribute of Substantives, it precedes them immediately and invariably, the affixes being added to the Substantive itself.

#### a) Form of Comparison.

Comparison is the only modification proper to Adjectives; for the Hungarian language does not admit the use of the Adverbs more and most, like other European languages, in order to express the degree of strength and intensity.

The affix of the Comparative and Superlative is *bb*, which is preceded by *a* for Adjectives with hard vowels, and by *e* for Adjectives with soft vowels, when they have a final consonant. In order to distinguish the Superlative degree from the Comparative, the syllable *leg* is prefixed to the Superlative degree.

*Drága* dear, *drágább* dearer, *legdrágáb* dearest.

*Merész* bold, *merészebb* bolder, *legmerészebb* boldest.

*Vastag* thick, *vastagabb* thicker, *legvastagabb* thickest.

#### b) Irregularities of Comparison.

Some Deviations from this general rule take place regarding:

### α. The Comparative and Superlative.

The following Adjectives are irregular.

*Hosszú* long, *hosszabb* longer, *leghosszabb* longest;

*Ifjú* young, *ifjabb* younger, *legifjabb* youngest;

*Jó* good, *jobb* better, *legjobb* best;

*Könnyű* easy, light, *könnyebb* easier, *legkönnyebb* easiest;

*Nagy* large, *nagyobb* larger, *legnagyobb* largest.

*Szép* beautiful, *szebb* more beautiful, *legszebb* most beautiful.

Besides the regular forms of the Comparative and Superlative Degrees, there are others used when the Adjective is used without any Substantive, the affix *ik*, *ika* or *ike* being added to the forms of the Comparative and Superlative. *Erős* stronger, *erősbik* and *erősbike* the stronger (one); *legerős* strongest, *legerősbik*, *legerősbike* the strongest; *nagyobb* larger, *nagyobbik* and *nagyobbika* the larger (one); *legnagyobb* largest, *legnagyobbik* and *legnagyobb-bika* the largest.

Obs. If the Adjectives be of more than two syllables, the affixes *ik* or *ika*, and *ike* are not used.

### β. The termination *bb*.

1) Adjectives with a final *ú*, *ű*, or *i*, have a double form of the Comparative and Superlative, viz, the *bb*, being added either regularly or preceded by the vowel *a* or *e*; as, *régi* ancient,



*regibb* and *regiebb* more ancient, *legrégibb* and *legrégiebb* most ancient; *lassú* slow, *lassúbb* and *lassuabb* slower, *leglassúbb* or *leglassuabb* slowest; *sűrű* thick, dense, *sűrűebb* and *sűrűbb* thicker, *legsűrűbb* and *legsűrűebb* thickest; except the compound Adjectives of *szerű*, which have regular forms.

2. Adjectives with a final *s* are often used in an abbreviated form, a single *b* being added, without any vowel. *Magas* high, *magasb* and *magasabb* higher, *legmagasb* and *legmagasabb* highest. *Erős* strong, *erősb* and *erősebb* stronger, *legerősb* and *legerősebb* strongest.

#### γ. The Superlative degree.

The Superlative degree is often found insufficient to express excellence; for this reason, the Adverbs *very* or *by far*, etc., are used in the English language before the Superlative; as, “the very best”; in Hungarian the prefix “*leg*” is repeated and connected by the particle *is* or *es*: as, *legislegfinomabb* the very finest, *legeslegerősebb* by far the strongest.

#### δ) Pleonasm of Comparison.

It is a propriety of the Hungarian language to give a complete Comparison to such Adjectives as logically admit but one or the other degree of Comparison, and to use in the Superlative degree Adjectives, which do not admit of it in other languages.

Such are:

<i>Első</i> the first;	<i>legelső</i> (the very first).
<i>Utolsó</i> , the last;	<i>legutolsó</i> (the very last).
<i>Szélső</i> , extreme;	<i>legszélsőbb</i> the outermost
<i>Végő</i> , final;	<i>legvégőbb</i> .
<i>Alsó</i> , lower, inferior,	<i>alsóbb</i> , <i>legalsóbb</i> .
<i>Felső</i> , upper, superior;	<i>felsőbb</i> , <i>legfelsőbb</i> upper- most.

Here may be subjoined another peculiarity of the language, the Comparison of Substantives. Instead of using the derivative Adjective, Hungarians sometimes prefer the shorter form of using the Substantive as an Adjective, and give it a Comparison. *Ember* man, *emberebb* more human; *ördög* Satan, *ördögebb* more Satan-like.

#### c) Comparison of Compound Adjectives.

Compound Adjectives are separated, when used in the Comparative or Superlative Degree, and the first part receives the affixes of Comparison, while the second remains unchanged. Such compound Adjectives are those of an Adjective and a Substantive with the termination *ü* or *ű*. *Nagylelkű* generous, *nagyobb-lelkű* more generous; *jószívű* good-hearted, kind, *jobb-szívű* more kind, *legjobb-szívű* kindest. Adjectives compounded with *szerű* may be used regularly and irregularly; thus, *nagyszerű*, grand, *nagyobb-szerű* and *nagyszerűbb* more grand. When the first part of the compound is a Substantive, the regular form

must be used: as, *törvényszerű* legal, *törényszerűbb* more legal.

Observ. If any Adjective be liable to an alteration in its root when forming the Objective Case and Plural, such alterations must be attended to in Comparison as well. For instance: *híg* fluid, object. Case, *higat* Comparat. Degr., *higabb* more fluid; *vékony* thin, obj. Case, *véknyat*, Comp. Degr. *véknyabb* thinner, etc.

#### d) Derivation of Adjectives.

4. From Verbs, by means of the affixes:

*ó* or *ő*, added to the Verbal root. These derivative Adjectives were generally known as the Present Participles of Verbs, but they are really Adjectives and as such their construction is that of Adjectives. *Verő* beating, *szerető* loving, *író* writing.

The third Person of the Perfect Tense Ind. Mood is also used as an Adjective. *Szeretett* beloved, *megvert* beaten, *megírt* written.

*asz, ész*; as, *merész* bold, from *mer* to venture; *kopasz* bald.

*csi*. *Kiváncsi* eager, from *kiván* to wish for.

*ánk, énk*. *Nyulánk* thin, lank; *félénk* timid.

*ékony, ékeny*. *Érzékeny* sensitive; *porlékony* brittle.

2. From Substantives, by means of the affixes:

*béli, beli*, which is derived from the Prepositional affix *be*, in. *Vármegyebéli* belonging to

a county; *németországbelie* of Germany, German; *elmebeli* intellectual (of the mind).

*dad, ded*, which has the meaning of “being like”, “having the shape” of. *Tojásdad* oval, from *tojás* the egg.

*nyi* forms derivatives only from Substantives of measure. *Lábnyi*, one foot long, *ölnyi* length of a fathom, *arasznyi*, a span long, etc.

*ű, ú*, used only in combination with other Adjectives; *éles-látású* quick-sighted, *jó-szívű* good-hearted, etc.

### 3. From Adjectives themselves are derived

Diminutive Adjectives, by means of the affix *ka, ke, acska, ecske*. *Szegény* poor, *szegényke* little poor, *vastag* thick, *vastagocska* a little thick, etc.

### 4. From Substantives and Adjectives, by means:

a) of the letter *s*, preceded by a vowel, when the Substantive has a final consonant. In regard to the auxiliary vowel it may be remarked, that it is the same as that which is used before the plural *k*. If the Substantive be liable to abbreviations, in the Plural, they must be made before this letter of derivation as well. *Rózsa* the rose, *rózsás* rosy; *világ* the light, *világos*, light; *hatalom* might, *hatalmas* mighty; *füst* smoke, *füstös* smoky; etc. Derivatives from Adjectives have the same meaning as the English

derivative Adjectives of *ish*. *Fehér* white, *fehéres* whitish; *kék* blue, *kékes* bluish; etc.

b) of *szerű*. *Népszerű*, popular, from *nép* people; *nagyszerű* grand, from *nagy* great.

### 5. From Adverbs, Prepositions, and Substantives.

a) By means of the termination *só, ső*. *Felső* upper, from *fel* up; *túlsó* yonder opposite, from *túl* beyond; *szélső* extreme, from *szél* the border.

b) By means of the additional vowel *i*. *Vármegyei* of the county; belonging to the county, from *vármegye* county, *világi* worldly, from *világ* world; *alatti* underneath, from *alatt* under; *mostani* (the) present, *akkori* then being; from *mostan* now, *akkor* then.

### 6. From Substantives, Adjectives, and Verbs.

By means of the terminations *talan, atlan,etlen, etlen*, meaning a negation, equal to the English *un*, the Latin *in*. *Számtalan* innumerable, from *szám* number; *kegyetlen* cruel, from *kegy* favour; *boldogtalan* unhappy, from *boldog* happy; *íratlan* unwritten, *elmondhatlan* inexpressible.

#### e) Compound Adjectives.

Compound Adjectives may be formed by Substantives and Adjectives, and Adjectives amongst themselves. *Érdemdús* full of merits, *koromkefete* as black as soot, *aranyszínű* of a gold colour, *világoskék* light-blue, *setétbarna* dark-brown.



## 2. Adverbs. — Attributes of Verbs. —

### a) Division of Adverbs.

Attributes of Verbs are Terms used to define the circumstances under which the notion of the Verb is represented; hence, they may be arranged under as many Classes as the different circumstances themselves.

Circumstances by which the meaning of Verbs may be defined are those of Time, Place, Quantity, Quality, and Modality, the last comprehending the subdivisions of probability, assertion, and apodixis. For this reason there are as many different Adverbs, partly primitive, partly derivative ones.

### 1. Adverbs of Time.

α) Primitive Adverbs: *ma*, to-day; *most*, now; *rég*, long ago; *majd*, soon; *hamar*, quickly.

β) Derivative and Compound Adverbs of Time: *mikor*, when; *eleinte*, at first; *hajdan*, formerly; *régen*, long ago; *az idén*, this year; *korán* early; *későn*, late; *gyakran*, often; *folyvást*, continually; *mindjárt*, presently; *tüstént*, immediately; *azután*, afterwards; *délkor*, at noon; *ollykor*, at such a time, sometimes; *ollykor ollykor*, now and then; *soha*, never; *néha*, sometimes; *valaha*, ever (at any time); *valamikor*, some days; *tegnap*, yesterday; *holnap*, to-morrow; *minap*, lately, recently; *taval*, last year; *egyszer*, once; *kétszer*, twice;

*ötször*, five times; *harmadszor*, for the third time; *negyedszer*, for the fourth time.

## 2. Adverbs of Place.

α) Primitive ones: *hol*, where; *itt*, here; *ott*, there; *ki* outside; *be*, inside; *fel*, upwards; *le*, downwards; *messze*, far.

β) Derivative and compound ones: *hova*, where to, whither; *oda*, thither; *ide*, hither (derived from *hol*, *itt*, *ott*); *tova*, far; *távol*, far away; *közel*, near; *máshova*, elsewhere (to); *sehol*, nowhere; *valahol*, somewhere; *máshol*, somewhere else; *mindenhol*, everywhere; *künn*, outside; *kívül*, outside; *belől*, inside; *lent*, down; *fent*, up; *hátul* behind; *oldalt*, aside; *honnan*, whence; *innen*, hence; *onnan*, thence; *másunnan*, from somewhere else; *sehonnan*, from nowhere; *messzünnen*, from a far.

γ) Adverbs of place, formed by means of Prepositional affixes. *Előre*, forwards; *hátra*, backwards; *félre*, aside.

3. Adverbs of Quantity are all derivative ones, formed by means of Prepositional affixes. *Nagyobbára*, for the greatest part; *egyenként*, singly (by single ones); *hármanként*, by three; *öttenként*, by five; *darabonként*, by pieces; *seregenként*, in crowds; *shillingenként*, in shillings.

4. Adverbs of Quality are all derived from Adjectives, by means of *l*, *ül*, *ül*, *n*, *en*, *an*. *Jól*, well; *roszúl*, badly; *vitézül*, heroically; *vilá-*

*gosan*, plainly; *magasan*, highly; *magasabban*, more highly; *szépen* beautifully; *szívesen*, cordially, willingly.

### 5. Adverbs of Modality.

a) Probability: *talán*, perhaps; *csaknem*, nearly; *alig*, hardly; *hihetőleg*, probably; *valószínűleg*, very likely.

b) Assertion: *Hogy*, how? *úgy, így*, thus, so; *amúgy*, that way (to do); *emígy*, this way (to do); *ollyatén, ollyképen*, in such a manner; *általán* and *általában*, generally; *rendkívül*, extraordinarily; *kivált*, especially; *ingyen*, gratis; *mint*, as; *valamiképen*, somehow;

#### c) Apodixis:

α) Affirmative: *igen*, yes; *bizony*, verily; *igazán*, truly; *valóban*, really; *bizonyosan*, surely.

β) Negative: *nem*, no, not; *sem*, also not; *sohogysem*, in no way; *semmiképen* by no means.

### b) Comparison of Adverbs.

Adverbs, which are not derived from Adjectives, may be used in the Comparative and Superlative Degrees, which are formed like those of Adjectives.

*Távol* far, distant; *távolabb* more distant; *legtávolabb* most distant; *tova* far, *tovább* farther, *legtovább* farthest. Irregularly, or only in the Comparative, are used:

*oda* there, *odább* and *odébb* farther;

*ide* here, *idébb* nearer, closer;  
*messze* far, *messzebb* farther, *legmesszebb* far-  
 thest;  
*fel* up, *feljebb* higher;  
*le* down, *lejebb* lower;  
*be* inside, inwards, *beljebb* more inwards;  
*ki* outside, outwards, *kijebb* farther out;  
*lent* down, *lentebb* lower down;  
*fent* up, *fentebb* higher up.

#### IV. Pronouns.

Pronouns, called so because ancient Gram-  
 marians supposed them to be used instead of  
 Nouns, may be divided in five groups.

##### 1. Personal Pronouns.

Personal Pronouns are those which repre-  
 sent the notions (ideas): of a speaker, the first  
 Person; an individual spoken to, the second  
 Person; and an object spoken of, the third  
 Person.

Nature has divided organized bodies into two  
 sexes; for this reason, in some of the European  
 languages a precise generic distinction of the  
 names of Objects, according to their natural dis-  
 tinction, is made; in others this rule, instituted by  
 nature, is deviated from, and a generic distinction  
 in a figurative meaning is also made. The Hun-

garians consider the names of Objects as pure abstract terms, which really have no distinction of sex when merely considered as terms; therefore, the generic distinction of the third Personal Pronoun, which represents Objects spoken of, is wanting in their language.

The Personal Pronouns are:

Nominative.

Sing.	<i>Én</i> I	Plur.	<i>Mi</i> we
	<i>Te</i> thou		<i>Ti</i> you
	<i>Ö</i> he, she, it		<i>Ök</i> they.

The formation of the Objective case is somewhat irregular, its Characteristic, being used with the Possessive affixes in the first and second Persons Singular.

Objective Case.

Sing.	<i>Engemet</i> me	Plur.	<i>Minket</i> us
	<i>Tégedet</i> thee		<i>Titeket</i> you
	<i>Öt</i> and <i>Ötet</i> him, her, it;		<i>Öket</i> them.

Instead of *engemet*, *tégedet*, the abridged forms *engem*, *téged*, instead of *minket* and *titeket* the forms *bēninket* and *bēneteket*, may be used.

The Personal Pronoun is never used with the affix expressing the Possessive case, but when such a form is required in any sentence, the Personal Pronouns receive the Possessive affixes as follows:



Object possessed is one.

Sing.	<i>Enyém</i> , mine;	Plur.	<i>Miénk</i> , ours;
	<i>Tiéid</i> , thine;		<i>Tiétek</i> , yours;
	<i>Övé</i> , his, hers, its;		<i>Övék</i> , theirs.

Objects possessed are more than one.

Sing.	<i>Enyéim</i> , mine;	Plur.	<i>Miéink</i> , ours;
	<i>Tiéid</i> , thine;		<i>Tiéitek</i> , yours;
	<i>Övéi</i> , his, hers, its;		<i>Övéik</i> , theirs.

The Prepositional Affixes are not added to the Personal Pronouns, as to Substantives and Adjectives, but they are used with the Possessive Affixes. The different forms, arising from the combination of the Possessive and Prepositional affixes, have been mentioned in the first part. So are the Prepositions strictly taken (or rather Postpositions, for in the Hungarian language the so-called Prepositions are not placed before the Substantive) used with the Possessive affixes; thus, instead of saying *én előtt*, before me, we say *előttem*; instead of *ő alatt* under him, we say *alatta*.

## 2. Relative and interrogative Pronouns.

The Pronouns *ki* who, *melly* which, *mi* what, are used in compound sentences in order to prevent the repetition of a Substantive.

As the sentences may be either interrogative or assertorial, these Pronouns are either Interrogative or Relative Pronouns, according to the nature of the sentence with which they are used.

The Pronoun *ki* is only used when Persons, *melly* and *mi* when animals and inanimated things, are spoken of.

The Pronouns *milly*, *millyen*, what, what sort, *minö*, what; *illy*, *illyen*, such; *olly*, *ollyan*, *ollyas*, such, are Correlative ones.

All these Pronouns are used with the different Affixes, except the Possessive affixes *m*, *d*, *ja*, like Substantives, etc., but *ki* and *mi* retain their short vowel, whatever the Affix added may be. Thus, *kit* whom, *mit* what (their Objective Cases); *kik* who, *mik* what (their Plural).

The Correlative Pronouns *ollyan*, *illyen* are often compounded with the Demonstrative Pronouns, in: *amollyan*, such (as that) *emillyen* or *imillyen* such (as this).

### 3. Demonstrative Pronouns.

Demonstrative Pronouns are such as the speaker uses, in order to point out the objects situated nearer, or farther off. They are: *ez* this, and its compounds *ezen*, *emez*, *imez*, this here, *ugyanez* the same; *az* that, *azon*, *amaz*, *amazon* that there; *ugyanaz* the same.

In regard to their Grammatical forms they are subjected to the same rules as the Relative Pronouns.

I need not repeat the remark on the assimilation of the consonant *z* (in *az*, *ez*), when

the Grammatical Affix begins with a consonant; see Introd. §. 3.

#### 4. Definite Pronouns.

Definite Pronouns are used to avoid the repetition of a Substantive, determined by an Adjective. Such are: *mindenki*, *kiki* every body; *senki*, nobody; *semmi*, nothing; *egyik*, one (of more); *másik*, the other; *mindenik*, every one; *mind*, all; *mindnyájan*, all (persons); *minden*, all.

#### 5. Indefinite Pronouns.

The indefinite Pronouns are: *Valaki*, somebody; *valamelly*, some, any one; *valami*, something; *akárki*, whosoever; *bárki*, whoever; *bármelly*, whichever; *akármelly*, whichsoever; *akármí*, whatsoever; *némelly*, some; *némellyik*, some one.

The definite and indefinite Pronouns are used as Adjectives as well, with the exception of *mindenki*, *kiki*, *senki*, *egyik*, *másik*, *mindenik*, *mind*, *mindnyájan*, *valaki*, *akárki*, *bárki*, *némellyik*.

### V. Prepositions.

Considering the nominal meaning of the word, there are no terms in the Hungarian language to which the name can be applied.

The different relations of space, time, cause and effect, the whole and its parts, represented by Prepositions, are expressed by two kinds of terms.

1) By affixes, which can only be used with Substantives or their substitutes; for this reason, they may be called Prepositional affixes. Such are:

for words with hard vowels.	for words with soft vowels.
<i>ba</i> , in, into	<i>be</i> , in, into
<i>ban</i> , in, at	<i>ben</i> , in, at
<i>ból</i> , out of	<i>ből</i> , out of
<i>hoz</i> , to	<i>hez</i> and <i>höz</i> , to
<i>ig</i> , till, until	
<i>kép</i> , in the form, in the shape of	
<i>ként</i> , like	
<i>n</i> , <i>on</i> , on, upon	<i>n</i> , <i>en</i> <i>ön</i> , on, upon
<i>nak</i> , to, towards	<i>nek</i> , to, towards
<i>nál</i> , at	<i>nél</i> , at
<i>ra</i> , on, upon	<i>re</i> , on, upon
<i>ról</i> , from, of	<i>ről</i> , from, of
<i>stúl</i> , together with*)	<i>stül</i> , together with
<i>tól</i> , from	<i>től</i> , from
<i>ül</i> , as	<i>ül</i> , as
<i>vá</i> , in, into	<i>vé</i> , in, into
<i>val</i> , with	<i>vel</i> , with

2. By words placed after the Substantives or their substitutes. In the Hungarian language the Prepositions are placed after the Substantive to

---

\*) This affix is added to the same radical form as the plural *k*; *feleségstül* together with his wife.

which they refer; thus, Grammarians have preferred: to call them Postpositions. Such are:

*alá*, underneath

*alatt*, under

*alól*, and *alúl*, from underneath

*által*, through, by

*át*, over

*belöl* and *belül*, inside of

*elé*, before

*ellen*, against

*elől*, from before

*előtt*, before

*felé*, towards

*felett* and *fölött*, over, above

*felül*, and *fölül*, above

*fogva*, from, for, by

*gyanánt*, like, as

*hegyett*, over, above

*helyett*, instead

*iránt*, towards, on account of

*innen*, this side

*keresztül*, across

*kivül*, without, outside of

*közé*, amongst, between

*között*, amongst, between

*közül*, from amongst

*megé*, behind

*megett*, behind

*megül*, from behind



*mellé*, beside, next to  
*mellett*, at, at the side of  
*mellől*, from beside  
*miatt*, for, because of  
*nélkül*, without  
*szerint*, according  
*túl*, beyond (on the other side)  
*után*, after  
*végett*, for.

## V. Conjunctions.

Conjunctions, used to join together simple sentences, may be divided into as many groups as there are kinds of sentences to be connected together, or periods, that may be constructed. Therefore, we distinguish: causal, comparative, explanative, concessive, conditional, consecutive, distributive, copulative, Conjunctions, etc.

Besides this division of Conjunctions, they are arranged under two orders.

1. Correlative Conjunctions, in order to form compound sentences; they are not used separately, but as often as the antecedent begins with a Conjunction the consequent must naturally begin with its corresponding one. Such are: *mi-velhogy* because, *azért* therefore; *miért* why, *mert* because; *valamint* as, like, *úgy* or *szintúgy* likewise; *miután* or *minekutána* after, *akkor* or *an-*

*nakutána* then; *ámbar* although, and *bár* though, *mégis* yet, nevertheless; *ha* if, *akkor* then; *nemcsak* not only, *hanem* but; *mihelyest* as soon as, *azonnal*; *mikor* when, *akkor* then; *míg* while, *addig* or *azalatt*, in the mean time; *mennyire*, *annyira* in as much; *mennél* the, *annál* the; *alighogy* no sooner, *már* is than; *egyrészt* partly, *másrész* partly.

The Conjunctions, *vagy*, *mind*, *részént*, *sem*, *se*, *majd*, *akár*, *is*, have no Correlative ones, for the consequent, and therefore they are repeated in the consequent. Thus: *vagy* either, *vagy* or; *mind* as well, *mind* as; *részént* partly, *részint* partly; *sem* and *se* neither, *sem*, *se*, nor; *majd* now, *majd* now; *akár* either, *akár* or; *is* and, as well, *is* and, as.

2. Conjunctions used without correlative ones: *és*, and; *meg*, and; *is* also; *mint*, as, than; *nehogy*, lest, that not; *de*, but; *azonban*, however; *hogy*, that; *csak*, only; *csupán*, merely that; *tehát*, consequently; *és így* thus; *következőleg*, consequently.

## VI. Interjections.

Besides the Interjections which are common to all languages, being merely syllables uttered involuntarily in consequence of any excitement, there are words or rather expressions of joy, pain, or displeasure, proper to the Hungarians:

*Az Istenért*, for God's sake.

*Dehogy*, what you say! (but how).

*Éljen*, Hurrah (vive).

*Hála Istennek*, thank God.

*Igazán*, indeed, really!

*Istenem*, my Lord (my God).

*Isten mentsen*, God forbid (God save us from)!

*Isten őrizzen*, God forbid (God preserve).

*Majd bizony*, what next (soon surely.)

*Mi az Istennyila* and *mi a' mennykő*, what the  
d—l (what the thunderbolt).

*Mi a' patvar*, the deuce.

*Mi a' tatár*, (what the tatars).

*Ne mond*, you do'nt say so (do not say).

*Patvar vigye*, let him go (the deuce may take him).

*Teremtette*, (a mark of indignation).

etc.

## B. SYNTAX. — CONSTRUCTION OF SENTENCES.

Syntax is that part of Grammar which contains rules for correctly using the different Grammatical forms of words, and words themselves, in order to form sentences. There would be as many Sections of Syntax as there are distinguished different parts of Speech, each of them separately comprehending as many Subdivisions as there are different Grammatical forms for

each part, if they were used separately; but its object being to teach the method of forming sentences by connecting some or all of the different Parts of Speech, Syntax may be divided into the following divisions.

1. Of the combination of the different parts of Speech, without the intermediation of Grammatical forms.

2. Of the combination of parts of Speech by means of Grammatical forms.

3. Of the use of the different Forms, Moods, and Tenses of the Verb, and parts of Speech, in order thereby to connect two or more sentences.

4. Of the order in which the different parts of speech follow each other.

## I.

### **Of the combination of the different parts of Speech without the intermediation of Grammatical forms.**

(Congruency of Parts of Speech).

A. Of the article *az*, *a'* and its Congruent.

The Article, in many of the European languages, gives the Substantive a determined meaning, in the Hungarian language the Article is used when the Substantive is limited to a certain sphere, by another Part of Speech, by some

Grammatical form, or by the sentence itself, in which it is the Subject or Object.

The article precedes its Substantive immediately, and can only be separated from it by the Adjective; <sup>and its dependents</sup> it is used especially:

1. When the demonstrative Pronouns *az*, *ez* precede the Substantive: as, *az a' ház*, that house; *ez az asztal*, this table; *ez a' pohár*, this glass.

2. When the Substantive is used with the Possessive affixes: as, *az atyám*, my father; *az öcsém*, my brother; *a' késem*, my knife.

3. When the speaker points to a certain Object, in order to distinguish it from another, when he refers to an object mentioned before, or otherwise supposed to be already known, or when the Substantive is meant to represent the whole gender or class of objects named: as, *az országgyűlés hozhat törvényt*, the Parliament (and no other Political body) can give laws; *Külömbféle rendekre osztatnak fel az állatok*, animals (comprehending all animals) are divided into different orders.

4. When the predicate of the sentence is a general one, proper to the whole class represented by the subject: as, *a' virág virít*, the flower is blowing; *az ember kétlábú állat*, man is a two-legged animal.

If any other word be used to replace the Substantive, it is subject to the above rules; the



Relative Pronouns *ki, melly, mi, millyen, illy, olly*, etc. are used therefore with and without the Article. Thus, we say: *a' ki nem tud írni*, and *ki írni nem tud*, he who cannot write.

The Article is not used:

1. Before the names of Persons (taken individually), lands, towns, months, and days. *János*, John; *Angolország*, England; *Pest*, Pest; *Januar' hava*, the month of January; *hétfő*, Monday.

2. When sentences are constructed with the affixes of Possession instead of a possessive Case, and the Prepositional affix *nak* is missed: as, *az atyám' háza*, instead of *az atyámnak a' háza*, my father's house; *az ország' királya*, instead of *az országnak a' királya*, the king of the land.

3. When the attribute expressed by the Predicate is not a general one: as, *hol oroszlán nincs*, where there are no lions (there might be some other animals); *emberek is oktanok*, some men are unreasonable; *kenyeret eszem*, I eat some bread.

4. In exclamations: as, *szükség törvényt ront*, necessity knows no law (breaks laws); and in expressions like the following: *házamban vagyok*, I am in my own house; *saját pénzemet elvesztem*, I lose my own money.

Obs. *Isten*, God, is used with and without the article; when used with the article, it may be

translated by „Lord.“ *Az Isten kegyelmes*, God is gracious (the Lord is gracious).

There being no Indefinite Article in the Hungarian language, Substantives are necessarily used without; instead of saying, as in English, a man, we say *ember*; a house, *ház*; a town, *város*.

When Substantives represent any indefinite individual, the Numeral *egy* replaces the English indefinite Article and indefinite Pronouns: some, any, etc.: as, *volt egyszer egy ember*, there was once a man; *egy úr mondta*, some gentleman said it.

#### B. Adjectives with Numerals and Substantives.

1. Adjectives qualifying Substantives are placed before the latter in the Nominative case Singular; the Substantives at once may be used with or without any affixes, in the Singular or Plural. *Jó alma*, a good apple; *szép házak*, fine houses; *drága szüleim*, my dear parents.

Observ. All words used instead of Adjectives are liable to the same rule. Such words are: Numerals, and Relative, Indefinite, and Definite Pronouns. *Egy házat*, one house; *valamenny könyvem*, any of my books; *semmi munka*, no work.

2. Substantives are used in the Singular after

Numerals, Adjectives, and Pronouns of quantity: as, *három könyv*, three books; *három házat vettem*, I have bought three houses; *sok embert láttam*, I have seen many men; *nehány tollat vettem*, I have bought some pens.

Obs. 1. *Kettő*, before Substantives, changes into *két*: as, *két fiú*, two boys; *huszonkét shilling*, twenty-two shillings.

Obs. 2. If the Numeral does not represent a part of a large number, but means a collection of the whole, the Substantive must be used in the Plural Number: as, *a' tizenkét apostolok*, the twelve apostles; *a' három királyok*, the three kings; on the contrary, we say *tíz apostol*, ten apostles.

3. If the Adjective be placed after its Substantive, for the sake of Emphasis, the Affixes used with the Substantive must be added to the Adjective as well. *Könyvet keveset olvasott*, he has read but a few books. —

### C. Subject and Predicate.

The Subject is the principal member of the sentence, to which all other words belong as accessory ones. Commonly, the terms Subject and Predicate are defined: the former as the word representing the Object spoken of, the latter as the word expressing what is said of the Subject.

The Subject of a simple sentence is a Substantive or any word or words used as Substantives; the Predicate may be a Substantive, Adjective, or Verb. When the Predicate is a Substantive or Adjective, the Verb „to be” is used as a Copula between Subject and Predicate; this Copula, when used in the present Tense, is entirely neglected in the Hungarian language.

1. A Substantive used as a Predicate agrees with its Subject in number: but when it is a Predicate of two or more Substantives it is used in the Plural number; as, *János deák*, John is a student; *Pluto és Apollo istenek voltak a' Rómaiaknál*, Pluto and Apollo were Gods of the Romans.

There is another mode of constructing Substantives, when they are connected without any Copula; in this case the predicated Substantive is always used in the Singular Number, and the whole sentence becomes transposed, the Proper Noun being placed before its Common Noun: as, *István király*, King Stephen; *János és Pál deák*, the students Paul and John.

The same inversion is made with the christian and surnames of Persons: for instance, *Nagy Sándor*, Alexander Nagy; *Kossúth Lajos*, Lewis Kossuth.

2. An Adjective, used as a Predicate, agrees with its Subject in Number. *A' rózsza szép*, the

rose is beautiful; *a' rózsák szépek* the roses are beautiful.

When two or more separate Substantives are used as a Subject, the Adjective must be in the Plural: as, *István és Béla szorgalmatosak*; Stephen and Albert are diligent; *A' Rómaiak és a' Görögök szabadak voltak*, the Romans and Greeks were free.

3. When the Predicate is a Verb, it agrees with the Subject in Number and Person; but, when there are different Substantives connected together into one Subject, the Verb is used in the Singular. *Az Oroszlány és a' Tigris Ázsiában lakik*, the lion and the tiger (lives) live in Asia; *az ember gondolkozhatik*, (the) man is able to think; *az ifjúság és a szépség elműlik*, youth and beauty disappear (disappears).

Obs. 1. When a collective Noun is used as a Subject, the Predicate is always put in the Singular Number. *Az alma édes*, apples are sweet; *a' borsó a' mezőn termesztetik*, peas are grown in the fields; *a' nép szereti a' királyt*, people love their king.

Obs. 2. After the Numeral Substantives: *ketten* two of them, *hatan* six of them, etc., the Predicate is used in the Plural. *Heten írtak*, there were seven who wrote (seven of them wrote); *tizen ülnek*, ten of them are sitting.



## D. Of other congruences.

1. Two or more Substantives being connected by means of "*mint*" as, like, agree in the affix but not necessarily in Number: as, *szeressed felebarátodat mint önmagadat*, love thy neighbour as thyself.

2. Substantives of measures agree with their collective Substantives in Number; as the Collectives have no Plural the Substantives of measure are used in the Singular only. *Három itze bor*, three (quart) quarts of wine; *négy kosár alma*, four baskets of apples.

3. When the Personal Pronouns are used before Substantives or Verbs with Personal Affixes, for the sake of Emphasis, they agree in Number and Person with their Substantive or Verb. *Az én házam*, my house; *én voltam ott*, I have been there.

4. The Demonstrative Pronouns agree with their respective Substantives in Number, Case, and Prepositional affix. *Azok az emberek*, those men; *azokat a' fiúkat*, those boys; *abból a' szobából*, out of that room; etc.

Obs. *Azon*, that, and *Ezen* this, are invariable in regard to Number and Affixes. *Azon emberek*, those men; *ezen fiúkat*, these boys.

## II.

### Of the combination of Parts of Speech by means of Grammatical forms.

#### Syntax of Government.

The Hungarian language possessing no other Grammatical forms of Substantives, besides the objective Case and the Plural, than those produced by the Possessive and Prepositional affixes, the whole Syntax of Government will be reduced to rules on the use of the different affixes.

#### A. Of the Objective Case.

All Verbs of a transitive meaning govern the objective Case either of a person or of a thing, as the Object of the action expressed by the Verb. *A' tanító tanítja a' fiút*, the teacher teaches the boy.

Many Neuter and Medial Verbs are constructed with the Objective case of Substantives which are either derived from them or from which the Verbs themselves are derived. *Jó életet él*, he lives a good life; *szép álmot álmodtam*, I dreamt a beautiful dream.

## B. Of the Possessive Affixes.

1. The Possessive affixes *m, d, ja* or *je; nk, tok* or *tek, jok* or *jök*, and their Plurals, are to compensate for the Adjective Pronouns: *my, thy, his, her, our, your, their*; the Substantive, therefore, is in Hungarian to be used with those affixes as often as these Pronouns are used in English: as, *atyám* my father; *az atyámat láttam*, I have seen my father; *a' könyveinket eladtuk*, we have sold our books, *a' bátyámtól jövök*, I come from my brother's.

Observ. The characteristic of the Objective case is often missed and marked by an apostrophe, especially in poetry, if the metre or rhyme require it. *Minden kődarabon mellyre szemem' vetem* (instead of *szememet*), on whichever stone I cast my eyes.

2. Instead of using the Verb „to have“, the Hungarians have a construction peculiar to themselves. The Subject as Possessor, is used with the Prepositional affix *nak* or *nek*, to, and the Object possessed with the Possessive Affixes; they are connected by means of the Verb *lenni*, to be, as a copula, of which there are used the third Person Singular, when the object possessed is but one, the third Person Plural, when the objects possessed are several: as, *az állatnak négy lába van*, the animal has four feet; *Károlynak*

*lesz könyve*, Charles will have a book; *az atyámnak voltak lovai*, my father had horses; *nekem vannak madaraim*, I have birds.

Observ. In negative sentences the Adverb *nem*, not, *sem*, also not, and the Present Tense *van* and *vannak*, are contracted into: *nincs* and *nincsenek*, *sincs* and *sincsenek*. *Az állatnak nincs (nem van) esze*, the animal has no reason; *az atyámnak sincsenek (sem vannak) lovai*, neither has my father any horses (my father has also no horses.)

3. When Sentences are constructed so that the Object possessed is not expressed in the same sentence, but is either understood, or expressed in the preceding one, the Hungarians have another affix to express Possession, the *é*, which in such cases is added to the Substantive representing a Possessor. If the Objects possessed be more than one the characteristic *i* of the plural affixes, is also added.

Such constructions always take place when the question: *kié* and *kiéi* whose? or whose are — ? is asked: as, *kié ez a' kert*, whose is that garden? *a' királyé, a' herczegé nagyobb*, it is that of the king, the duke's (garden) is larger; *Károly, te sok könyvet rontasz, a' bátyádét bemocskoltad, Jánosét széttépted, Erzsiet pedig szétvágta*. Charles, you destroy many books, you have soiled that of your brother, torn that of John, and cut in two that of Elizabeth.

## C. Of the Prepositional Affixes.

It may be remarked, as a general rule, that of two or more Substantives, or words used instead of Substantives, all belonging to the Subject of the Sentence, only the latter one receives the Affix: as, *Hunyadi Mátyás' magyar királynak halála után*, after the death of Matthew Hunyadi, king of Hungary.

## α. Of the use of Prepositional affixes in general.

*ba, be*, in (with, by), to the question where to?

1. The Verbs: *avatkozik*\*) to interfere, *keveredik* to become entangled, *kezd* to begin, *vág* to hew into, *üt, csap*, to strike any one, *kap* to lay hold of, *öltöz* to dress, *öltözködik* to dress one's self, *tesz* to put, *telik* to come to, to elapse, — and similar ones, are constructed by means of this affix. *Okos ember nem avatkozik más' dolgába*, a prudent man does not interfere with the business of others; *nagy fába vágta a' fejszét*, he hewed with his ax a large log (he undertook a business too difficult for him) *a' fejébe'tette*, he took (put) it in his head.

2. To these may be added the idiomatic expressions: *belé szeretni* to fall in love; *nyavalyába*

---

\*) The Verbs mentioned are all given in their 'radicals (third person Singular Number), in order to distinguish Medial ones from the Active and Neuter.



*esni*, to fall sick; *búba merülni*, to grieve one's self.

*ban*, *ben*, in, of, at, with; used to the question where? when relating to place.

4. The Verbs: *hiszik* to believe. *bízik* to trust, *gyönyörködik* to be delighted, *serénykedik* to be steady (industrious), *kevélykedik* to be proud, to glory, and their synonymes, or Verbs of a contrary meaning, are constructed with their Objective Substantive by means of *ban*, *ben*. *A' Keresztyn egy Istenben hiszik*, Christians believe in one God; *Hunyadi János hős tetteiben kevélykedett, de nem születése' rangjában*, John Hunyadi gloried in heroical deeds, but not in the rank of his birth; *nincs kétség benne*, there is no doubt of it.

2. The affix *ban*, *ben* is used in the expressions: *tisztében áll*, it belongs to his office; *kötelességében áll* or *van*, it is his duty.

3. The Adjectives: *jártas* experienced, *biztos* sure, *ügyes* clever, *tudós* learned, *bűnös* guilty, *ártatlan* innocent, *gyanús* suspicious, *tudatlan*, ignorant, *járatlan*, *tapasztalatlan* inexperienced, *telhetetlen* insatiable, *tehetetlen* unable, *állhatatos* constant, *állhatatlan* inconstant, *rendetlen* disorderly, *lassú* slow, govern Substantives with the affix *ban*, *ben*: as, *Hannibal jártas volt a' hadjáratban*, Hannibal was experienced in the art of war.

4. To the question when? the affix *ban*, *ben* is used in phrases similar to: *menőben*, going,

*menőben voltam*, I was going; *jövőben*, coming, *indulóban*, to be about to depart, *bujdosóban* when wandering, *pusztulóban* perishing, dilapidating, *hajdanában* formerly, *közelében* near, and *ellenében* opposite.

Sometimes the Verbal Adjectives of *t*, *ott*, *ett*, *ött*, are used with the possessive affixes and the affix *ban*, *ben*: as, *messze jártamban kifáradtam*, walking a long way I became tired; *a' Duna' mentében*, along the Danube.

*ból*, *ből*, of, from, out of, with; the contrary of *ba*, *be*; is used to the question whence? out of what? *A' templomból jövök*, I come from church; *a' zsebéből vette*, he took it out of his pocket. It is used especially:

1. With the Verbs: *ered* to be derived, to spring, to descend, *szeret* to love, *utál* to detest, *gyűlöl* to hate, *sajnál* to pity.

*Szent lesz minden hozzád irt dalom,  
Mert hisz azok a' mennyből erednek  
kék szemedből angyalom. — Petőfi.*

Sacred all the songs of mine will be, which  
are addressed to thee.

For they are derived from heaven,  
From thy blue eyes, my love (my angel).

2. When an outward movement, or a transition from one condition into another, is meant: as, *a' városból elment*, he departed from town; *a'*

*kereskedőből hajós lett*, the merchant became a sailor.

3. When the cause of any thing is to be expressed: as, *fösvénységből nem is eszik*, he does not eat because of his covetousness.

4. Instead of *szerint* according to, with the Substantives *rendelés* order, *parancs* command, *meghagyás* commission, *tanács* advice: as, *az atyám' meghagyásából*, according to the commission of my father.

5. When a part is taken away from its whole. *A' kenyérből szelt egy karajt*, he cut a slice of bread; *a' magyar csak jó borból iszik*, Hungarians drink (of) good wines only.

*ért*, for, for the sake; a causal Prepositional affix is used:

1. To the question *miért?* what for? why? *A' hazáért meghalni szép*, it is fair (noble) to die for one's country; *barátink sokat tesznek értünk*, our friends do much for our sake.

2. Instead of *helyett*, instead. *Érted eszik*, he eats instead of thee; *a' fiú a' síkra szállott az atyáért*, the son went to battle instead of his father.

3. *Miatt*, because of, is sometimes exchanged with *ért*. *Érttem* (instead of *miattam*) *ne búsulj*, do not grieve for me.

*hoz*, *hez* or *höz*, to, by the side of, to the question *hová?* whither? Therefore, it often may be

exchanged with *mellé*, by the side of: as, *az asztalhoz állítja a' széket* or *az asztal mellé állítja a' széket*, he places the chair by the side of the table.

It is especially used:

1. With the Verbs: *közelít* to approach, *ragaszkodik* to persist (in), *kapcsol* to fasten, *köt* to bind, figuratively to depend upon, *szít* to be attached, *simúl* to cling, and the synonymes. *Ki jót tenni akar, nem köti magát körülményekhez*, he who wishes to do good does not depend upon circumstances; *az ember gyakran ahhoz ragaszkodik, a' mi neki ártalmas*, men often persist in things injurious to themselves.

2. With the Verbs: *tud* to know, *ért* to understand, *fog* to begin, *mér* to apportion, *szab* to adapt, *alkalmaz* to accommodate, to suit, *lát* to see, to do, to attend, to urge, *nyúl* to touch, to stretch out the hand. *Annyit ért a' dologhoz mint a' lúd a' muzsikához*, he knows as much about it as a goose about music; *a' munkához méretik a' jutalom*, reward is apportioned to labour.

3. When likelihood, becomingness, or relationship is to be expressed: as, *az elefántot a' szúnyoghoz nem kell hasonlítani*, the elephant is not to be compared to a gnat; *ferfúhoz nem illik a' tunyaság*, indolence does not become a man.

4. With the Adjectives: *kegyes* gracious, kind, *nyájas* polite, *kemény* severe, *szigorú* severe,

*igaz* true, *hamis* deceitful, *hív* faithful, *hívtelen* faithless, *szives* cordial, kind, *szívtelen* hard-hearted, unkind, *kegyetlen* cruel, *rosz* bad, *jó* kind, *illő* becoming, *illendő* proper, *hasonló* like, *rokon*, *atyafi* related, kindred, *közel* near, and the Post-position: *képest* in comparison with, in consideration of. *Hunyadi János mindég hív maradt királyához*, John Hunyadi remained faithful for ever to his king. —

*ig*, till, until, to (relating to place), to the questions: what distance? how far? — to time to the question: how long? *meddig?* as, *Pestről Bécsig 38 mérföld*, from Pest to Vienna there are 38 miles; *két napig tartott a' csata*, the battle lasted two days; *a' harminczéves háború harmincz esztendeig tartott*, the thirty-years' war lasted for thirty years. —

*kép*, *képen*, *ként*, as, like; both affixes express likelihood; the former is also used as a Substantive meaning figure, face, or form: as, *atyakép viselte magát*, he behaved as a father; *sasként lebegett a' légben*, it hovered in the air like an eagle.

It is often used instead of *gyanánt*, for, *szerint*, according, *módra*, in the manner, like, *mint*, as. *Sok europai országokban vadakképen üldözik egymást az emberek*, in many European countries men persecute each other like savages. —

*n*, *on*, upon, at, to the question where? — This



Prepositional affix is used with the Plural form of Substantives, the *k* being exchanged with *in*; thus from, *az asztalok*, the tables, is formed *az asztalon*, on the table; *a' tükör* the mirror, *a' tükrök* the mirrors, *a' tükrön* on the mirror.

1. The Verbs: *gondolkozik* to consider (to think), *okoskodik* to philosophize; *tanácskozik* to consult (have a consultation), *függ* to depend, *lóg* to dangle, to bob, *csügg* to hang, *tart* to keep (on) are constructed with this Prepositional affix. *Azon gondolkozik hogy miképen szerezhessen pénzt*, he considers how to earn money; *a' kormányok nem tanácskoznak mindég az ország' javán*, governments do not always consult about the best interest of the country.

2. The Verbs: *búsúl* to be afflicted, *töprenkedik* to be alarmed, to fret, *boszankodik* to be angry, *sír* to cry, to weep, *kesereg* to be grieved, *álmélkodik* to muse, *bámúl* to be astonished, *nevet* to laugh, *mosolyog* to smile, *veszekedik* to quarrel, *vitáz* to dispute, and similar ones govern the Objective Substantive with this Prepositional affix. *A' nép sírt Mátyás király' halálán*, people wept on the death of King Matthew; *az örökösök rendesen összevesznek az örökség elosztásán*, the heirs commonly are disunited about the division of the inheritance.

3. The Postpositions *által* and *át* over, *keresztül* across, *kívül* without, *belül* within, *alúl* un-

derneath, *felül* above, over, *innen* this side, *túl* beyond are constructed with their Substantives by means of the affix *n*. *Honának a' határán túl bolyong a' hazafi*, beyond the boundaries of his country the patriot is wandering about; *Pest a' Dunán innen fekszik*, Pest stands on this side of the Danube.

4. The affix *n* is used in the expressions: *azon van* to endeavour, *rajta kap* to take in the very act, *rosz néven ven-ni* to be displeased with, *jó névenven-ni* to be pleased with, *féken tart* to bridle. —

*nak*, *nek*, to, (of), towards, against; to the questions to whom? or for whom? This affix is also used to replace the Genitive and the Dative cases of other European languages.

a. In order to express the construction of the Genitive or Possessive case, the Substantive, when required to be used in the Possessive case, receives the affix *nak* or *nek*, and the Substantive expressing the Object possessed is used with the Possessive affix of the third Person; as, *a' fiúnak a' könyve*, the boy's book; *a fiúnak a' könyvei* the boy's books.

When the Substantive is required to be used in the Possessive case of the Plural, the *nak* or *nek* is added to the Plural of the Substantive, and the Possessive affix of the third Person of the Plural

is then used instead of that of the Singular. *A' fiúknak a' könyveik*, the books of the boys; *az állatoknak az életük* the life of animals; *a' városoknak a' lakosaik*, the inhabitants of the towns; *a' bíráknak az igazságuk*, the justice of the judges.

Observ. 4. The affix *nak* or *nek* is generally neglected and marked by an apostrophe; in this case the article *az* or *a'* is missed before the Substantive used with the Possessive affix: as, *Szent István' koronája*, the crown of St. Stephen.

Observ. 2. When the Genitive case is placed after the Substantive representing the Object possessed, or when several Possessive cases follow each other, the affix *nak*, *nek* must be expressed in the last one: as, *az atyám' testvéré-nek a' házában voltam*, I have been in the house of my father's brother (my father's brother's house); *hadjai a' Dunának a' Tiszának (Berzsenyi)* the waves of the Danube and Tisza; the same takes place when the Possessive Case is separated from its Substantive: as, *a' leánynak, a' kit láttam, szép szemében, (Petöfi)* in the beautiful eyes of the girl that I have seen.

Observ. 3. When names of towns, rivers, mountains, and places are constructed by the Possessive Case with their respective Nouns common, the Prepositional affix *nak*, *nek* is neglected. *Buda' városa*, the town of Buda, *Szent Gellért' hegye*, the mountain of St. Gerard, *Tisza' folyója*, the river Tisza.

Observ. 4. The Prepositions: *alatt* under, *felfelt* above, *mellett* by the side of, *megett* behind, *közepett* between, *alá* under, amongst may be constructed by means of the affix *nak, nek*, like Substantives. *A' víznek alatta vagyon*, it is underneath the water.

b. The affix *nak, nek* is used instead of the Dative case to the questions to whom? for whose benefit or loss? Especially:

1. With the Verbs: *ad* to give, *tulajdonít* to attribute, *enged* to yield, *ígér* to promise, *odaszán* to destine (to design for), *ajánl* to offer, *fizet* to pay, *jelent* to announce, and those of similar meaning. *Sokat tulajdonítunk emberi ügyességnek, mi valóban a' szerencse műve*, we attribute many things to human skill, which really are the work of Fortune.

2. With the Verbs: *vél* to think, *talál* to find, to be of opinion, to believe, *sejt* (to divinate) to forebode, *gyanít* to suspect, to presume, and their synonymes. *Tolvajnak gyanítom*, I suspect him of being a thief; *jónak véltem Párisba utazni*, I believed it to be well to go to Paris; *a' katona romlottnak találván a' puskáját azt eldobta*, the soldier finding his musket was spoiled threw it away.

3. With the Verbs: *Tanácsol, javasol* to advise, *ellenez* to dissuade, to oppose, *parancsol* to

command. *Az atya ellenzette a' fiának a' házasságot,* the father opposed his son's getting married.

4. With the Verbs: *árt* to hurt, *beszámít* to impute, *bead* to present (to hand in), *használ* to be useful, *hisz* to believe (to give credit), *hízelkedik* to flatter, *ízen* to send word, *kinálkozik* to offer, *köszön* to thank, *látszik*, to seem, *megvall* to confess, *örül* to be pleased, *rémlik* to appear, to seem, *tartozik* to owe, *világít* to give light, *ízlik* to taste, *készül* to prepare, *kell* must, *illik* to become, *tetszik* to please, to seem, *fáj* to smart, to ache, *jól esik* to enjoy (a meal,) to be of advantage, and the Verbs meaning denomination or election: as, *magának használ*, *a' ki mással jót tesz*, he who does good to others is useful to himself; *a' hadvezér örül a' győzelemnek*, the general is pleased with the victory; *útnak készül*, he is preparing for a journey; *Hunyadi Mátyás magyar királynak választott*, Matthew Hunyadi has been elected king of Hungary; *ezt a' fiút Károlynak híják*, this boy is called Charles.

5. With the Adjectives: *adós* indebted, *alkalmas* and *alkalmatos* convenient, suitable, *ártalmas* injurious, *hasznos* useful, *illő* fit, *jó* good, *rossz* bad, *káros* prejudicial, *kedves* dear, affectionate, *kellemes* agreeable, *kényelmes* commodious, comfortable, *lehető* possible, *lehetetlen* impossible, *szükséges* necessary, *szabad* allowed, allowable, *unalmas* tedious, *üdvös* salutary, *való* fit for,



good for, *született* born (for), *termett* grown (for): as, *ő katonának született*, he is born for a soldier; *az embernek lehetetlen mindent tudni*, it is impossible for men to know every thing.

c. When a direction, aim or movement towards an object is indicated, the affix *nak* or *nek* is used with the Substantive representing the object: as, *a' várnak irányozta az ágyút*, he directed the gun towards the fortress; *neki szegzi a' puskát* he aims at him (with a gun); *útnak indult*, he went on journey; *Hunyadi a' seregével Törökországnak ment*, Hunyadi went against Turkey with his army.

b. *Lenni*, to be, and *venni*, to take, are constructed with the affix *nak*, *nek*, when, in English, the Predicate or the Object of the sentence might be constructed with as or like. *Jónak lenni nehéz*, to be good is difficult (to be as a good man is...); *a' szegénynek barátja lenni discő*, it is glorious, to be a friend to the poor; *rosznak vette*, he took it evil (as evil meant). —

e. Sometimes this affix is used instead of: *ül* for, *gyanánt*, as: as, *katonának szánta magát*, he resolved to be a soldier; *lónak néztem*, I mistook it for a horse (I considered it as a horse); instead of *ló gyanánt néztem*, and *katonául szánta magát*.

*felé* towards: as, *falunak ment*, he went towards the village, instead of *a' falu felé ment*.

*ra*, (on, at): as, *ivásnak adta magát*, he delivered himself to drunkenness, instead of *ivásra adta magát*.

f. The Adverbs: *elibe* before, *felibe* above govern the objective Substantive with *nak*, *nek*. *Az asztalnak elibe állítja magát*, he places himself before the table.

g. In the expressions: *neki búsúl*, to despair, *neki keseredik*, to be exasperated, and *neki esik*, to fall to. —

\* *nál*, *nél*, at, by; used to the question where? *A' nagy bátyámnál van az én óráim*, my watch is at my uncle's. It is used especially:

1. In constructions with the Verbs: *lakik* to dwell, to live (lodge), *mulat* to stay, *fog*, *kap* to seize, *ragad* to lay hold of: as, *hajánál fogta*, he seized him by his hair; *kezénél ragadta*, he laid hold of his hand; *én a' nagynénémnél lakom*, I live at my aunt's.

2. After the comparative degree, instead of *mint*, than: as, *nincs szebb virág a' rózsánál*, there is no more beautiful flower than the rose, — instead of *mint a' rózsá*; — *London nagyobb város Bécsnél*, London is a larger town than Vienna.

3. Instead of *mellett* near, by the side of, and *között* amongst; as, *a' Dunánál van egy város*, instead of *a' Duna mellett van egy város*, near the Danube is a town.

4. In the expressions: *minél fogva*, in con-

sequence of what, *annál fogva*, in consequence of that, *ennél fogva*, in consequence of this.

Observ. When the object compared is expressed by a Personal Pronoun, instead of a Substantive, the affix *nál* is used pleonastically: as, *a' bátyám nálam-nál nagyobb*, instead of *a' bátyám nagyobb nálam*, my elder brother is taller than I. —

*ra* and *re*, on, at; to the question whither? as, *az asztalra tettem a' könyvet*, I have put the book on the table.

Especially:

1. The Verbs: *irigykedik* to envy, *haragszik* to be angry, *agyarkodik* to be in wrath, *hat* to influence, *parancsol* to command govern the Substantive expressing the Person with the affix *ra* or *re*; as, *a' tanító hat a' tanítványaira*, the teacher influences his pupils; *a' katonatiszt gyakran a' közemberre parancsolja a' vitézséget*, the officer of the army often commands the private to be brave.

2. *Becsül* to value, to esteem, and its synonyms are constructed with the Substantive of price, by means of *ra*, *re*. *Három forintra becsüli a' fél vékát*, he values the bushel at three florins.

3. *ÍtéL* to sentence, and *kárhoztat* to condemn govern the Substantive expressing punishment,

with the affix *ra* or *re*. *Halálra ítéltetett*, he was sentenced to death.

4. The Verbs: *kér* to ask, to beg, *esküszik* to take an oath, *fogad* to bet, *sürget* to urge, *felszólít* to call up, to summons, *kényszerít* to force, *tanít* to teach, *oktat* to inform, to instruct, to admonish, *biztat* to animate, *vezet* to lead, *csábít* to entice, *figyelmeztet* to remind, *vigyázik* to be attentive, *néz* to look (at), *tekint* to glance, *törekedik* to exert one's self, *iparkodik* to endeavour, *igyekezik* to contend, *szán (magát)* to resolve, to make up one's mind, *ajánl* to recommend, when transitive, are constructed with the objective Case of the Person, the Substantive representing the Object receives the affix *ra* or *re*: as, *a' körülmények munkára kényszerítik az embert*, circumstances compel men to work; *a' Spártaiak hazafiságra intették a' fiatalságot*, the Spartans admonished their youths to patriotism.

5. When the change of any condition, the division of a whole into its parts is to be expressed, the Substantive or Adjective denoting the changed condition or the parts divided is used with the affix *ra* or *re*: as, *az idő melegre változott*, the weather (is changed into warm) became warm; *jobbra fordúlt a' dolog*, things changed into (for the) better; *Magyarország négy kerületre oszlik*, Hungary is divided into four districts.

6. *Emlékezik* to recollect, to remember, *bámúl*

to stare at, *gondol* to think of, govern the objective Substantive with the affixes *ra*, *re*: as, *igen jól emlékezem azon tette*, I remember the deed very well; *Arra nem gondoltam volna*, I should not have thought of it.

7. The Adjectives *alkalmas* fit (for), *képes* capable, *hajlandó* inclined, *kellő* proper, agreeable, *való* to be for, *képtelen* unable, *alkatmatlan* unfit govern the Substantive with *ra*, *re*: as, *az ember inkább hajlandó a' vétékre mintsem az erényre*, people are more inclined towards vice than towards virtue; *tanult ember nem mindenre alkalmas*, a learned man is not fit for every thing.

8. The Participles *nézve* and *tekintve*, in consideration of, regarding, are constructed with *ra* and *re*: as, *testi alkotásukra nézve az állatok négy fő rendre feloszlanak*, in consideration of the structure of the body, animals are divided into four principal orders.

Obs. *Nézve* always follows the Substantive with the Prepositional affix *tekintve* may precede the Substantive when emphasis requires it.

9. The affix *ra* or *re* is used in order to limit time and extension of space. — *Estére harangoznak*, the bells are rung for the evening; *négyszáz mérföldre terjed az ország' határa*, the boundaries of the realm extend 400 miles.

10. *Ra*, *re* is also used instead of the Postpositions: *felé* towards, *jobbra* to the right (instead of



*jobbfelé*), *ellen* against, *szerint* according: as, *a' Németre ment*, he went against the Germans, *nyulakra vadász*, he hunts hares; *paraszt módra bán vele*, he behaved to him in the manner of a peasant, instead of *paraszt mód szerint*...

44. If Verbs be compounded with *ra*, *re* or *fel*, they are constructed by means of the Prepositional affix *ra* or *re*: as, *felment a' heggyre* he went on the mountain; *rálőtt a' nyúlra* <sup>he shot at the</sup> hare.

*ról*, *ről*, from, downwards, has a contrary meaning to *ra* or *re*, and is used to the question where from? as, *a' fáról lehül a' levél*, the leaves fall from the tree.

It is used especially in constructions:

1. With the Verbs: *felejtkezik* to forget, *aggódik* to be anxious, *gondoskodik* to care for, *gondolkozik* to meditate, *emlékezik* to remember, *meggyőződik* to be convinced, *tudósít* to inform, *tudakozódik* to enquire: as, *jótéteményekről soha nem kell felejtkezni*, benefits must never be forgotten; *a' történetíró a' régi nemzetek' hőstetteiről tudósít benünket*, the historian informs us of the heroical deeds of ancient nations.

2. With all Verbs compounded with *le*, down, and such as express a motion downwards: as, *leszállt a' szekérről* he descended from the coach; *leszaladt a' dombról*, he ran down the hill.

3. With the Adjectives: *híres* renowned, *nevezetes* famous, *ismeretes* known, and similar ones: as,

*déli Amerika drágaköveiről nevezetes*, South America is famous for its precious stones.

4. Instead of the Postpositions: *felől*, from above, and *ból*, out of: as, *ő faluról jön*, he comes from the village, instead of *faluból*. —

*stúl*, *stül*, together with, means accompaniment, it is adnexed to the Substantive by means of the vowel which precedes the Plural *k*. *Feleségestül, gyermekestül elutazott*, he departed, together with his wife and children.

Instead of *stúl*, *stül*, the affix *tól*, *től* is now and then used and added to the derivative Adjective instead of the Substantive: as, *második Lajos király lovastól elveszett*, king Lewis II perished, together with his horse.

*tól*, *től*, of, from, is used:

1. When a distance between two objects is to be expressed, or a removal of one object from another. *Az alma nem esik messze a' fától*, the apple does not fall far from the tree.

2. With Verbs meaning commencement, (relating to place or time), cause, dependency and derivation, and with *vár* to expect, *reményl* to hope, *kiván*, *akar* to desire, *kér* to petition, *követel* to demand, *fél* to fear, *megijed* to be frightened: as, *a' ki sokat ígér attól sokat várunk*, we expect much from those who promise a great deal; *az állat fél az embertől*, animals are afraid of man.

3. With the Medial Verbs: *ovakodik* to be care-

ful, to beware of, *idegenkedik* to be averse, *undorodik* to have an aversion, *tartózkodik* to abstain, *irtószik* to shudder: as, *rosz társasságtól inkább óvakodjál mint a' ragadozó állattól*, avoid (beware of) bad company more than a rapacious beast.

4. With Verbs meaning prohibition, distinction, difference, parting, degeneration, liberation, purification and privation: as, *a' levegő tisztul a' ködtől*, air becomes purified from the fog; *Magyarország ősi jogaitól megfosztatott*, Hungary has been deprived of its ancient rights.

5. *Tud* to know, *ért* to understand, *hall* to hear, are constructed with Substantives by means of *tól*, *től*. *Magától értetődik*, it is understood by itself.

6. Verbs of the Passive voice are constructed by means of the same Prepositional affix: as, *a' gyermekek szüleiktől szeretetnek*, children are loved by their parents; *a' világ az Istentől teremtetett*, the world was created by God.

Observ. To avoid a repetition of the same affix, the Postposition *által*, through, is used instead of *tól*, when the Verb is constructed with the same affix in the Active voice: as, *a' Törökök elijesztettek Magyarországtól Hunyadi által*, instead of *Hunyadtól*, the Turks were frightened away from Hungary by Hunyadi.

7. The Adjectives *üres* empty, *tiszta* pure, clear, *ment* free, *független* independent, govern

the Substantive with the affix *tól, től*. *Bár mindnyájan mentek volnánk elöitéletektől*, would to God we were all free from prejudices.

8. *Tól, től* is<sup>1</sup> used instead of *miatt* because of, on account of: as, *a' ködtől nem láthat*, he cannot see on account of the fog. —

*ül*, for (as), is used:

1. When reception into an office, rank or society is indicated. *Allodalmi titkáru<sup>l</sup> felvétetett*, he has been installed as (for) secretary of state.

2. Instead of *mint*, like, as: as, *parasztu<sup>l</sup> viselte magát*, he behaved like a peasant.

Obs. This affix is used especially to the question *hogyan beszél?* (in) what languages does he speak: as, *angolu<sup>l</sup> beszél*, he speaks English; *francziau<sup>l</sup> tud*, he knows French; etc.

*vá, vé*, into, an affix indicating a changed condition (transformation). *A' víz borrá<sup>\*)</sup> változott*, water has been changed into wine; *Niobe kövé változott*, Niobe was turned into a stone. —

*val, vel*, with:\*)

1. Verbs meaning association, conversation or the contrary of them, govern the objective Substantive with this affix: as, *velem egyezik*, he agrees with me; *Magyarország sokat küzdött*

\*) Instead of *borrá*.

\*\*) See Introduction, on assimilation.

*az osztrák önkénnyel*, Hungary has struggled a long time against Austrian despotism. To the above belong the Verbs: *kever* to mingle, to mix (mechanically), *vegyít* to mix (chemically), *egyesül* to unite: as, *tűz vízzel soha sem egyesül*, water and fire never unite together.

2. *Segít* to assist, *bővelkedik* to be in abundance, *bír* to possess, *megajándékoz* to make a present, *megjutalmaz* to reward are constructed by means of *val*, *vel*. *A' király megajándékozta népét törpe alkotmánygyal* the king made his people a present with a crippled constitution.

3. *Dicsekedik* to boast, *kevélykedik* to be proud, *pompázik* to glory, *él* to live upon, to use, *táplál* to nourish, *hizlal* to fatten, *kinál* to offer, *gyógyít* to cure, *szolgál* to serve, *kereskedik* to trade, *gazdálkodik* to economize, *fukarkodik* to be a miser, *szaporít* to increase, *fogyaszt* to consume, to lessen govern the objective Substantive with the affix *val*, *vel*: as, *az ember nem él mindig az eszével ámbár ő az egyetlen eszes állat*, man does not always use his intellect, although he is the only rational animal; *fával kereskedik*, he trades in wood; *száz forinttal szaporította a' jövedelmét*, he increased his income by a hundred florins.

The Verb *nevel*, to bring up, to maintain, to keep, is constructed either with the affix *n* or with *val*, *vel*: as, *kenyeren* or *kenyérrel neveli a' kutyáját*, he keeps his dog on bread.



4. *Cserél* to exchange, *fenyeget* to threaten, *rettent* to terrify, *rémít* to frighten, *vesződik* to trouble one's self, and its synonymes; *gondol*, to care for, *lelkesít* to animate, *bátorít* to encourage, *kecsegtet* to illude, to deceive, *bán* to treat (to use any body), *foglalkozik* to be occupied, *tartozik* to owe, *adózik* to pay govern the objective Substantive with this affix: as, *keveset gondol a' könyvekkel*, he cares little for books; *mindég olvasással foglalkozik*, he is always occupied with reading; *ki sokkal tartozik, annak sokat kell fizetni*, he who owes much, has much to pay.

5. Verbs compounded by *össze*, *egybe* and *együtt* (together), govern the Substantive with the affix *val*, *vel*. *Az öcsém összeveszett a' barátjával*, my brother fell out with his friend; *egybe gyűjtötte a' kezével*, he collected it with his hand (fingers).

6. The factitive Verbs govern the Substantive expressing the Person made active with this affix: as, *a' fiúval iratom a' könyvet*, I let the boy write the book (I have the book written by the boy); *a' szabóval ruhát csináltatunk*, we have our dresses made by the tailor.

7. The Adjectives *dús*, *gazdag* rich, *tele* full, *rakott* laden, *tömött* stuffed, *határos* bordering, *szomszédos* neighbouring, *rokon* kindred, *osztályos* participating in inheritance, *adós* indebted, owing, *köteles* being bound, obliged, *kéntelen* forced, *kész*

ready are constructed by means of *val, vel.* as, *három száz fonttal adós néki*, he owes him £300; *Magyarország Törökországgal határos*, Hungary is bordering on Turkey.

8. In comparisons, the Substantive or Adjective expressing the *quantity* or *quality* of comparison is used with the same affix: as, *a' mi kertünk hat öllel hosszabb a' tiéteknél*, our garden is 6 fathoms longer than yours; *a' Duna sokkal nagyobb mint a' Themze*, the Danube is much larger than the Thames.

9. When the means, the instrument by which any action is performed, or the price at which, and the quantity (measure) by which things are sold, is to be expressed, the affix *val, vel* is used. *A' régi Magyarok buzogánnyal harczoltak*, the ancient Hungarians fought with whirlbats (clubs); *százával árulják a' diót*, they sell nuts by the hundred; *két garasával adja az itét*, he sells them at two pence (two pence half penny) a quart.

10. To the question when? the Substantives of time are used with the affix *val, vel.* *Nappal nem látnak a' baglyok*, at day-time owls do not see; *éjjel hold világ van*, at night there is moonshine; *négy héttel ezelőtt Párisban voltam*, four weeks ago (before four weeks) I was at Paris.

Except: *télben*, in the winter; *nyáron*, in the summer; *délben*, at noon-time; *hajnalban*, at day-break.

Obs. The Substantive *kor*, age, is used also as an affix with Substantives of time, to the question when? as, *három órakor érkezett ide*, he arrived at three o'clock.

11. The Adverb *együtt*, together, governs the Prepositional affix *val*, *vel*. *A' nagy nényémmel együtt elutaztunk*, my aunt and I departed together.

### β. Of the affixes relating to place.

There being different affixes relating to place, answering to the questions where? whither? and whence? it will be useful to arrange them comparatively, and to mention the rules according to which they are to be used in regard to names of towns and countries.

Correlative affixes to the questions:

where	whither	whence
<i>n</i> , at, in	<i>ra</i> , to	<i>ról</i> , from
<i>ban</i> , at, in	<i>ba</i> , to	<i>ból</i> , from
<i>ott</i> , <i>ött</i> , at, in	<i>ra</i> , to	<i>ról</i> , from.

1. *n*, and consequently *ra* and *ról*, are used with names of towns having a final vowel, or when *b*, *cz*, *cs*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *gy*, *j*, *k*, *l*, *ly*, *p*, *r*, *s*, *sz*, *t*, *ty*, *z*, *zs*, are final: as, *Budán*, at Buda; *Pesten*, at Pesth; *Aradon*, at Arad.

The Exceptions are: *Zágráb*, *Győr*, *Eger*, *Módor*, the names of *Szombat* (*Rimaszombat*, *Nagyszombat* etc.), and those with *i* final, which receive *ban*, *ba* and *ból*.

2. The affix *ban* and its correlatives *ba* and *ból* are used:

a) with the names of parts of the world, of countries, districts, isles, environs, forests, and parks: as, *Európában négy császárság van*, there are four empires in Europe; *Angliában sok ipar-üző város van*, in England there are many manufacturing towns.

b) with the names of towns of foreign countries: as, *Londonban*, in London; *Párisban*, at Paris.

c) with the names of towns of Hungary terminating with *m*, *n* or *ny*. *Pozsonyban*, at *Pozsony* (Presburgh).

3. The affix *ott*, *ött* is used with names of towns which have a final *r*: as, *Fejérvárott*, at *Fejérvár*; *Győrött*, at *Győr* (Raab).

#### γ. Of the Adjectives (Participles) *való* and *levő* with affixes.

The Verbal Adjectives *való* and *levő*, the former a derivative from *van*, to be, the latter from *lesz* (*lenni*), to become, are used with affixes instead of “*van*, is, is for.” Especially:

1. *Való* is used to the questions whither? and whence? it is used: with the affix *nak* or *nek*, added to the Subject of the sentence when this is represented as a future possessor: as, *ez a' pénz az atyámnak való*, this money is for my

father; with *ra*, *re* and *ról*, *ről*, or *ba*, *be*, and *ból*, *ből*, added to the objective Substantive of the sentence; as, *ez a' gomb a' sipkámra való* this button is for my cap; *ez az alma arról a' fáról való*, this apple is from that tree.

As *ra* and *ról* relate to surface and outside, and *ba*, *ból*, to inwardness, the use of either of them will be decided by the meaning of the speaker, whether he mean to express a motion on or from a surface, or in or out of an Object. Thus, we say: *a' kereszt a' templomra való*, the cross is for (is to be put on) the roof of the church; and *ez a' kereszt templomba való*, this cross is for (is to be put inside of) the church; *ez a' fa az iskoláról való*, this wood is from (the top of) the school-building; and *ez a' fa az iskolából való*, this wood is from (out of) the school-building.

Instead of using derivative Adjectives (of proper Nouns) of *i*, we often use the Adjective *való* with the affix *ra*, *ról* or *ba*, *ból*, according as the name of the Place is constructed with *ra* or *ba*: as, *Pestről való ember ez*, instead of *ez az ember Pesti*, this is an inhabitant of Pesth; *Pozsonból való vagyok*, instead of *Pozsonyi vagyok*, I am from Pozsony (Presburgh).

2. *Levő* is used to the question where? with the affixes *ban*, *n*, and *nál*, the former two with names of Places, the latter in constructions similar to "at my father's, and with my



father,": *as, a' Pesten levő főiskola legelőször Nagyszombatban állíttatott fel*, the University at Pesth was first established at Nagyszombat; *a' bátyámnál voltam*, I have been at my brother's; *Károly a' barátjánál ebédelt*, Charles has dined with his friend.

*az atyámnál levő urak*  
(the gentlemen that are) & my father

D. Of the Adjective terminations: *i, nyi, s, ú and ü*.

The preceding terminations of derivative Adjectives are used with Substantives of quantity and quality, where in English the Substantive is used in the Objective case.

Quantity may relate to time and space. Distance may be expressed in measures of space as well as in measures of time.

1. To questions relating to extension and distance, the Substantive of measure is used with the affix *nyi*: *as, a' Duna sok mértföldnyi hosszú folyó*, the Danube is a river many miles long; *a' Calais' szorulatja 26 angol mértföldnyi széles*, the straits of Calais are 26 English miles wide; *Buda Pestről egy negyed órányi távol*, Buda is distant from Pesth a quarter of an hour.

Obs. When the Substantive of measure is used with the Adverb *távol*, far, or by itself without any other Adjective expressing quantity, it receives the affix *ra* or *re*, besides the Adjective termination *nyi*: *as, Esztergom fekszik a' Duna' jobb partján, Budától hat mértföldnyire*,

Esztergom is situated on the right bank of the Dunube 6 miles from Buda.

Obs. The Substantives *nap*, *hét*, *hónap*, *év*, *esztendő*, when indicating distance, are used in the Nominative case without the termination *nyi*.

2. To the question how long? the derivative affix *i* is added to the Substantive expressing the quantity of time. *Három napi járás*, a three days' walk; *négy heti munka*, a four weeks' work.

3. To the question how much? the Substantives following the Numerals are transformed into derivative Adjectives of a final *s*. *Hat holdas szántóföldet vett*, he has bought three acres of ground; *ez a' zsák két köblös*, this is a bag of two *köből* (4 bushels).

Quality is expressed by means of the derivative terminations *s*, *ú* and *ű*. Especially:

1. In order to express the age of things or persons, the Substantives of time are transformed into Adjectives by means of the terminative consonant *s*\*), the Adjective "old" being neglected. *Ez a' gyermek hat hónapos*, this child is six months old; *London több mint ezer éves*, London is more than a thousand years old.

2. In all other expressions of quality to the questions what? what sort of? the Substantives

---

\*) On the formation of them see the Derivation of Adjectives.

indicating the quality are transformed into Adjectives of *ú* or *ű*, when preceded by another Adjective: as, *ritka fényű férfi*, a man of rare qualities; *a' nagy hírű Hunyadi*, the well-renowned Hunyadi.

When a certain period of past time is comprehended, the Substantives indicating such a period are used with the possessive affix of the third person Singular: as, *hat hete hogy Londont elhagytam*, three weeks have elapsed since I left London.

The Expression: *ideje hogy menjünk*, it is time to go, belongs to the same rule.

### III.

#### **Of the use of the Different Forms of the Verb, and the different Parts of speech for connecting sentences.**

##### **A. Of the Forms of the Verb.**

##### **1. THE DEFINITE AND INDEFINITE FORMS OF THE ACTIVE VOICE.**

The Definite form of the Active voice is used as often as the object governed by the transitive Verb is determined by the speaker. The object is a certain determined one:

1. When the demonstrative Pronouns precede the Substantive. *Azt a' házat veszem*, I buy that house; *azon fiút látom, de nem azt keresem*, I see that boy, but I do not look for that one.

2. When the Substantive is used with the Possessive Affixes. *A' bátyám eladta a' könyveit*, my brother has sold his books; *fejét csóválja*, he shakes his head.

3. When the Personal Pronoun of the third person is used as an Object: as, *nem hallom őt, nem látjuk őket*. The Definite Pronouns: *magam* myself, *magad* thyself, *maga* himself, herself, itself, etc. require the same construction, when the Subject of the sentence is at the same time the Object: as, *az ember nem hallja maga magát*, it is impossible to hear one's self; *nem láthatom magamat*, I cannot see myself.

Obs. The Objective cases of the other Personal Pronouns are not constructed with the Definite form of the Transitive Verb. *Ha ma jössz hozzám csak engemet fogsz találni*, if thou comest to me to-day, thou wilt only find me.

4. When the Object of the sentence is a Proper name: as, *Cicerót olvasom*, I read Cicero; *Jánost hallom*, I hear John.

Obs. When Proper nouns are used instead of common Nouns as generic expressions, the Indefinite form of the transitive Verb is to be used

with them. *Mi időkben kevés Horatiust találunk*, in our time we find few Horaces; *Anglia Ciceróit nem emeljük annyira mint a' hajdani Rómáét*, we do not extol the Ciceros of England so much as that of ancient Rome.

5. It is plain from what has been said on the Article, that the Definite form must be used as often as the Article precedes the Objective case: as, *a' házat látom*, *a' szót hallom*, *a' levelet megírom*.

## 2. MOODS AND TENSES OF THE VERB.

### α. Moods of the Verb.

In regard to the Moods of the Verb, their use will depend upon the manner of speaking, the degree of certainty which the speaker manifests in his assertions, and the object or intention of the speaker.

When the Object of the sentence is a simple assertion or statement, not liable to any doubt or condition, the Indicative Mood must be used. *Károly tegnap elutazott*, Charles departed yesterday; *holnap hozzád fogok jönni*, I shall come to you to morrow.

When the sentence expresses a desire, wish, or command, and when a question is put the answer to which is doubtful, the Subjunctive Mood must be used. *Aldjon meg az Isten*, God



bless you; *én mondtam neki hogy menjen el*, I told him to go; *induljatok azonnal*, you (shall) start immediately; *nem tudom elmenjen-e vagy nem?* I know not whether he (better) go or not.

When the truth of a sentence depends upon uncertain conditions, or when the speaker is not convinced of its truth, the Conditional is used in Hungarian. *Ha ma jönneél akkor várnaalak*, if you come to-day I will wait for you; *azt mondja hogy elmenne*, he says that he would go; *halottam hogy ott lett volna*, I heard that he was there.

### β. Tenses of the Verb.

Regarding the Tenses in general, they are liable to the same rules as the English. Deviations from these rules are:

1. The Present Tense of the Indicative may be used instead of the Future; even the compound Future is very rarely used by the people, which seems to prove that the compound Future formed by means of “*fogok*” is of a European invention, and the Hungarian nation, according to the oriental character of its language, used only two Tenses, one for the present and future, and the other for the past time. *Ha ma este el nem jön*, if he will not come to night; *jövő évre elmegyek Párisba*, I shall go to Paris next year; *elmegyek* and *jön* are of the Present Tense.

2. The First Perfect, also called the Imperfect

Tense, is the Historical Past tense, and the Tense used in solemn speech, so also is the compound Perfect (Pluperfect) of the Indicative Mood; they are not used in familiar conversation, the Perfect Tense having gained the prerogative of both the preceding ones.

### γ. Future Tense of *and*, *end*.

The different forms of the Future radical of *and*, *end* (*várand*, *verend*) are not used very frequently either by the people, or by authors. The Present tense of it plays a great part in solemn speech, when any certainty or necessity of future action is supposed; this necessity then lies beyond the sphere of the active Subject itself; hence the Participle of this root implies the same meaning as the Latin of “*dus*”, viz, duty. In recent times this Tense has been introduced simply instead of the compound future.

### 3. PARTICIPLES.

Participles are forms of the Verb having no determined Personal relation.

The Participles formed by means of *ván*, *vén*, are those of the Present, and express simply the condition of the active Subject; they are not liable to any alteration whatever in regard to affixes. *Luther, Rómában látván a' pápa' bűnös életét, a' Romai Egyháztól elszakada*, Luther, seeing the

vicious life of the Pope at Rome, separated himself from the Roman church.

The Participle terminating in *va*, *ve* is that of the Past; it was formerly used with the possessive affixes *m*, *d*, *nk*, *tok*, *k*, and very likely gave origin to the Imperfect Tense, the *v* of the participle being neglected. In ancient Documents of Hungarian writing we find the constructions: „*És mi aluvánk elorozzák őtet* (*aluvánk* instead of *alva*), (we) having fallen asleep, they stole him secretly; *tévelgének nem tudvátok írást* (instead of *nem tudva*), not having known writing, you were liable to mistakes (erred). — At present it is used as a Participle of the Perfect; as,

*Elrémülve tekint, O temető, reád*

*A' tündér hatalom, (Berzsenyi)*

Glittering power looks alarmed at thee, O grave (trembles at thee...)

Observ. 4. The Participle of the Present is often used instead of that of the Passive: as,

*Buzdító katonás ruhát*

*Öltvén, lelke' nemes lángja kigerjedek* (Berzsenyi,)

Being dressed in encouraging soldier's dress, the noble flames of his soul burst forth.

Obs. 2. Instead of the Past Participle, or the Present Tense of the Ind. Mood of the Pass. Voice, the Past Participle of the Active may be used as a predicate of the sentence; in that case it has a plural form as well when the Subject of the sen-

tence requires it: as, *a' gyermekek szeretvék a' szüleiktől*, instead of *a' gyermekek szüleiktől szeretnek*, children are beloved by their parents.

Obs. 3. The same Participle is often used Adverbially with other Personal Verbs. *Válaink meg vannak rakva terhekkal*, our shoulders are laden with burdens; *meg van írva, roszt ne cselekedj*, it is written (as a command), thou shalt do no evil.

Obs. 4. The Participles and the Verbal Adjectives govern the objective Substantive with the same Affix as the primitive Verb: as, *a' győzelemhez szokott sereg nagyon is érezvén e' nap' csapását vissza'vonulásra készült*, the army, used to victory, sensible of the great loss of the day, prepared for retreat.

#### 4. THE INFINITIVE WITH AFFIXES.

The Infinitive of the Verb is used with the Possessive Affixes as often as some personal representation is connected therewith (when it is the appositum of the predicate of the sentence). Such representations take place:

When the Infinitive is connected with the Subject of the sentence by means of: *szabad* allowed, *nehéz* difficult, *könnyű* easy, *lehetetlen* impossible, *lehet* possible, and the impersonal Verb *kell*, to be obliged, the Subject then receives the affix *nak* or *nek*: as, *Károlynak szabad haza men-*

*nie*, Charles is allowed to go home; *nekem lehetetlen írnom*, it is impossible for me to write; *nekünk mennünk kell*, we are obliged to go.

The Affix *het* or *hat*, and the Impersonal Verb *lehet* are of the same meaning, the latter being a derivative Verbal root of *lenni*, to become, it might be questioned which expression be preferable, “*mehetek*” or “*mennem lehet?*”

The Construction with *lehet* is to be used when there is no *external obstacle*, and that with *hat* or *het*, when there is no deficiency in the active Subject itself; thus, *ki nem lehet mennem*, I cannot go out (when the door is locked); *ki nem mehetek*, I cannot go out (being ill).

#### B. Of terms of Periodical Constructions.

When simple sentences are constructed into periods, it may arise either that the same Subject relates to more than one Predicate (two simple sentences have the same Subject), then, in order to avoid badly sounding repetitions of the same Subject, we use relative Pronouns, — or that two different Subjects or Objects relate to the same Predicate and two different Predicates relate to the same subject, — or lastly that two sentences with different Subjects and Predicates are to be connected together, then the connections are effected by means of Conjunctions.



### 1. Of the Relative Pronouns.

The Hungarians distinguish three kinds of relative Pronouns: *ki* who, relative to persons, *melly* which, to irrational beings, *mi* what, to things inanimate. *Melly* and *mi* are often used promiscuously; the only leading principle may be remarked: as often as the objects related to are represented as individuals, or as definite ones, the use of *melly* is preferable, on the contrary, *mi* is used: as, *Hunyadi, ki akkoriban Törökországban volt, nem védhette magát azon alá-való rágalmazások ellen, a' mellyekkel a' roszelelkű Cilley őtet megtámadta; ambár tudta, mit mivel a' gonosz tanácsnok,....* Hunyadi, who at that time stayed in Turkey, could not defend himself against the calumnies with which the ill-natured Cilley attacked him; although he knew of the machinations of the malicious counsellor.

On the use of the Article with these Pronouns, see above.

When the relative Pronoun is followed immediately by its Substantive, *a' melly* or *melly* is used; it may then relate to persons or inanimate things. *A' melly férfiak áldozatul nem estek a' zsarnok' pallosának, azokat messze földön üldözé cselszövényivel,* those men who fell not as a sacrifice to the tyrant's sword, he persecuted by his intrigues in distant countries.

The relative Pronoun agrees with its Substantive in Number, receiving the affix which is governed by the Verb of which it is the object. *Soha ne ígérj, mit nem tarthatsz*, never promise what you cannot perform; *az emberek, a' kikkel rosztúl bántál*, the men whom you have ill-treated.

Obs. Although the Substantive is only used in the Singular Number after Numerals, yet the Pronoun relating to it is used in the Plural: as, *tíz katona, őket megfogtak*, ten soldiers whom they caught.

Correlative Pronouns are those which are not used separately, but, the one being used in the antecedent, the other cannot be omitted in the consequent. Such are: relative to quantity: *annyi*, so many, so much, — *a' mennyi*, as many, as much; relative to quality: *minő, millyen, milly*, what, what sort of, — *olly olyan* such (like-- like). These Pronouns form the link between the Conjunctions and the relative Pronouns, and are often expressed by means of Conjunctions, in foreign languages. *Annyi búzát hoztak a' várba, a' mennyit év' lefolyta alatt nem emészthetett volna a' várőrség*, they brought so (as) much corn into the fortress, as the garrison could not have consumed in the course of a year.

## 2. Of the Conjunctions.

Conjunctions are terms used to connect two different Subjects or two different Predicates of simple sentences, and also to join together two different simple sentences: as, my brother and Charles departed; Charles left Paris and Lyons; the garden is large but uncultivated; Charles went in the garden when William had his dinner.

The correlative Conjunctions are mentioned in the formal part. In consideration of the conjunctive and disjunctive ones is to be remarked:

regarding *és*, *meg*, and; — *meg* is used in order to comprehend two Objects under one collective notion, *és* is a mere copula of two words or sentences. *Három meg kettő öt*, three and two make five; *London és Páris nagy városok*.

*is*, also, has very often an ironical meaning, and that of boasting; in that case it is mostly translated by as well. *Francziaországban is utaztam*, I have been travelling in France as well.

When the copulatives “and, aswell —, as” are to be expressed, the Conjunction *is*, must be repeated in the consequent: as, *képedet is látom, szavadat is hallok*, I see thy face, and hear thy voice; *magyarúl is angolúl is beszél*, he speaks Hungarian as well as English.

*pedig* is of a disjunctive meaning, but is often

used as a copulative; hence it may be translated by and, but, though, yet, according to what the meaning of the sentence is. *Károly haza megy én pedig a' bálba megyek*, Charles is going home and I am going to the ball; *az öcsém el nem jött, pedig irt hogy el fog jönni*, my younger brother has not arrived, yet he has written to (inform) me he would come.

*ha*, if, when followed or preceded by a negation, is constructed with the Conjunction *is*, which is placed after the predicate of the sentence; constructions of that kind are always of a concessive meaning. *Mi sétálni nem megyünk, ha az idő szép is*, we shall not take a walk, though the weather be fine.

*sem* and *se* are used instead of *is nem*, *is ne*, and are accompanied by *nem* or *ne*, when neither and nor are to be expressed, in that case the negation is enforced by the use of *nem* or *ne*; when *sem* and *se* are used separately, the negative *nem* or *ne* cannot be used with them. *A' fiú sem a' leckéjét nem tanulta, sem az írását nem végezte el*, the boy has neither learned his lesson nor finished his writing; *Károly se fog elmenni*, neither will Charles go away.

*ne* is only used with the Subjunctive and Imperative Moods. *Ne menj*, do not go; *azt mondtam hogy ne tegyed*, I told you not to do it.

## IV.

**Of the consequence of Parts of Speech, or the arrangement of the words in a sentence.**

In arranging the parts of speech in a sentence, Emphasis is the leading principle to be considered; for this reason:

1. The Verb precedes all other parts of speech, if any particular Emphasis is placed on it: as, *megholt Mátyás király, oda van az igazság*, Dead is king Matthew (king Matthew is dead), (and) justice is lost.

Otherwise the Verb follows immediately that word of the sentence, on which the Emphasis is placed. *Károly tudja a' leczkéljét jól*, Charles knows his lesson well; *jól tudja Károly a' leczkéljét*, and *Károly jól tudja a' leczkéljét*, Charles knows his lesson well.

2. When any special Emphasis is placed on the Adjective, it generally follows its Substantive in the same Number and Case: as, *pénzt sokat nyert*, he won much money. In order to render the Emphasis conspicuous, the Adjective is joined with its Substantive by means of the Conjunction *pedig*: as, *az apám lovat vett, pedig szépet*, my father has bought a horse, and that a beautiful one.

If two or more Adjectives precede the Substantive, the one specifying the Substantive pre-



cedes it immediately: as, *egy szép magyar levelet irtam*, I have written a fine Hungarian letter; *a' hatalmas britt birodalom*, the mighty realm of Britannia.

4. If any Adjective, preceding a Substantive, be determined by any other word or words whatsoever, they precede the Adjective immediately. *A' velink elvre nézve rokon emberekkel szívesen társalkodunk*, we converse with pleasure with those who are of the same principle as we ourselves (with those related to us in regard to principle we willingly converse).

5. In regard to titles, the following arrangement is conformable to the genius of the Hungarian language: the Adjectives of distinction, *tekintetes* honoured, *méltóságos* right-honourable, *kegyelmes* gracious, etc. precede the whole title and are followed immediately by the predicative name of the family; after these is placed the surname, then the Christian name; the naming of the office or rank held by the person followed by the words *úr* Sir, Mister, *asszony* Mistress, or *asszonyság* ladyship, is placed last. *Méltóságos Onfalvi Olmosy Pál gróf úr*, the right-honourable the Earl of Onfalva Paul Olmosy; *Nagyságos Csevegháti Csevegg Erzsébet báróné asszonyság*, the right-honourable the lady Elisabeth Csevegg, baroness of Gseveghat.

6. In regard to Verbs compounded by the Ad-

verbs *fel, le, meg, el, vissza, össze*, etc., they are separable from their Verbs, and follow them as often as the Emphasis is placed on the preceding Substantive or the Verb itself; but if they are used in opposition to other Adverbs, or the Emphasis is put on them, they precede the Verb, from which they may be separated by the Conjunction of the sentence, or by the Verb *fog*, used as the Auxiliary of the Future Tense: as, *ki adta el a' lovat?* who sold the horse? but: *eladtad-e a' lovat?* hast thou sold the horse? *Mi el fogjuk adni a' lovunkat*, we shall sell our horse.

7. The negative Adverbs *nem* and *ne*, precede the Object or word denied. *Nem az atyám volt itt*, not my father has been here, and *az atyám nem volt itt*, my father has not been here. *Sem* and *se* may be placed after the Substantive, but they must precede the Verb; if *sem* or *se* be followed by *nem* or *ne*, *sem* is placed before the Substantive and *nem* before the Verb. *Sem én nem megyek falura, sem a' bátyám*, neither I nor my brother will go into the country; *se pénzt se ruhát nem ad*, he gives neither clothes nor money.

8. The Conjunctions: *noha, bár, ámbár*, although, though,  *mivel, minthogy*, because, *de*, but, *mintha*, as if, *miután*, after, *mielőtt*, before, *ha*, if, *hogy*, that, *mint*, as, *mielőlt*, as soon as, are used at the beginning of the sentence.

## ***Reading Exercises.***

**Hungarian Anecdotes, relating to the last war.**

„Comrade, (brother) teach me how to keep off the blows,“ said a recently levied hussar to a hero, who was well proved in battle. „Of what use would that be?“ asked the veteran; „my son do you but strike, and let the Austrians keep off the strokes.“

„Why don't you learn the military exercises in Hungarian?“ asked an ultra Magyar from a hussar-hero? it is detestable to hear the German command. — „Sir (my Sir),“ said the hussar, „if we were commanded in Hungarian I should understand, but my horse would not.“

„Surely I must confess, that I am apprehensive for my nation, I lose my heart when I think of it,“ — said Baron S., — who was well known secretly to belong to the antinational party, — after he had enumerated all his patriotic deeds before an officer of the hussars. — „It would be better, I think,“ said the hussar, „if you lose your head, you would be then freed from all anxiety (your poor soul then would be in repose).“

## **Olvasási gyakorlatok.**

### **Magyar mesélek az utolsó háborúból.**

„Bácsi, tanítson engem hogyan elcsapni a' kard-  
ütést,“ szolt egy huszár-ujonc egy hadedzett hu-  
szár-vitézhez. — „Minek az neked,“ felelé a' ha-  
dastyán, „fiam te csak üssed, hadd csapja el az  
ütést a' Német.“<sup>1)</sup>

„Hát miért nem tanuljátok magyar nyelven a'  
katonai gyakorlatokat? kérdi egy túlbuzgó Magyar  
az öreg huszár-vitéztől, „utálatos hallani a' német  
parancsszót!“ — „Uram,“ mond a' huszár, „ha  
magyarúl commandiroznak\*), én értem, de a' lovam  
nem érti.“<sup>2)</sup>

„Megvallom bizony, hogy nagy aggodalmam van  
házamról és nemzetemről, lelkem csügged ha rá  
gondolok,“ szol S— báró, kiről tudva volt hogy  
alattomban a' nemzetelleni párttal tart, — mintán  
egy huszár-tiszt előtt elősorolta volna hazafiúi tet-  
teit. „Bizony jobb volna ha teste csüggne, nyugalma  
lenne akkor szegény lelkének,“ mond a' huszár.<sup>3)</sup>

---

\*) Commandiroz-ni is commonly used by the soldiers  
instead of parancsnokol-ni.

In the sanguinary battle at Pétervására, a hussar had been taken prisoner, caught in the fact of splitting the helmet and head of an Austrian curassier. The hussar, as prisoner, was brought before an Austrian officer, to whom the captors narrated the hussar's deed in such a manner as to make the officer's hair stand on end. — „Are there any more of you, provided with such infernal arms?“ asked the officer. „Why, Sir,“ said the hussar, „it depends upon what humor the hussar is in, accordingly he cleaves with his sword to the chin or to the stomach of his enemy.“

After the occupation of Pest, the Austrian commander had quartered his soldiers in the surrounding villages; the village magistrate there was bound to confess on his conscience the disposition of the inhabitants. At one of these confessional proceedings with a village-magistrate, as the officer asked him, encouragingly, to tell whether the inhabitants of the village were well disposed? — the magistrate innocently declared: „Sir, they are all honest Hungarians, except the priest who is a German (Austrian) and who cannot tolerate the Hungarians, because, — the steward of our village says —, he is a black-yellow.<sup>4)</sup>

After the battle of Kápolna the Austrian



A' pétervásárai ütközetben egy huszár épen tetten fogatott el, midőn egy osztrák vértessnek a' sisakját a' fejével együtt ketté hasítá. A' huszár, mint fogoly, egy osztrák tiszt elibe vezetetik, kinek az elfogók hajborzadásig festik a' huszár tettét. „Van-e még több ilyen ördögkarú köztetek,” kérdi a tiszt: „Az az, Uram, a' minő kedvben van a' huszár, úgy aztán az ellenségének vagy az áláig, vagy a' gyomráig eresztí be a' kardját,” mond a' huszár.

Pest' megszállása után az osztrák vezér a' körülette fekvő falvakba beszállásolá katonáit, hol rendszeren a' biró' lelkiismeretére kötetett kivallani a' lakosok' lelkületét. Egy falusi birónak illyféle vallatása' alkalmával, amint az osztrák tiszt biztatólag megszólítja, hogy mondaná, ha valljon jó lelkületűek-e a' falu' lakosai, amaz úrtatlanságában kifakad: „Uram mindnyájan becsületes magyar emberek, kivéve a' papot, a' ki német, és ki azért nem szívelheti a' Magyarat, mondja a' tiszttartó úr, mert feketesárga.”

A' kápolnai csata után az osztrák sereg vissza-

army, being driven back towards Pest, threatened to punish with stick and bullet all those who dared to divulge, that the gloriously victorious army of the Emperor was retreating. A journeyman, travelling from Drebeczen towards Pest, crossed the Austrian camp; (on his way) being asked by some Austrian officers, whether he knew any thing of the Hungarians? — „Of course I do,“ said he, and that is, they are retreating; „where to? where to?“ asked the former with delight; „all towards Pest,“ answered the journeyman.

„The two weeks last very long,“ said Lord D., — in April 1849 —, to an Austrian colonel, who was quartered at his house: — „how should they not last long with such a people, who do not mind the strategetic flank-movements, but run with fixed bayonets even against the cannons.

„Whence shall we get so many arms?“ asked the officers of general Bem, when in Transylvania he levied soldiers with great urgency. „The Russians have just now brought 30,000 proved muskets into the country, of which we will take possession,“ answered Bem. — The brave leader has redeemed his promise.

---

szorongatván Pest felé, bottal és golyóval fenyegetett mind azoknak, kik híresztelni mernék, hogy a' dicsőségesen győzedelmes császári sereg visszavonúl. Egy Debreczenből Pestre utazó vándorlegény az osztrák táboron keresztül utazott; utjában osztrák tisztektől kérdeztetve, ha tud-e valamit a' Magyarok felől? „Tudok bizony,” mond ő, „még pedig, hogy visszavonulnak.” „Merre? Merre?” kérdezik örömmel az előbbie; „mind Pest felé,” mond a' vándor.

„Sokáig tart a' két hét,” szolt D. nagysága, — az 1849 évi Aprilisben, — a' nála beszállásolt osztrák ezredes úrhoz: „hogya is ne tartson, felelt az ezredes úr, olyan néppel ki nem ügyel a' hadtudomány szerint tett oldalmozgásokra, de szuronyt szegezve neki rohan még az ágyúnak is.”<sup>5)</sup>

„Honnan veszünk annyi fegyvert?” kérdezik Bem tábornagy' katona-tisztjei, midőn erélyesen vjjonczoztatott Erdélyben. Épen most hozott az Orosz harmincz ezer már próbált puskát az országba, a' mit majd tőle átveszünk, felelt Bem; 's a' derék vezér be is váltotta szavát.

### Remarks.

1) *Bácsi*, little, and dear brother, is commonly used in addressing elder persons who are on friendly terms with us; especially, children address the friends of the family with *Bácsi*.

2) The Hungarian army having being considered as a supplementary part of the imperial army, the German language therein was introduced as the language of command, and was retained in the old regiments in 1848—9.

3) The quibble is in: *lelkem csügged*, and *teste csüggne* (to drop the soul, and to suspend (hang) the body) to lose the heart, and lose the head.

4) Black-yellow; the colours of the Austrian banners are black and yellow, and people who were of the Austrian party were therefore called black-yellows.

5) When, in the autumn of 1848, prince Windischgrätz received the command over the Austrian army in order to stifle the Hungarian revolution in its birth, he promised, to the court of Vienna, to extirpate the Hungarian revolutionary party in the course of a fortnight.

---

# VOCABULARY

## TO THE COMPOSITIONS.

(Abbreviations: S., Substantive; coll., collective; A., Adjective; n., numeral; v., verbal; Adv., Adverb; C., Conjunction; V., Verb; V. n., Verb neuter; V. a., Verb active; Po., Postposition; Po. a., Postpositional affix; Prep. Preposition; Pr., Pronoun; a., adjective; Part., Participle.

### I. Hungarian-English.

#### A.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <i>A'</i> and <i>az</i> , Art. ( <i>a'</i> before Substantives beginning with a vowel), the. | <i>Ahogy</i> , C., as.                                |
| <i>Ablak</i> , (plur. <i>ablakok</i> ), S., window.  | <i>Ahol</i> , Ad., where, there.                      |
| <i>Abrosz</i> , S., table-cloth,   | <i>Ajándékoz-ni</i> , V., to make a present.          |
| <i>Ácsmasterség</i> , S., carpenter's trade.   | <i>Ajtó</i> , S., door.                               |
| <i>Ad-ni</i> ,*) V., to give.  | <i>Akár</i> —, <i>akár</i> , C., either —, or.        |
| <i>Adós</i> , S., debtor.  | <i>Akar-ni</i> , V., to wish, to be willing, to will. |
| <i>Adósság</i> , S., debt.   | <i>Akarat</i> , S., will.                             |
| <i>Agyonlő-ni</i> , V., to kill by shooting.   | <i>Akaratlanút</i> , Adv., unwillingly.               |
| <i>Ágyu</i> , S., cannon.  | <i>Alá</i> , Po., (to the question whither), under.   |
|  | <i>Alak</i> , S., shape, form.                        |
|  | <i>Alapít-ani</i> , V., to found.                     |
|  | <i>Alapító</i> , S., founder.                         |

---

\*) The Active and Neuter Verbs have the termination of their Infinitive annexed; of the Mediums the Infinitive is included in a parenthesis.



*Alatt*, Po., (to the question where); under.

*Álgyu*, S., cannon.

*Alhatik*, (*alhat-ni*), V., to be sleepy.

*Alkotmány*, S., constitution.

*Alkuszik*, (*alkud-ni*), V., to bid in the price.

*Áll-ani*, V., to stand.

*Állandó*, A., constant.

*Állat*, (plur. *állatok*), S., animal.

*Állít-ani*, V., to state, to assert.

*Alma*, S. coll., apple.

*Álom*, S., sleep, a dream.

*Által*, Po., through, by.

*Ámbár*, C., although.

*Amerika*, S., America.

*Ángol*, *Angol*, S. & A., Englishman, English.

*Angolország*, S., England.

*Angolúl*, Adv., English, in English.

*Anyá*, S., mother; *az anyá*, the mother,

*Annyival*, C. & Adv., as much.

*Ápolgat-ni*, V., to cherish.

*Április*, S., April.

*Arany*, S., Gold.

*Aranyláncz*, S., Gold-chain.

*Ár*, S., price.

*Árnyék*, S., shadow.

*Árt-ani*, V., to injure, to be injurious.

*Árúl-ni*, V., to sell.

*Ás-ni*, V., to dig.

*Asztal*, (pl. *asztalok*), S., table.

*Asztalkendő*, S., table-napkin.

*Á'sia*, S., Asia.

*Átvesz*, (*átven-ni*), V., to take, to receive.

*Atya*, (pl. *atyák*), S., father; *az atya*, the father.

*Augusztus*, S., August, (name of the month.)

*Az*, Pr., that.

*Azonnal*, Adv., immediately.

*Azulán*, Adv., afterwards.

*Ázsia*, S., Asia.

## B.

*Baj*, S., evil, trouble.

*Balvéleményű*, A., of a wrong opinion.

*Bán-ni*, V., to treat, to proceed.

*Bár*, C., though.

*Barát*, S., friend; *a' barát*, the friend.

*Barátné*, S., female friend.

*Bátor*, A., bold, gallant.

*Bátorság*, S., courage.

*Bátya*, S., elder brother.

*Becsül-ni*, V., to esteem, to value.

*Béke*, S., peace; *béke' idején*, in times of peace.

*Beköt-ni*, V., to bind, to tie up.

*Béla*, S., Albert.

*Benyomás*, S., impression.

*Bérlő*, S., tenant.

*Beszél-ni*, V., to speak.

*Beleg*, A., ill.

*Betű*, S., letter (character in the Alphabet).

*Bezár-ni*, V., to close, to shut.

*Birodalom*, S., empire.

*Birtok*, S., estates, the manor.

*Bíz-ni*, V., to trust.

*Bizonyosan*, Adv., surely.

*Bizonytalan*, A., uncertain.

*Biztosság*, S., security.

*Bokréta*, S., nose-gay, a bunch of flowers.

*Borneo*, S., Borneo.

*Bot*, S., stick, cane.

*Britania*, S., Britain.

*Britt*, S. Briton,, British subject.

*Brüsszel*, S., Brussels.

*Búcsú*, S., taking leave, leave.

*Butor*, S., furniture.

*Búza*, S., coll., wheat, corn, crop.

*Bűnhődik (bűnhőd-ni)* V., to sin.

*Bűnös*, S. & A., sinner, culpable.

*Büntetés*, S. punishment.

### Cs.

*Csak*, C., but, only.

*Csata*, S., battle.

*Csatamező*, S., field of battle.

*Csekélység*, S., trifle.

*Cselekszik (cseleked-ni)*, V., to act.

*Cselekedet*, S., action.

*Csőtörtők*, S., Thursday.

Csing, hung. Gram.

### D.

*De*, C., but.

*December*, S., December.

*Délután*, S. & Adv., afternoon.

*Dicsér-ni*, V., to praise.

*Dolgozik (dolgoz ni)*, V., to work.

*Dolog*, S., work.

*Drága*, A., dear, valuable.

### E.

*Ebéd*, S., dinner.

*Édes*, A., sweet, dear.

*Egész*, A., whole.

*Egészséges*, A., healthy, well.

*Egy*, A. n., one.

*Egyenlő*, A., equal.

*Egyensúly*, S., equilibrium.

*Egyház*, S., church.

*Egyház-javító*, S., reformer of the church.

*Egymás*, Pr., one another.

*Egynehány*, Pr. a., some.

*Éji*, A., nocturnal.

*Ékez-ni*, V., to accentuate.

*Ékszer*, S., jewels.

*Él-ni*, V., to live.

*Elad-ni*, V., to sell.

*Elbeszél-ni*, V., to narrate, to tell.

*Elbúcsúzik (elbúcsúz-ni)*, V., to take leave.

*Előbb*, Adv., sooner.

*Elébetesz (elébeten-ni)*, V., to prefer.

- Elefánt*, S., elephant.  
*Elejét vehet*, V., can prevent.  
*Elejét vesz (elejét ven-ni)*, V., to prevent.  
*Eleméz-ni*, V., to analyze.  
*Elenyez-ni*, V., to hide, to mask.  
*Elér-ni*, V., to reach.  
*Éles*, A., sharp, *éleshegyű* fine-pointed.  
*Eles-ni*, V., to fall.  
*Élet*, S., life.  
*Elevenen*, Adv., alive.  
*Elfelejt-eni*, V., to forget.  
*Ethagy-ni*, V., to leave.  
*Elhi-ni*, V., to call for.  
*Ehisz (elhin-ni)*, V., to believe.  
*Elkülönöz-ni*, V., to separate.  
*Ellen*, Po., against.  
*Elmegy (elmen-ni)*, V., to go away.  
*Elnyom-ni*, V., to oppress, to suppress.  
*Előtt*, Po., before.  
*Elrejt-eni*, V., to conceal.  
*Elront-ani*, V., to spoil.  
*Elsiet-ni*, V., to hasten away.  
*Elszakad-ni*, V. n., to break (a string).  
*Eltéved-ni*, V., to lose one's way.  
*Elutazik (elutaz-ni)*, V., to depart.  
*Elvesz (elven-ni)*, V., to take away.
- Elvesz-ni*, V. n., to perish, to become lost.  
*Elveszett*, A. v., lost.  
*Ember*, S., man; *az ember*, the man; *az emberek*, the men, men.  
*Emberi-nem*, S., man-kind.  
*Embertárs*, S., fellow-man.  
*Emlékoszlop*, S., monument.  
*Én*, Pr., I.  
*Énekel-ni*, V., to sing.  
*Enged-ni*, V., to yield, to allow, to give way, to suffer.  
*Engedelmes*, A., obedient.  
*Engedetlen*, A., disobedient.  
*Épít-eni*, V., to build.  
*Építész*, S., builder.  
*Eránti and iránti*, A., towards.  
*Ércz*, S., ore, metal; fig. iron.  
*Érdek*, S., the interest.  
*Érdemel-ni*, V., to deserve.  
*Erdő*, S., forest, wood.  
*Ereny*, S., virtue.  
*Erényes*, A., virtuous.  
*Érett*, A. v., ripe.  
*Érez-ni*, V., to feel.  
*Érkezik (érkez-ni)*, V., to arrive.  
*Erkölcsilég*, Adv., morally.  
*Erő*, S., strength, force.  
*Erős*, A., strong.  
*Ért-eni*, V., to understand.  
*Értékes*, A., valuable.  
*És*; C., and.  
*Eset*, S., case.  
*Esik (es-ni)*, V., to fall; *eső esik*, it rains.

*Estve*, S. & Adv., evening, in the evening.

*Ész*, S., reason, intellect; *eszük*, their reason, their intellect.

*Év*, S., year.

*Ez*, Pr., this.

*Ezelőtt*, Adv., formerly.

## F.

*Fa*, S., wood.

*Fal*, S., wall.

*Falu*, S., village.

*Fáradtság*, S., trouble, exertions.

*Február*, S., February.

*Fejedelem*, S., prince, sovereign.

*Fekete*, A., black.

*Fekszik* (*feküd-ni*), V., to lie.

*Fel*, Adv., up.

*Fél-ni*, V., to fear.

*Felebarát*, S., fellow-creature, (neighbour).

*Felett*, Po., over.

*Felesleges*, A., superfluous.

*Felez-ni*, V., to halve, to divide into two parts.

*Felfedez-ni*, V., to discover.

*Felgyújt-ani*, V., to set on fire.

*Felháborodás*, S., emotion.

*Felmegy* (*felmen-ni*), V., to ascend, to amount.

*Felmond-ani*, V., to say (a lesson), to give notice.

*Felszámít-ani*, V., to cast up numbers, to make an account.

*Feltesz* (*felten-ni*), V., to suppose.

*Felvesz* (*felven-ni*), V., to take up, to receive.

*Ferencz*, S., Francis.

*Fest-eni*, V., to paint.

*Feltalál-ni*, V., to invent.

*Feltalálás*, S., invention.

*Festő*, S., painter.

*Fige*, S. coll., fig, figs.

*Füü*, S., boy, son; *a' füü*, the boy; *a' fűk*, the boys.

*Fizet-ni*, V., to pay.

*Fodroz-ni*, V., to curl, to crisp.

*Foglalatosság*, S., employment.

*Fordítás*, S., translation.

*Fordul-ni*, V. n., to turn.

*Fordul-ni valakihez*, V. a., to address to any one.

*Forog-ni*, V. n., to move round.

*Forrás*, S., a source.

*Forróövi-tartomány*, S., tropical region.

*Föld*, S., earth, land.

*Főlösleg* s, A., superfluous.

*Főváros*, S., capital (town).

*Franciaország*, S., France.

*Fut-ni*, V., to run, to take to flight.

*Füge*, S. coll., a fig, figs.

## G.

*Gáncsol-ni*, V., to blame.

*Gazdag*, A., rich.

*Gazdagság*, S., riches.  
*Gondol-ni*, V., to think.  
*Gonoszság*, S., wickedness.  
*Gorombaság*, S., insolence.  
*Gróf*, S., Count.

### Gy.

*Gyakorol-ni*, V. a., to practise.  
*Gyakran*, Adv., often.  
*Gyalogkatona*, S., soldier on foot.  
*Gyámság*, S., guardianship.  
*Gyarmat*, S., colony.  
*Gyémánt*, S., diamond.  
*Gyermek*, S., child; *gyermekek*, children.  
*Gyökér*, S., root; *gyökerek*, roots.  
*Gyönyör*, S., pleasure.  
*Győz-ni*, V. n., to overcome, to vanquish.  
*Győzedelem*, S., victory.  
*Győzedelmeskedik* (*győzedelmesked-ni*), V., to get the victory (to be victorious).  
*Gyula*, S., Julius.  
*Gyűjt-eni*, V., to gather.  
*Gyümölcs*, S. coll., fruit.  
*Gyűrű*, S., a ring.

### H.

*Ha*, C., if.  
*Háború*, S., war.  
*Háborúskodik* (*háborúskod-ni*), V., to be at war, to make war.

*Hadakozás*, S., the combat.  
*Hadsereg*, S., army.  
*Hadvezér*, S., leader of the army.  
*Hagy-ni*, V., to leave.  
*Hajdan*, Adv., formerly.  
*Hajósereg*, S., fleet.  
*Hajt-ani*, V., to drive, to bend.  
*Hal-ni*, V., to die.  
*Halandó*, S. & A., mortal.  
*Halász-ni*, V., to fish.  
*Halaszt-ani*, V., to delay.  
*Halavány*, A., pale.  
*Halkhatatlan*, A., immortal.  
*Halkal*, Adv., softly.  
*Hall-ani*, V., to hear, to hearken.  
*Hallgat-ni*, V., to keep silence, to listen.  
*Hámlik* (*hámol-ni*), V., to peel.  
*Hámoz-ni*, V. a., to peel.  
*Hanem*, C., but.  
*Hangzik* (*hangoz-ni*), V., to sound.  
*Hány*, A. n., how many.  
*Haragszik* (*haragud-ni*), V., to be angry.  
*Harczol-ni*, V., to fight.  
*Hársfa*, S., lime-tree, lind.  
*Használ-ni*, V., to be useful, to use.  
*Hasznot hajt-ani*, V., to be profitable.  
*Haszon*, S., profit.  
*Hatalmas*, A., mighty.  
*Hatalom*, S., might, power.



*Ház*, S., house.  
*Haza*, Adv. & S., home, native country.  
*Hazafi*, S., Patriot.  
*Helyesel-ni*, V., to approve.  
*Helyett*, Po., instead of.  
*Helyreállít-ni*, V., to restore.  
*Herczeg*, S., duke.  
*Hét*, S., week.  
*Hétfő*, S., Monday.  
*Hiány*, S., deficiency, want.  
*Hiba*, S., a mistake, error.  
*Hibás*, A., faulty, erroneous.  
*Hibát keres-ni*, V., to find fault with.  
*Hibázik (hibáz-ni)*, V., to fail, to mistake, to commit an error.  
*Hir*, S., renown, news, intelligence.  
*Híres*, A., renowned, celebrated.  
*Hirtelen*, Adv., suddenly.  
*Hisz*, Int., why!  
*Hitel*, S., credit.  
*Hitelező*, S., creditor.  
*Hitszegés*, S., perjury.  
*Hivat-ni*, V., to send for (a person).  
*Híves*, A., cool.  
*Hódító*, S., conqueror.  
*Hogy, hogyan*, Adv., how; *hogy*, C., that.  
*Holnap*, Adv., to-morrow.  
*Holt*, A., dead.  
*Honnan*, Adv., whence, where from.

*Hosszú*, A., long.  
*Hoz-ni*, V., to bring.  
*Hős*, S., hero.  
*Hősi*, A., heroic.  
*Hús*, S., meat, flesh.  
*Húz-ni*, V., to pull.  
*Hűséges*, A., faithful.  
*Hűtlen*, A., faithless.

# I.

*Idegen*, S. & A., foreigner, stranger; foreign, strange.  
*Idő*, S., time; *idején*, in time.  
*Ifjúság*, S., youth.  
*Iga*, S., yoke.  
*Igaz*, A. & S., truth.  
*Igazán*, Adv., truly, indeed, really.  
*Igazgat-ni*, V., to rule.  
*Igazít-ani*, V., to correct.  
*Igazságos*, A., righteous.  
*Igazságtalanul*, Adv., unjustly.  
*Igazságtalanság*, S., injustice, unrighteousness.  
*Igen*, Adv., very.  
*Igen is*, Adv., yes.  
*Inas*, S., footman.  
*India*, S., India.  
*Inkább*, Adv., rather.  
*Int-eni*, V., to admonish.  
*Intézkedik (intézked-ni)*, V., to dispose.  
*Ipar*, S., trade, industry.  
*Iparkodik (iparkod-ni)*, V., to endeavour.  
*Iparos*, S., tradesman.

*Ir-ni*, V., to write.  
*Írás*, S., writing.  
*Írigység*, S., the envy.  
*Írland*, S., Ireland.  
*Írókönyv*, S., copy-book.  
*Is*, C., also, as well.  
*Iskola*, S., school.  
*Island*, S., Iceland.  
*Ismer-ni*, V., to know (any body.)  
*István*, S., Stephen.  
*Ítélet*, S., judgment.  
*Itt*; Adv., here.  
*Itthon*, Adv., at home (here at home).

## J.

*Január*, S., January.  
*Jár-ni*, V., to walk.  
*Játsz-ani* V., to play.  
*Jó*, A., good.  
*Jobbán*, Adv., better.  
*Jog*, S., the right.  
*Jogtalanság*, S., injustice.  
*Jól*, Adv., well; *jól visel-ni magát*, to behave well.  
*Jólét*, S., wealth.  
*Jószág*, S., estates, manor.  
*Julius*, S., July.  
*Junius*, S., June.  
*Jutalom*, S., reward.

## K.

*Kabát*, S., coat.  
*Kalán* or *kanál*, S., spoon.

*Kalap*, S., hat.  
*Kap-ni*, V., to get, to receive.  
*Kard*, S., sword.  
*Károly*, S., Charles.  
*Káros*, A., injurious.  
*Kastély*, S., castle.  
*Katona*, S., soldier.  
*Kedd*, S., Tuesday.  
*Kedv*, S., pleasure, humor.  
*Kegyetlen*, A., cruel.  
*Kék*, A., blue.  
*Kelet*, S., East; *keletindia*, East India.  
*Kell-eni*, V., to be wanted, to be necessary.  
*Kelme*, S., ware (article).  
*Kemény*, A., hard, *keményen*, Adv., hard.  
*Kenyér*, S., bread.  
*Kényszerít-eni*, V., to force.  
*Kép*, S., image, picture.  
*Képráma*, S., picture-frame.  
*Képz-el-ni*, V., to imagine.  
*Kér-ni*, V., to ask, to petition.  
*Kérdezősködik (kérdőzköd-ni)*, V., to inquire.  
*Kerekdedes*, A., oval.  
*Keres-ni*, V., to look for, to seek.  
*Kereskedik (keresked-ni)*, V., to trade.  
*Kereskedés*, S., commerce, (trade); *kereskedést űz-ni* to carry on trade.  
*Kereszttyén*, S., christian.  
*Kerget-ni*, V., to pursue.

- Kertész*, S., gardener.  
*Kés*, S., knife.  
*Késő*, A. & Adv., late.  
*Kész*, A., ready.  
*Kéz*, S., hand.  
*Kézimunkás*, S., labourer.  
*Keztyű*, S., glove, a pair of gloves.  
*Ki*, Pr., who.  
*Kicsiny*, A., small.  
*Kiejt-eni*, V., to pronounce.  
*Kielégít-eni*, V., to satisfy, to fulfil.  
*Kiengesztelhetetlen*, A., irreconcilable.  
*Kigyó*, S., snake, serpent.  
*Kihúz-ni*, V., to draw out.  
*Kikerget-ni*, S., to expel.  
*Kimegy (kimen-ni)*, V., to go out.  
*Kinoz-ni*, V. a., to plague.  
*Kinyújt-ani*, V., to stretch out.  
*Kiolt-ani*, V., to extinguish.  
*Kioszt-ani*, V., to distribute.  
*Kipusztított-ani*, V., to depopulate.  
*Király*, S., king.  
*Királynő*, S., queen.  
*Királyság*, S., kingdom.  
*Kitartás*, S., perseverance.  
*Kiterjeszt-eni*, V., to extend.  
*Küz-ni*, V., to expel.  
*Kíván-ni*, V., to desire, to wish; *kíváнат*, a desire, a wish.  
*Kivilágít-ani*, V., to illuminate, to light up.  
*Kivisz (kivin-ni)*, V., to export.  
*Kocsi*, S., coach.  
*Kockáztat-ni*, V., to hazard.  
*Korán*, Adv., early.  
*Korbácsol-ni*, V., to flog.  
*Kormány*, S., government.  
*Kormányoz-ni*, V., to govern.  
*Kölcsönöz-ni*, V., to lend, to borrow.  
*Költő*, S., poet.  
*Könnyen*, Adv., easily.  
*Könyörületes*, A., pitiful.  
*Könyv*, S., book.  
*Könyvárus*, S., book-seller.  
*Könyvkötő*, S., book-binder.  
*Könyvnyomtatás*, S., typography, printing-trade.  
*Körtve*, S. coll., a pear, pears.  
*Körül*, Po., round, around.  
*Körülbelől*, Adv., about.  
*Köszörül-ni*, V., to grind.  
*Köszörüllet-ni*, V., to let grind, (to have ground).  
*Köt-ni*, V., to bind, to knit.  
*Kötelesség*, S., duty.  
*Középkor*, S., middle-age.  
*Közlekedés*, S., commerce (communication).  
*Közönséges*, A., common.  
*Között and közt*, Po., between, amongst.  
*Köztársasság*, S., republic.  
*Küld-eni*, V., to send.  
*Külömben, különben*, Adv., else, otherwise.  
*Külömbféle*, A., different.  
*Küzd-eni*, V., to struggle.

## L.

- Lakik* (*lak-ni*), V., to live, to dwell.  
*Lakás*, S., residence, lodging.  
*Lámpa*, and *lámpás*, S., lamp.  
*Láncz*, S., a chain.  
*Lány*, S., girl; *lányok*, girls.  
*Labda*, S., ball.  
*Lát-ni*, V., to see.  
*Látszik* (*látsz-ani*), V., to seem.  
*Leány*, S., girl; *leányok*, girls.  
*Leczke*, S., lesson.  
*Lefekszik* (*lefeküd-ni*), V., to lie down, to go to bed.  
*Leigáz-ni*, V., to subjugate.  
*Lélek*, S., soul, mind; *lelkünk*, our soul.  
*Lenyugszik* (*lenyugod-ni*), V., to go to rest, to set (said of the sun).  
*Leront-ani*, V., to demolish.  
*Levegő*, S., air, atmosphere.  
*Levél*, S., letter; Obj. case, *levelet*; Plur. *levelek*, letters.  
*Levet-ni*, V., to throw off or down.  
*Liget*, S., the park.  
*Lop-ni*, V., to steal.  
*Lovasórsereg* S., horse-guard.  
*Luther*, S., Luther.

## M.

- Ma*, Adv., to-day; *ma este*, to-night.

- Madár*, S., bird.  
*Madarász-ni*, V., to catch birds.  
*Maga*, Pr. himself, herself, it, self; *magam*, myself.  
*Magány*, A., private.  
*Magas*, A., high.  
*Magát emésztő*, A., self-consuming.  
*Magyar*, S. & A., Hungarian.  
*Magyarország*, S., Hungary.  
*Magyarul*, Adv., in Hungarian, Hungarian.  
*Majd*, Adv., soon, then.  
*Már*, Adv., already.  
*Marad-ni*, V., to remain, to stay.  
*Más*, Pr. a., other; *mások*, others.  
*Máshol*, Adv., somewhere else.  
*Máshonnan*, Adv., from somewhere else.  
*Máskor*, Adv., at another time.  
*Még*, Adv., still, yet.  
*Megakad-ni*, V., to stop.  
*Megbánt-ani*, V., to offend.  
*Megbüntet-ni*, V., to punish.  
*Megcsal-ni*, V., to deceive.  
*Megél-ni*, S., to live, to subsist, to get one's living.  
*Megelegszik* (*megeleged-ni*), V., to be satisfied.  
*Megelőz-ni*, V., to prevent.  
*Megérdemel-ni*, V., to deserve.  
*Megért-eni*, V., to understand, to comprehend.  
*Meggyőz-ni*, V., to vanquish.

- Megháborgat-ni*, V., to disturb. *Mennel—, annál*, Adv., the—, the.  
*Meghal-ni*, V., to die. *Mennyi*, A., how much, how many.  
*Megharagszik (megharagud-ni)*, V., to be offended. *Mennyivel*, Adv., how much; *mennyivel—, annyival*, as much as.  
*Meghódít-ani*, V., to conquer. *Mert*, C., for.  
*Megígér-ni*, V., to promise. *Mértékentűli*, A., exorbitant.  
*Mégis*, C., yet. *Mese*, V., a tale.  
*Megismer-ni*, V., to know, to recognize. *Mester*, V., master.  
*Megkap-ni*, V., to receive, to get. *Mesterség*, S., business, trade.  
*Meglátogat-ni*, V., to visit. *Mesterségesen*, Adv., artificially.  
*Meglep-ni*, V., to surprise. *Messze*, A. & Adv., distant, far.  
*Megnyer-ni*, V., to win, to gain. *Mi*, Pr., we.  
*Megnyugtát-ni*, V., to appease. *Mialt*, Po., about, for, because of.  
*Megparancsol-ni*, V., to command. *Míg*, Adv., while.  
*Mégsem*, C., yet-not. *Midőn*, C., as, when.  
*Megsért-eni*, V., to offend. *Mihelyt*, Adv., as soon as.  
*Megszakad-ni*, V. n., to break (said of the heart). *Minap*, Adv., lately, recently.  
*Megszámít-ani*, V., to count. *Mind*, Pr., all.  
*Megszólít-ani*, V., to address. *Mindannyi*, Pr., as many, as much.  
*Megtagad-ni*, V., to deny. *Mindég*, Adv., always.  
*Megtámad-ni*, V., to aggress. *Minden*, Pr. a., every, all.  
*Megüt-ni*, V., to strike, to hit. *Mindenik*, Pr., each.  
*Megvall-ani*, V., to confess. *Mindenható*, A., almighty.  
*Megver-ni*, V., to beat, to rout. *Mindjárt*, Adv., directly, instantly.  
*Megvert*, A. v., beaten, routed. *Mint*, C., as, like, than.  
*Megy, (men-ni)*, V. n., to go. *Minthogy*, C., because.  
*Meleg*, A., warm. *Mintsem*, C., than.  
*Melly*, Plur., *mellyek*, Pr., which. *Miután*, A. & C., soon after.  
*Menedék*, S., refuge. *Mivel-ni*, V., to cultivate.  
*Menhely, menedékhely*, S., asylum. *Mond-ani*, V., to say.



*Most*, Adv., now; *mostani*, A., present.

*Mozgás*, S., movement.

*Mulatság*, S., amusement, pleasure.

*Múlt*, A. v., past, last (in the expressions; last year, last week, etc.).

*Múlva*, Part., after (passed).

*Munka*, S., labour, work.

*Munkás*, A., industrious.

*Mutat-ni*, V., to show.

## N.

*Nagy*, A., large, great.

*Nagybátya*, S., uncle.

*Nagyító*, S., microscope.

*Nagykereskedő*, S., wholesale merchant.

*Nagylelkű*, A., generous.

*Nagylelkűen*, Adv., generously.

*Nagynénje*, S., aunt.

*Nagyszombat*, S., name of a town in Hungary.

*Nap*, S., sun, day.

*Naponként*, Adv., daily.

*Nehány*, Pr. n., some.

*Nehéz*, A., difficult.

*Nehezen*, Adv., hardly.

*Nélkül*, Po., without.

*Nem*, Adv., not.

*Nemeslelkű*, A., noble-minded.

*Németország*, S., Germany.

*Németül*, Adv., German, in German.

*Nemzet*, S., nation.

*Nénje*, S., elder sister.

*Nép*, S., people.

*Név*, S., name.

*Nevel-ni*, V., to educate.

*Nevendék*, S., pupil.

*Néz-ni*, V., to look.

*November*, S., November.

*Nő-ni*, V., to grow; *nővők*, I grow.

*Növény*, S., plant.

## Ny.

*Nyak*, S., neck.

*Nyakravaló*, S., cravat.

*Nyár*, S., summer.

*Nyárelő*, S., June.

*Nyárhó*, S., July.

*Nyárutó*, S., August.

*Nyelv*, S., language.

*Nyelvmester*, S., teacher of languages.

*Nyer-ni*, S., to gain, to win.

*Nyerés*, S., profit.

*Nyom-ni*, V., to press.

*Nugszik*, (*nyugod-ni*), V., to repose,

*Nyujt-ani*, T., to reach.

## O.

*Oda*, Adv., there, to the question where to?

*Olaszország*, S., Italy.

*Olcsó*, A., cheap.

*Olly*, Pr., so, such.

*Olvas-ni*, V., to read.

- Onnan*, Adv., thither, thence.  
*Ország*, S., realm.  
*Országlár*, S., politician.  
*Oskola*, S., school.  
*Oskolai-munka*, S., school-work.  
*Osztalék*, S., share.  
*Osztozik (osztoz-ni)*, V., to share.  
*Ott*, Adv., there.  
*Otthon*, Adv., (there) at home.

## Ö. Ó.

- Ő*, Pr., he, she, it; *ők* they.  
*Öcse*, S., younger brother.  
*Öltözet*, S., raiment.  
*Őn*, Pr., you (a person spoken to).  
*Önt-eni*, V., to shed, to pour.  
*Öntöz-ni*, V., to water.  
*Önzés*, S., egotism.  
*Önző*, A., selfish.  
*Öregbit-eni*, V., to increase.  
*Ősz*, S., autumn.  
*Őszelő*, S., September.  
*Őszhó*, S., October.  
*Őszinte*, A., sincere.  
*Összehoz-ni*, V., to get up (a quantity).  
*Ösztön*, S., instinct.  
*Őszutó*, S., November.

## P.

- Pajkos*, A., naughty.  
*Papir*, S., paper.  
*Pápista*, S., a Catholic.

- Páris*, S., Paris.  
*Patriárka*, S., Patriarch.  
*Péntek*, S., Friday.  
*Pénz*, S., money.  
*Pihen-ni*, V., to rest.  
*Pillanatig*, Adv., for a moment.  
*Pirongatás*, S., reproach.  
*Polgár*, S., citizen.  
*Polgárosodott*, A. v., civilized.  
*Pompás*, A., splendid.  
*Poszló*, S., cloth.  
*Poszlókelme*, S., drapery.  
*Poszlós*, S., cloth-manufacturer.  
*Puska*, S., musket, gun.  
*Puskapor*, S., gunpowder.

## R.

- Rab*, S., slave.  
*Rábír-ni*, V., to prevail upon.  
*Rajzol-ni*, S., to draw (figures).  
*Ravasz*, A., cunning, artful.  
*Récze*, S., duck.  
*Régen*, Adv., long ago.  
*Reggel*, S. & Adv., morning, in the morning.  
*Rejthely*, S., lurking-place.  
*Remenyl-eni*, S., to hope.  
*Rendeltetés*, S., destination.  
*Rendesen*, Adv., ordinarily.  
*Rest*, A., idle.  
*Rét*, S., meadow.  
*Ringat-ni*, V., to lull.  
*Ritka*, A., rare.  
*Ritkaság*, S., rarity, curiosity.  
*Róka*, S., fox.

*Római*, A., Roman.

*Rosz*, A., bad.

*Rubin*, S., ruby.

*Ruha*, S., dress.

## S.

*Saját*, A., own.

*Sándor*, S., Alexander.

*Scotia*, S., Scotland.

*Se—, se; sem—, sem*, C.,  
neither—, nor.

*Segít—eni*, V., to assist.

*Semmi*, S., nothing.

*Sétabo'*, S., walking-stick.

*Sétál—ni*, S., to take a walk.

*Siet—ni*, V., to hasten.

*Sikerül—ni*, V., to succeed.

*Smaragd*, V., emerald.

*Soha*, Adv., never.

*Sok*, A., much, many.

*Sokáig*, Adv., for a long time.

*Sorhajó*, S., a ship of the line.

*Sors*, S., fate.

*Súlyedő*, A., declining.

*Sürgetés*, S., urgency.

*Svajcz*, S., Switzerland.

*Svajczi*, A., Swiss.

## Sz.

*Szabad*, A., free.

*Szabadság*, S., freedom, liberty.

*Szabás*, S., the shape of a dress,  
fashion.

*Szabó*, S., tailor.

*Szalad—ni*, V., to run.

*Szám*, S., number.

*Számol—ni*, S., to reckon, to  
count.

*Szándék*, S., intention.

*Szántóföld*, S., arable land.

*Szárny*, S., a wing.

*Szegény*, A., poor.

*Szed—ni*, S., to gather.

*Széles*, A., wide.

*Szelíd*, A., meek, gentle.

*Szélvész*, S., storm.

*Szemérmes*, A., modest.

*Szent*, A., sacred, holy, saint.

*Szép*, A., fine, beautiful, plea-  
sant.

*Szépség*, S., beauty.

*Szerda*, S., Wednesday.

*Szerencse*, S., fortune.

*Szerencsétlen*, A., unfortunate.

*Szerencsétlenség*, S., misfor-  
tune.

*Szeret—ni*, V., to love, to like.

*Szerez—ni*, S., to purchase.

*Szerszám*, S., coll., tool.

*Szétdarabol—ni*, V., to dismem-  
ber.

*Szid—ni*, V., to blame, to scold.

*Sziget*, S., isle.

*Szilaj*, A., wild.

*Szilva*, S., coll., prune.

*Szín*, S., colour.

*Színház*, S., theatre.

*Szintén*, C., as well.

*Szív*, S., heart.

*Szivar*, S., cigar.

*Szíves*, A., kind.

*Szívesen*, Adv., willingly.

- Szivesség*, S., cordiality. kindness.  
*Szó*, S., word.  
*Szoba*, S., room.  
*Szok-ni*, V., to be accustomed.  
*Szól-ni*, V., to speak.  
*Szolgálat*, S., service.  
*Szolgáló*, S., servant.  
*Szombat*, S., Saturday.  
*Szomorú*, A., sad.  
*Szónok*, S., orator.  
*Szorgalmas, szorgalmatos*, A., industrious, diligent.  
*Szorít-ani*, V., to press.  
*Szőlő*, S., coll., grape, grapes.  
*Szurony*, V., bayonet.  
*Szükség*, S., necessity, need.  
*Születik (szület-ni)*, V., to be born.  
*Szülő*, S., parent.

## T.

- Tábor*, S., camp.  
*Tábornagy*, S., fieldmarshal.  
*Tábornok*, S., general.  
*Tagad-ni*, V., to deny.  
*Táj.*, S., environs, country.  
*Tájék*, S., region.  
*Takács*, S., weaver.  
*Talál-ni*, V., to find.  
*Találmány*, S., invention.  
*Talán*, Adv., perhaps.  
*Támad-ni*, S., to rise, to be produced.  
*Tanács*, S., advice.  
*Tányér*, S., plate (soup-plate, etc).
- Tanít-ani*, V., to teach.  
*Tanító*, S., teacher.  
*Tanul-ni*, V., to learn.  
*Tanuló*, S., learner, student.  
*Tapasztal-ni*, V., to experience.  
*Társasság*, S., society, company.  
*Tartomány*, S., province, country.  
*Tartozik (tartoz-ni)*, V., to owe.  
*Tavas*, S., spring.  
*Tavaszelő*, S., March.  
*Tavaszhó*, S., April.  
*Tavasztó*, S., May.  
*Te*, Pr., thou.  
*Tegnap*, Adv., yesterday.  
*Tehér*, S., burden.  
*Tehetség*, S., faculty of mind, ability.  
*Tél*, S., winter.  
*Télelő*, S., December.  
*Télhó*, S., January.  
*Teljesít-eni*, S., fulfil.  
*Téltó*, S., February.  
*Tengerész*, S., sailor.  
*Tengernagy*, S., admiral.  
*Ténta*, S., ink.  
*Téntatartó*, S., inkstand.  
*Tény*, S., fact.  
*Terem*, S., saloon,  
*Teremtés*, S., creature.  
*Teremtő*, S., creator.  
*Terjedelmes*, A., extensive.  
*Termékenység*, S., fertility.  
*Termény*, S., product.  
*Természet*, S., nature.

*Termesztmény*, S., production.

*Test*, S., body.

*Testi*, A., corporal, of the body.

*Tesz (ten-ni)*, V., to do; *tet-tük*, we did.

*Tetszik (tetsz-eni)*, V., to please.

*Tett*, S., deed.

*Ti*, Pr., you (ye).

*Tigris*, S., tiger.

*Tisztel-ni*, V., to venerate, to honour.

*Tó*, S., pond, lake.

*Toll*, S., pen.

*Tollkès*, S., pen-knife.

*Tovább*, Adv., longer, farther.

*Többsnyire*, Adv. mostly.

*Tökélellen*, A., imperfect.

*Től*, Pre. a., by, from, of.

*Tönkre tenni*, S., to ruin.

*Történik (történ-ni)*, V., to happen.

*Történet*, S., history.

*Törvény*, S., law.

*Törsatya*, S., Patriarch.

*Tud-ni*, V., to know anything.

*Tudás*, S., knowing.

*Tudomás*, S., knowledge, notice.

*Tulajdon*, A., proper.

*Tulajdonság*, S., propriety.

*Tunyáság*, S., laziness.

*Tuzok*, S., bustard (a bird).

*Tükörráma*, S., looking glass-frame (frame of a mirror.)

*Tűzhely*, S., hearth, the home.

## U.

*Úgy*, C. & Adv., so, thus.

*Új*, A., recent; *ujabb időben*, recently.

*Ujság*, S., news, newspaper.

*Unalmas*, A., tedious.

*Úr*, S., gentleman, Sir, Mister.

*Uralkodik (uralkod-ni)*, V., to domineer.

*Uralkodó*, S., monarch, ruler.

*Út*, S., way.

*Utaz-ni*, V., to travel.

*Utazó*, S., traveller.

*Ulcza*, S., street.

*Utolsó*, A., last.

## Ü.

*Ügy*, S., cause, affair.

*Ügyes*, A., clever.

*Ügyellen*, A., clumsy, incapable.

*Ül-ni*, V., to sit.

*Üldöz-ni*, V., to persecute.

*Üt-ni*, V., to knock, to strike.

*Üzenet*, S., message.

*Üzérlet*, S., business (a trade).

## V.

*Vacsora*, S., supper.

*Vad*, A., wild

*Vadász*, S., huntsman.

*Vadász-ni*, V., to hunt.



- Vág-ni*, V., to cut.  
*Vagy*, C., or.  
*Vagyon*, S., property; *vagyona*, his property.  
*Vaj*, S., butter; *vajas kenyér*, bread and butter; Obj. c., *vajas kenyeret*.  
*Valahányszor*, Adv., as often as.  
*Valaki*, Pr., somebody.  
*Valami*, Pr., something.  
*Való*, S. & A., reality, real, true.  
*Valódi*, A., real.  
*Vár-ni*, V., to wait for, to expect.  
*Var-ni*, V., to sew.  
*Város*, S., town.  
*Vasárnap*, S., Sunday.  
*Vastag*, A., thick.  
*Vászon*, S., linen.  
*Véd-eni*, V., to protect.  
*Végez-ni*, V., to perform, to finish, to conclude.  
*Végketlen*, A., infinite.  
*Végrendelet*, S., last will.  
*Vendég*, S., guest.  
*Ver-ni*, V., to beat.  
*Veréb*, S., sparrow.  
*Verem*, S., a pit.  
*Veres*, A., red.  
*Véres*, A., sanguinary.  
*Vérzik (vérez-ni)*, V., to bleed.  
*Vész-ni*, V., to decline, to linger.
- Veszlesség*, S., loss,  
*Vet-ni*, V., to sow.  
*Vétek*, S., sin, vice; *vétkek*, sins.  
*Vétkezik (vétkez-ni)*, V., to sin.  
*Vezér*, S., leader, guidance.  
*Vezérel-ni*, V., to guide.  
*Vezet-ni*, V., to lead.  
*Vidék*, S., country.  
*Vigasztal-ni*, V., to console, to comfort.  
*Vigasztaló*, A., consolatory.  
*Vigyázatos*, A., cautious.  
*Világ*, S., world.  
*Világlenger*, S., ocean.  
*Vilmos*, S., William.  
*Virág*, S., flower.  
*Virágmag*, S., flower-seeds.  
*Vissza*, Adv., back.  
*Visszatér-ni*, V. n., to return.  
*Vitéz*, A., brave.  
*Vitéziesen*, Adv., hero-like, heroically.  
*Vitézség*, S., bravery, valour.  
*Vívni*, V., to fight.
- Z.**
- Zár-ni*, V., to shut.  
*Zene*, S. music.  
*Zene-mester*, S., teacher of music.

*Zongora*, S., piano.

**Zs.**

*Zöld*, A., green.

*Zöldség*, S., coll., vegetables.

*Zsarnok*, S., tyrant.

*Zöldségmag*, S., seeds of vegetables.

*Zsebkendő*, S., pocket handkerchief.

---

## II. English-Hungarian.

## A.

Ability, *tehetség*,  
 About, *körülbelől*, Adv.; —  
*miatt*, Po.  
 Accentuate, V., *ékeztet-ni*.  
 Account, to make an—, *felszámít-ni*,  
 Accustomed, to be—, *szok-ni*.  
 Act, V., *cselekszik* (*cseleked-ni*)  
 Action, *cselekedet*.  
 Admiral, *tengernagy*.  
 Admonish, V., *int-eni*.  
 Address, V., *megszólít-ni*; to  
 address to any one, *valakihez  
fordul-ni*.  
 Advice, S., *tanács*.  
 After, Prep., *múlva*.  
 Afternoon, *délután*, S. & Adv.  
 Afterwards, *azután*.  
 Against, *ellen*,  
 Aggress, V., *megtámad-ni*.  
 Ago, Adv., *ezelőtt*, constructed  
 with *val* or *vel*.  
 Air, S., *levegő*.  
 Albert, *Béla*.  
 Alexander, *Sándor*.  
 Alive, Adv., *elevenen*.  
 All, *mind*. Pr.; —, *minden*, A.  
 Allow, V., *enged-ni*.  
 Csing, hung. Gram.

Almighty, *mindenhaló*.  
 Already, *már*.  
 Also, *is*.  
 Although, *ámbar*.  
 Always, *mindég*.  
 America, *Amerika*.  
 Amongst, Prep., *közt, között*, Po.  
 Amusement, *multság*.  
 Analyze, V., *elemez-ni*.  
 And, *és, meg*.  
 Angry, to be—, *haragszik*,  
*(haragud-ni)*.  
 Animal, *állat*, plur. *állatok*.  
 Another time, *máskor*, Adv.  
 Appease, V., *megnyugtat-ni*.  
 Apple, *alma*, S. coll.  
 Approve, V., *helyesel-ni*.  
 April, *Április, tavaszho*.  
 Arable land, *szántóföld*.  
 Army, *hadsereg*.  
 Around, Prep., *körül*, Po.  
 Arrive, V., *érkezik* (*érkez-ni*).  
 Artificially, *mesterségesen*.  
 Artful, *ravasz*.  
 As, *mint*, C.; as many, as  
 much, *mindannyi*; as much  
 as, *annyival — a' mennyivel*;  
 as soon as, *mihelyt*; as of-  
 ten as, *valahányszor*; as  
 well, *szintén, is*.

- Ascend, V., *felmegy* (*felmen-ni*).  
 Asia, *Ázsia*.  
 Assist, V., *segít-eni*.  
 Asylum, *menhely*.  
 Atmosphere, *levegő, légkör*.  
 August, *Augusztus, nyárutó*.  
 Aunt, *nagynénje*.  
 Autumn, *ősz*.
- B.**
- Back, Adv., *vissza*.  
 Bad, *rosz*.  
 Bayonet, *szurony*.  
 Ball (for playing), *lapda*.  
 Battle, S., *csata*.  
 Beat, V., *ver-ni, megver-ni*.  
 Beaten, *megvert, A. v.*  
 Beautiful, *szép*.  
 Beauty, S., *szépség*.  
 Because, C., *minthogy; — of miatt, Po.*  
 Before, Prep., *előtt, Po.*  
 Behave well, V., *jól visel-ni magát*.  
 Believe, V., *elhisz (elhin-ni)*.  
 Bend, V., *hajt-ani*.  
 Better, Adv., *jobban*.  
 Between, *közt, Po.*  
 Bid (in the price), V., *alkuszik, (alkud-ni)*.  
 Bind, V., *köt-ni, beköt-ni*.  
 Bird, *madár, Plur., madarak*.  
 Black, *fekete*.  
 Blame, V., *szid-ni, gáncsol-ni*.  
 Bleed, V., *vérzik (vérez-ni)*.  
 Blue, *kék*.  
 Body, *test*.  
 Bold, *bátor*.  
 Book, *köngv.*  
 Book-binder, *könyvkötő*.  
 Bookseller, *könyvárús*.  
 Born, being—, V., *születik, (szület-ni)*.  
 Borneo, *Borneo*.  
 Borrow, V., *kölcsönöz-ni*.  
 Boy, *fiú; boys, fiúk; the boy, a' fiú*.  
 Brave, A., *vitéz, A.*  
 Bravery, *vitézség*.  
 Bread, S., *kenyér; Obj. Case, kenyeret; bread and butter, vajas kenyér*.  
 Break (said of a string), V., *elszakad-ni, V. n.; to break (the heart), megszakad-ni, V. n.*  
 Bring, V., *hoz-ni*.  
 Britain, A. & S., *britt, A. & S.*  
 Britannia, *Britania*.  
 Broad, *széles*.  
 Brother, the elder—, *bátya*.  
 Brussels, *Brüsszel*.  
 Build, V., *épít-eni*.  
 Builder, *építész*.  
 Bunch of flowers, *bokrétá*,  
 Burden, S., *terh, teher*.  
 Business, *üzérlét, mesterség*.  
 Bustard (name of a bird), *tuzok*.  
 But, C., *de, hanem, csak*.  
 By, *től, Po. a.*

## C.

Call for, V., *elhi-ni*.  
 Camp, S., *tábor*.  
 Cannon, *ágyú, álggyú*.  
 Capital (town), *főváros*.  
 Carpenter's trade, *ácsmesterség*.  
 Carry, to carry out, *kivin-ni*;  
     to carry on, *üz-ni*.  
 Case, *eset*.  
 Cause, S., *ügy*; the cause  
     (source, reason), *az ok*.  
 Cautious, *vigyázatos*.  
 Celebrated, *híres*, A.  
 Chain, S., *láncz*.  
 Character (of the alphabet), *betű*.  
 Charles, *Károly*.  
 Cheap, *olcsó*.  
 Cherish, V., *ápolgat-ni*.  
 Child, *gyermek*, children, *gyer-  
     mekek*.  
 Christian, *keresztény*, and ke-  
     ~~resztény~~, S. & A.  
 Cigar, *szivar*.  
 Citizen, *polgár*.  
 Civilized, *polgárosodott*, A. v.,  
 Clever, *ügyes*.  
 Close, V., *bezár-ni*.  
 Cloth, *posztó*; cloth-manufac-  
     turer, *posztós*.  
 Clumsy, *ügyetlen*.  
 Coach, *kocsi*.  
 Coat, *kabát*.  
 Colony, *gyarmat*.  
 Colour, S., *szín*.  
 Combat, S., *hadakozás*.  
 Comfort, V., *vigasztal-ni*.

Command, V., *parancsol-ni*.  
 Commerce, *közlekedés*; — (tra-  
     de), *kereskedés*.  
 Common, A., *közönséges*.  
 Company, *társasság*; (visitors),  
     *látogatók*.  
 Conceal, V., *elrejt-eni*.  
 Conclude, V., *végez-ni*.  
 Confess, V., *megvall-ani*.  
 Conquer, V., *meghódít-ani*.  
 Conqueror, *hódító*.  
 Console, V., *vigasztal-ni*.  
 Consolatory, *vigasztaló*. A. v.  
 Constant, *állandó*, A. v.  
 Constitution (of a realm), *al-  
     kotmány*.  
 Cool, A., *hives*.  
 Copy-book, *írókönyv*.  
 Cordially, *szívesen*.  
 Cordiality, *szívesség*.  
 Corn (wheat or rye), *búza*.  
 Corporeal, A., *testi*.  
 Correct, V., *igazít-ani*.  
 Count, S., *Gróf*.  
 Count, V., *számol-ni, megszá-  
     mít-ani*; to count up, *fel-  
     számít-ni*.  
 Country, *tartomány* (province);  
     —, *falu* (country-place).  
 Courage, *bátorság*.  
 Cravat, *nyakravató*.  
 Creator, *teremtő*.  
 Creature, *teremtés*.  
 Credit, S., *hitel*.  
 Creditor, *hitelező*.  
 Criminal, A., *bűnös*.  
 Crisp, V. a., *fodroz-ni*.



Cruel, *kegyetlen*,  
 Cultivate, V., *mivelni*.  
 Cunning, A., *ravasz*.  
 Curiosity (rarity), *ritkaság*.  
 Curl, V. a., *fodroz-ni*.  
 Cut, V. a., *vágni*.

**D.**

Day, *nap*; daily, Adv., *naponként*.  
 Dead, *holt*.  
 Dear, *drága*.  
 Debt, *adósság*.  
 Debtor, *adós*.  
 Deceive, V., *megcsal-ni*.  
 December, *December*, *télelő*.  
 Decline, V., *vész-ni*.  
 Declining, *súlyedő*.  
 Deed, *tett*.  
 Deficiency, *hiány*.  
 Delay, V., *halaszt-ani*.  
 Demolish, V., *leront-ani*.  
 Deny, V., *tagad-ni*, *megtagad-ni*.  
 Depart, V., *elutaz-ni*.  
 Depopulate, V., *kipusztít-ani*.  
 Deserve, V., *érdemel-ni*, *megérdemel-ni*.  
 Desire, S., *kívánság*.  
 Destination, *rendeltetés*.  
 Diamond, *gyémánt*.  
 Die, V., *hal-ni*, *meghal-ni*.  
 Different, *külömbféle*.  
 Difficult, *nehéz*.  
 Dig, V., *ás-ni*.  
 Diligent, *szorgalmas*.

Dinner, *ebéd*.  
 Directly (immediately), *mindjárt*, *azonnal*.  
 Discover, V., *felfedez-ni*.  
 Dismember, V., *szétdarabol-ni*.  
 Disobedient, *engedetlen*.  
 Dispose, V., *intézkedik (intézked-ni)*.  
 Distant, *messze*, Adv. & A.  
 Distribute, V., *kioszt-ani*.  
 Disturb, V., *megháborgat-ni*.  
 Divide in two, V., *felez-ni*.  
 Do, V., *tesz (tenni)*, *tettük*, we did.  
 Domineer, V., *uralkodik (uralkod-ni)*.  
 Door, *ajtó*.  
 Drapery, *posztó-kelme*.  
 Draw out, V., *kihúzó-ni*.  
 Dress, S., *ruha*.  
 Drive, V., *hajt-ani*.  
 Duck, *rétze*.  
 Duke, *herceg*.  
 Duty, *kötelesség*.  
 Dwell, V., *lakik (lak-ni)*.

**E.**

Each, *mindenik*.  
 Early, Adv., *korán*.  
 Earth, *föld*.  
 Easily, *könnyen*.  
 East, *kelet*; East India, *kelet india*.  
 Educate, V., *nevel-ni*.  
 Egotism, *önzés*.  
 Either—, or, *akár—, akár*.

Elder brother, *bátya*.  
 Elder sister, *néne*.  
 Elephant, *elefánt*.  
 Elipsoidal, *kerekdedes*.  
 Else, *külömben, különben*, Adv.  
 Elsewhere, *máshol*.  
 Emerald, *Smaragd*.  
 Emotion, *felháborodás*.  
 Empire, *birodalom*.  
 Employment, *foglalatosság*.  
 Endeavour, V., *iparkodik (iparkod-ni)*.  
 England, *Angolország*.  
 English, *angol*; in English, *angolul*.  
 Environs, *táj, tájék*.  
 Envy, S., *irigység*.  
 Equal, *egyenlő*.  
 Equilibrium, *egyensúly*.  
 Error, *hiba*; erroneous, *hibás*.  
 Estate, S., *jószág*.  
 Esteem, V., *becsül-ni*.  
 Evening, *estve*, S. & Adv.  
 Every, *minden*.  
 Evil, S., *baj*.  
 Expect, V., *vár-ni*.  
 Exorbitant, *mértékentűli*.  
 Expel, V., *kikergel-ni, kiűz-ni*.  
 Experience, V., *tapasztal-ni*.  
 Export, V., *kivisz (kivín-ni)*.  
 Extend, V. a., *kiterjeszt-eni*.  
 Extensive, *terjedelmes*.  
 Extinguish, V. a., *kiolt-ani*.

## F.

Fact, *tény*.  
 Faculty (of mind), *tehetség*.

Fail, V., *hibázik (hibáz-ni)*.  
 Faithful, *hűséges*.  
 Faithless, *hűtlen*.  
 Fall, V., *es-ni*.  
 Far, *messze*, A. & Adv.  
 Fate, *sors*.  
 Father, *atyá*; the father, *az atya*.  
 Faulty, *hibás*.  
 Fear, V., *fél-ni*.  
 February, *Február, télutó*.  
 Feel, V., *érez-ni*.  
 Fellow creature, *felebarát*; fellow-man, *embertárs*.  
 Fertility, *termékenység*.  
 Few, *egynehány*.  
 Field of battle, *csalamező*.  
 Fieldmarshal, *tábornagy*.  
 Fig, *fige, füge*.  
 Fight, V., *vív-ni, harcol-ni*.  
 Find, V., *talál-ni*; to find fault, *hibát keres-ni*.  
 Fine, beautiful, *szép*; fine pointed, *éles hegyes*.  
 Finish, V., *végez-ni*.  
 Fish, V., *halász-ni*.  
 Fleet, *hajósereg*.  
 Flight, to take to—, *fut-ni*, V. n.  
 Flog, V., *korbácsol-ni*.  
 Flower, *virág*.  
 Flower-seeds, *virágmag*.  
 Footman, *inas*.  
 For, *mert*, C.; *miatt*, Po; for moment, *pillanatilig*; for a long time, *sokáig*.  
 Force, S., *erő*; to force, *kényszerít-eni*.  
 Foreign, *idegen*, S. & A.

Forest, *erdő*.  
 Forget, V., *elfelejt-eni*.  
 Formerly, *ezelőtt*.  
 Fortune, *szerencse*.  
 Found, V., *alapít-ani*.  
 Founder, *alapító*.  
 France, *Franciaország*.  
 Francis, *Ferencz*.  
 Free, *szabad*, A.  
 Freedom, *szabadság*.  
 Friday, *péntek*.  
 Friend, *barát*; female friend,  
     *barátné*.  
 From, *től*. Po. a.  
 Fulfil, V., *teljesít-eni*.  
 Furniture, *butor*.  
 Further, *tovább*.

## G.

Gain, V., *nyer-ni*.  
 Gallant, A., *bátor*, *derek*.  
 Garden, *kert*; gardener, *kertész*.  
 Gather, V., *gyűjt-eni*.  
 General, *tábornok*.  
 Generous, *nagylelkű*; generous-  
     ly, *nagylelkűen*.  
 Gentle, *szelíd*.  
 Gentleman, *úr*.  
 German, *német*, A.; *németül*,  
     Adv.  
 Germany, *Németország*.  
 Get, V., *kap-ni*, *meg kapni*;  
     to get up (a sum), *összehoz-*  
     *ni*; to get a living, *megélni*,  
     to get lost, *elvesz-ni*.

Girl, *leány*, *lány*; the girl, a'  
     *leány*; the girls, a' *leányok*.  
 Give, V., *ad-ni*; to give way,  
     *enged-ni*.  
 Glove, a pair of gloves, *kezttyű*.  
 Go, V., *megy (men-ni)*; go  
     out, *kimegy*; go away, *el-*  
     *megy*.  
 Gold, *arany*, S.  
 Gold-chain, *aranyláncz*.  
 Good, *jó*.  
 Govern, V., *kormányoz-ni*.  
 Government, *kormány*.  
 Grape, *szőlő*, S., coll.  
 Great, *nagy*.  
 Green, *zöld*.  
 Grind, V., *köszörül-ni*; to let  
     grind, *köszörültet-ni*.  
 Grow, V. n., *nő-ni*.  
 Guardianship, *gyámság*.  
 Guest, *vendég*.  
 Guide, V., *vezérel-ni*.  
 Gunpowder, *puskapor*, *lőpor*.

## H.

Hand, *kéz*; hands, *kezek*.  
 Happen, V., *történik (történ-ni)*.  
 Hard, *kemény*, A.; *keményen*,  
     Adv.; hardly, *nehezen*.  
 Hasten, *siet-ni*; to hasten away,  
     *elsiet-ni*.  
 Hat, *kalap*.  
 Hate, V., *gyűlöl-ni*.  
 Hazard, *kockáztat-ni*.  
 He, *ő*.  
 Healthy, *egészséges*.

- Hear, V., *hall-ani*.  
 Hearken, V., *hallgat-ni*.  
 Heart, *szív*.  
 Hearth, *tűzhely*.  
 Here, *itt*.  
 Hero, *hős*.  
 Heroic, *hősi*; hero-like, heroic-ally, *vitézieesen*.  
 Herself, *maga*.  
 High, *magas*.  
 Himself, *maga*.  
 History, *történet*.  
 Hit, V., *megüt-ni*.  
 Home, *haza*; at home, *itthon*, ~~ot-on~~ *otthon*.  
 Honour, V., *tisztel-ni*.  
 Hope, V., *reményl-eni*.  
 Horse-guard, *lovas-őrsereg*.  
 House, *ház*; the house, *a' ház*.  
 How, *hogy, hogyan*; how many, *hány*; how much, *ennyivel*, (used with the Comparative).  
 Hungarian, *magyar*, A. & S.; *magyarúl*, Adv.  
 Hungary, *Magyarország*.  
 Hunt, V., *vadász-ni*.  
 Huntsman, *vadász*.  
 Imperfect, *tökéletlen*.  
 Impression, *benyomás*.  
 Incapable, *ügyetlen*.  
 Increase, V., *őregbít-eni*.  
 Indeed, *igazán*.  
 India, *India*.  
 Industrious, *szorgalmas, munkás*.  
 Infinite, *véghetetlen*.  
 Injure, V., *árt-ani*.  
 Injurious, *káros*; to be injurious, *árt-ani*.  
 Injustice, *jogtalanság, igazságtalanság*.  
 Ink, *ténta*; inkstand, *téntatartó*.  
 Inquire, V., *kérdezősköd-ni*.  
 Insolence, *gorombaság*.  
 Instantly, *mindjárt, azonnal*.  
 Instead, *helyett*, Po.  
 Instinct, S., *öszlön*.  
 Intention, *szándék*.  
 Interest, S., *érdek*.  
 Invent, V., *feltalál-ni*; invention, *feltalálás, találmány* (things invented).  
 Ireland, *Irland*.  
 Irreconcilable, *kiengesztelhetetlen*.  
 Isle, *sziget*.  
 It, Pr., *ő*.  
 Italy, *Olaszország*.  
 Itself, *maga*.

## I.

- I, *én*.  
 Iceland, *Izland*.  
 Idle, *rest*.  
 If, *ha*.  
 Ill, *beteg*.  
 Imagine, V., *képzél-ni*.  
 Immortal, *halhatatlan*.

## J.

- January, *Január, télhó*.  
 Jewels, *ékszer*.  
 Judgment, *ítélet*.

Julius (man's name), *Gyula*.

July, *Július*, *nyárhó*.

June, *Június*, *nyárelő*.

### K.

Keep silence, *hallgat-ni*.

Kill (by shooting), V., *agyonlő-ni*.

Kind, A., *szi ves*; kindness, *szi vesség*.

King, *király*; kingdom, *királyság*.

Knife, *kés*.

Knit, V., *köt-ni*.

Knock (any one), V., *üt-ni*.

Know (any one) *ismer-ni*; to know (any-thing), *tud-ni*.

Knowledge, knowing, S., *tudomás*, *tudás*.

### L.

Labor, S., *munka*; laborer, *kézimunkás*.

Lamp, *lámpa*.

Land, S., *föld*; native-land, *haza*.

Language, *nyelv*.

Large, *nagy*.

Last (in: last week), A., *múlt*; the last, *utolsó*; last will, *végrendelet*.

Lasting, *hosszú*.

Late, A., *késő*.

Law, *törvény*.

Laziness, *tunyaság*.

Lead, V., *vezet-ni*.

Leader, *vezér*; leader of the army, *hadvezér*.

Learn, V., *tanul-ni*; learner, *tanuló*.

Leave, S., *búcsú*; to take leave, *elbúcsúzik* (*elbúcsúz-ni*).

Leave, V., *hagy-ni*, *elhagy-ni*.

Lend, *kölcsönöz-ni*.

Lest, *nehogy*.

Lesson, *leccke*.

Letter, *levél*; Obj., Case *levelet*; — of the alphabet, *betű*.

Liberty, *szabadság*.

Lie (laid down) *fekszik* (*feküd-ni*); to go to bed, *lefekszik*.

Life, *élet*.

Light, A. & S., *világ*, to light up, *kivilágít-ani*.

Like, V., *szeret-ni*; — Adv., *mint*.

Lime tree, *lind*, *hársfa*.

Linen, *vászon*.

Linger, V., *vész-ni*.

Listen, V., *hallgat-ni*.

Live (dwell), V., *lakik* (*lak-ni*).

Lodging, S., *lakás*.

Long, *hosszú*; long ago, *régen*; longer, *tovább*.

Look, V., *néz-ni*; to look for, *keres-ni*.

Looking-glass frame, *tükör-ráma*.

Lose one's way, V., *eltéved-ni*.

Loss, *veszteség*; lost, *elveszett*.

Love, V., *szeret-ni*.

Lull, V., *ringat-ni*.

Lurking-place, *rejt hely*.

### M.

Man, *ember*, pl., *emberek*; mankind, *emberi-nem*.



- Many, *sok*.  
 March, *Márczius, tavaszelő*.  
 Map, S., *földabrosz*.  
 Master, S., *mester*.  
 May, *Május, tavaszutó*.  
 Meadow, *rét*.  
 Meat, *hús*.  
 Meek, *szelíd*.  
 Message, *üzenet*.  
 Metal, *ércz*.  
 Middle ages, *középkor*.  
 Microscope, *nagyító*.  
 Misfortune, *szerencsétlenség*.  
 Mistake, S., *hiba*; — V., *hibáz-ni*.  
 Modest, *szemérmes*.  
 Monarch, *uralkodó*.  
 Monday, *hétfő*.  
 Money, *pénz*.  
 Monument, *emlék-oszlop*.  
 Morally, *erkölcsileg*.  
 Morning, *reggel*, S. & Adv.  
 Morrow, to—, *holnap*, Adv.  
 Mortal, *halandó*.  
 Mostly, *többnyire*.  
 Mother, *anya*; the mother, *az anya*.  
 Move round, V., *forog-ni*, V. n.,  
 Movement, *mozgás*; movement  
 of the army, *hadmozgás*.  
 Much, *sok*.  
 Music, *zene*.  
 Musket, *puska*.  
 Myself, *magam*.
- N.**
- Name, S., *név*.  
 Narrate, V., *elbeszél-ni*.  
 Nation, *nemzet*.  
 Nature, *természet*.  
 Naughty, *pajkos*.  
 Necessary, to be—, *kell-eni*.  
 Necessity, need, *szükség*.  
 Neck, *nyak*.  
 Neighbour (fellow-man), *felebarát*.  
 Neither—, nor, *sem—, sem,*  
 and *se—, se*.  
 Never, *soha*.  
 New, *új*; news, and newspa-  
 per, *újság*.  
 Night, *éj*; to-night, *ma este*.  
 Noble-minded, *nemeslelkű*.  
 Nocturnal, *éji*.  
 Nosegay, *bokréta*.  
 Not, *nem*.  
 November, *November, őszutó*.  
 Now, *most*.  
 Number, *szám*.
- O.**
- Obedient, *engedelmes*.  
 Ocean, *világtenger*.  
 October, *October, őszhó*.  
 Of, *tól, től*, Po. a.  
 Offend, V., *megbánt-ani, meg-  
 sért-eni*; to be offended,  
*megharagszik (megharagud-  
 ni.)*  
 Often, *gyakran*.  
 One, *egy*; one another, *egymás*.  
 Only, Adv. & C., *csak*.  
 Opinion, *vélemény*; of a wrong  
 opinion, *balvéleményű*.  
 Oppress, V., *elnyom-ni*.  
 Or, C., *vagy*.

Orator, *szónok*.  
 Ordinarily, *rendesen*.  
 Ore, *ércz*.  
 Other, *más*; otherwise, *külömben*.  
 Over, *által, felett*, Po.  
 Overcome, V., *meggyőz-ni*.  
 Owe, V., *tartozik (tartoz-ni)*.  
 Own, *saját*.

## P.

Paint, V., *feste-ni*.  
 Painter, *festő*.  
 Palace, *káptély*.  
 Pale, A., *halavány*.  
 Paper, S., *papiros*.  
 Parent, *szülő*.  
 Paris, *Paris, Páris*.  
 Park, *liget*.  
 Part, S., *rész*.  
 Patriarch, *törzsatyá*.  
 Patriot, *hazafi*.  
 Pay, V., *fizet-ni*.  
 Peace, S., *béke*; in times of peace, *béke' idején*.  
 Pear, *körtve*, S., coll.  
 Peel, V., *hámoz-ni* V. a.; *hámlik (háml-ani)*, V. m.  
 Pen, S., *toll*; penknife, *tollkés*.  
 People, S., *nép*.  
 Perform, V., *végez-ni*.  
 Perhaps, *talán*.  
 Perish, V., *elvesz-ni*.  
 Perjury, *hítségés*.  
 Perseverance, *kitartás*.  
 Piano, *zongora*.  
 Picture, S., *kép*.

Picture frame, *képráma*.  
 Pit, S., *verem*.  
 Pitiful, *könyörűletes*.  
 Plague, V., *kínoz-ni*.  
 Plant, S., *növény*.  
 Plate (soup-plate), *tányér*.  
 Play, V., *játsz-ani*.  
 Play-house, *színház*.  
 Pleasant, *szép, tetszős*; it pleases, *tetszik (tetsz-eni)*; pleasure, *kedv*.  
 Pocket-handkerchief, *zsebbevaló*.  
 Poet, *költő*.  
 Pond, S., *tó*.  
 Politician, *országglár*.  
 Poor, *szegény*.  
 Power, *hatalom*; powerful, *hatalmas*.  
 Practise, V., *gyakorl-ani*.  
 Praise, V., *dicsegni*.  
 Prefer, V., *előbe tesz (tenni)*.  
 Present, A., *mostani*.  
 Present, S., *ajándék*; to present, to make a present, *ajándékoz-ni*.  
 Press, V., *szorít-ani, nyom-ni*.  
 Prevail upon, *rábír-ni*.  
 Prevent, V., *előjét veszi (venni)*; can prevent, *előjét vehet-ni*.  
 Price, *ár*.  
 Prince, *fejedelem*.  
 Printing-trade, *könyvnyomtatás*.  
 Private, A., *magány*.  
 Proceed, V., *bán-ni*.  
 Procure, V., *szerezni*.

- (Produce) to be produced, *támad-ni*, V. n.  
 Product, *termény*.  
 Production, *termesztmény*.  
 Profit, S., *nyerés, haszon*; to be profitable, *hasznot hajtani*.  
 Promise, V., *megígér-ni*.  
 Pronounce, V., *kiejt-eni*.  
 Proper, A., *tulajdon*.  
 Property, *vagyon*.  
 Propriety, *talajdonság*.  
 Prosecute, V., *üldöz-ni*.  
 Protect, V., *véd-eni*.  
 Province, *tartomány*.  
 Prune, *szilva*, S., coll.  
 Pull, V., *húz-ni*.  
 Punish, V., *megbüntet-ni*; punishment, *büntetés*.  
 Pupil, *nevendék*.  
 Pursue, V., *kerget-ni, űz-ni*.
- Q.**
- Queen, *királynő*.
- R.**
- Raiment, *öltözet*.  
 Rain, *eső*; it rains, *eső esik*.  
 Rare, *ritka*; rarity, *ritkaság*.  
 Rather, *inkább*.  
 Reach, V., *elér-ni, nyújt-ani*.  
 Read, V., *olvas-ni*.  
 Ready, *kész*.  
 Real, *valódi*; really, *igazán, valóban*.  
 Realm, *ország*.  
 Reason, S., *ész*; their reason, *eszük*.  
 Receive, V., *felvesz (felvenni), megkap-ni*.  
 Recent, *új*.  
 Reckon, V., *számít-ani*.  
 Recognize, V., *megismer-ni*.  
 Red, *veres*.  
 Reformer, *egyházjavító*.  
 Refuge, S., *menedék*.  
 Region, *tájék*.  
 Remain, V., *marad-ni*.  
 Renown, S., *hír*; renowned, *híres*, A.  
 Repose, V. n., *nyugszik (nyugodni)*.  
 Reproach, V., *pirongat-ni*.  
 Republic, *köztársasság*.  
 Residence, *lakás, lakhely*.  
 Rest, V., *pihen-ni*.  
 Restore, V., *helyreállít-ani*.  
 Return, V. a., *visszatért-eni*.  
 Reward, S., *jutalom*.  
 Rich, *gazdag*; riches, *gazdagság*.  
 Right, S., *jog*, S.  
 Righteous, *igazságos*.  
 Ring, S., *gyűrű*.  
 Ripe, *érett*.  
 Rise, V., *támad-ni*.  
 Root, S., *gyökér*.  
 Room, *szoba*.  
 Round, Pr., *körül*, Po.  
 Rout, V., *szalaszt-ani, gver-ni*.  
 Ruby, *rubin*.

Rule, V., *igazgat-ni*.

Run, V., *szalad-ni*; to run away, *elszalad-ni*.

## S.

Sacred, saint, *szent*.

Sad, *szomorú*.

Sailing, A. v., *vitortlázó*.

Sailor, *tengerész*.

Saloon, S., *terem*.

Sanguinary, *véres*.

Satisfy, V. a., *kielégít-eni*; to be satisfied, *megelégszik (megeléged-ni)*.

Saturday, *szombat*.

Say, V., *mond-ani*; to say a lesson, *felmondani a' leczkét*.

Scholar, *tanuló*.

School, S., *iskola*.

School-work, *iskolai munka*.

Scotland, *Scótország, Scótiá*.

Security, *biztosság*,

See, V., *lát-ni*.

Seeds of vegetables, *zöldségmag*.

Seek, V., *keres-ni*.

Seems, *látszik*.

Self-consuming, to be—, *magát emészti-eni*.

Selfish, *önző*.

Sell, V., *árul-ni*.

Send, V., *küld-eni*; to send for (anybody) *hivat-ni*.

Separate, V., *ekülönöz-ni*.

Septemher, *September, őszelő*.

Serpent, *kígyó*.

Servant, *szolgáló*.

Service, *szolgálat*.

Set, V. (said of the sun), *lenugszik (lenyugod-ni)*.

Sew, V., *varni*.

Shadow, S., *árnyék*.

Shape or fashion of a dress, *szabás*. *csizma*

Share, V., *osztazni*; share, S., *osztalék*.

She, ő.

Shed, V., *önt-eni*.

Ship of the line, *sorhajó*.

Show, V., *mutatni*.

Shut, V., *zární*.

Sin, V., *bűnhődik (bűnhőd-ni), vétkezik (vétkez-ni)*; sin, S., *vétek*; sins, *vétek*; sinner, *bűnös*; sinful, *bűnös*.

Sincere, *őszinte*.

Sing, V., *énekel-ni*.

Sit, V., *ül-ni*.

Slave, S., *rab*.

Sleep, S., *álom*; to be sleepy, *alhatik (alhat-ni)*.

Small, *kicsiny*,

So, *úgy, olly*.

Society, *társasság*.

Softly, *halkkal*.

Soldier, *katona*; foot-soldier *gyalog-katona*.

Some, *nehány*; somebody, *valaki*; something, *valami*, somewhere else, *máshol*, from somewhere else, *máshonnan*.

Soon, *majd*; soon after, *miután*; sooner, *előbb*.

- Soul, S., *lélek*; our soul, *lelkünk*. Sweet, *édes*.  
 Sound, V. n., *hangzik* (*hangz-ani*). Swiss, *svajczi*; Switzerland, *Svajcz*.  
 Source, S., *forrás*. Sword, *kard*.  
 Sow, V., *vet-ni*.  
 Sparrow, *veréb*.  
 Speak, V., *beszél-ni*, *szól-ni*.  
 Splendid, *pompás*.  
 Spoil, V., *elront-ani*.  
 Spoon, S., *kanál*.  
 Stand, V., *áll-ani*.  
 State, V., *állít-ani*.  
 Stay, V., *marad-ni*.  
 Steal, V., *lop-ni*.  
 Stephen, *István*.  
 Stick, S., *bot*.  
 Still, Adv., *még*.  
 Stop, V., *megakad-ni*, V. n.  
 Storm, S., *szélvész*.  
 Strange, stranger, *idegen*, A.&S.  
 Stretch out, V., *kinyújt-ani*.  
 Street, *utca*.  
 Strength, *erő*; strong, *erős*.  
 Strike, V., *üt-ni*.  
 Struggle, V., *küzd-eni*.  
 Student, *tánuló*.  
 Subjugate, V., *leigáz-ni*.  
 Succeed, V., *sikerül-ni*.  
 Such, *olly*.  
 Suddenly, *hirtelen*.  
 Summer, S., *nyár*.  
 Sun, S., *nap*.  
 Sunday, *vasárnap*.  
 Superfluous, *felesleges*.  
 Supper, *vacsora*.  
 Suppose, V., *feltesz* (*felten-ni*).  
 Surely, *bizonyosan*.  
 Surprise, V., *meglep-ni*.  
 Table, *asztal*; table-napkin, *asztalkendő*; table-cloth; *abrosz*.  
 Tailor, *szabó*.  
 Take, V., *vesz* (*venni*), *átvesz*; to take away, *elvesz* (*elven-ni*).  
 Tale, *mese*.  
 Teach, V., *tanít-ani*; teacher, *tanító*; teacher of music *zene-mester*.  
 Tedious, *unalmas*.  
 Tenant, *bérlő*.  
 Than, *mint*, Adv., *nál*, Po. a. than not, *mintsem*.  
 That, *az*, Pr.; *hogy*, C.  
 The, *az*, *a'*; the—, the, *men-nél—*, *annál*.  
 Theatre, *színház*.  
 Then, *majd*.  
 Thence, *onnan*.  
 There, *oda*.  
 They, *ők*.  
 Thick, *vastag*.  
 Think, V., *gondolkozik* (*gondolkoz-ni*).  
 This, *ez*.  
 Thither, *oda*.  
 Thou, *te*.  
 Though, *bár*.  
 Throw off, V., *levet-ni*.  
 Through, *által*, Po.



Thursday, *csötörtök*.  
 Tiger, *tigris*.  
 Time, S., *idő*, in time, *idején*.  
 Tongue, *nyelv*.  
 Tool, S., *szerszám*, coll.  
 Towards, *eránti*, A.  
 Town, *város*.  
 Trade, S., *ipar*, *kereskedés*;  
     to trade, *kereskedik* (*keres-*  
     *ked-ni*).  
 Tradesman, *iparos*, *kereskedő*.  
 Translation, *fordítás*.  
 Travel, V., *utazik* (*utaz-ni*);  
     traveller, *utazó*.  
 Trifle, S., *csekélység*.  
 Tropical region, *forróövi tar-*  
     *tomány*.  
 Trouble, S., *fáradtság*.  
 True, truth, *igaz*.  
 Trust, V., *bízik* (*bíz-ni*).  
 Tuesday, *kedd*.  
 Turn, V., *fordúl-ni*, V. n.  
 Tyrant, *zsarnok*.

## U.

Uncertain, *bizonytalan*.  
 Uncle, *nagybátya*.  
 Under, underneath, *alá*, *alatt* Po.  
 Understand, V., *ért-eni*, *még-*  
     *ért-eni*.  
 Unfortunate, *szerencsétlen*.  
 Unjustly, *igazságtalanul*.  
 Unrighteousness, *igazságtalan-*  
     *ság*.  
 Unwillingly, *akaratlanul*.  
 Up, Adv., *fel*.

Urgency, *sürgelés*.  
 Useful, *hasznos*; to be useful,  
     *használ-ni*.

## V.

Valour, *vilézség*.  
 Valuable, *értékes*, *drága*.  
 Value, V., *becsül-ni*.  
 Vanquish, V., *meggyőz-ni*.  
 Vegetables, *zöldség*, S. coll.  
 Venerate, V., *tisztel-ni*.  
 Very, *igen*.  
 Vice, *vétek*, plur. *vétek*.  
 Victory, *győzelem*; to be vic-  
     torious, *győzedelmeskedik*  
     (*győzedelmesked-ni*).  
 Village, *falu*.  
 Virtue, *erény*; virtuous, *eré-*  
     *nyes*.  
 Visit, V., *meglátogat-ni*.

## W.

Wages, *jutalom*, *bér*.  
 Wait, V., *vár-ni*.  
 Walk, V., *jár-ni*; to take a  
     walk, *sétál-ni*.  
 Walking-stick, *sétabot*.  
 Wall, S., *fal*.  
 Want (deficiency), S., *hiány*;  
     to be wanted, *kell-eni*.  
 War, *háború*; to be at war,  
     to make war *háborúskodik*  
     (*háborúskod-ni*).  
 Ware, S., *kelme*.  
 Water, S., *víz*; to water, *ön-*  
     *töz-ni*.

- Wealth, *jólét*.  
 Weather, *idő*.  
 Weaver, *takács*.  
 Wednesday, *szerda*.  
 Week, *hét*.  
 Well, *jól, egészséges* (being well).  
 Wheat, *búza*.  
 When, *mikor*.  
 Whence, *honnan*.  
 Where, *hol*.  
 Which, *melly*; plur. *mellyek*.  
 While, *míg*.  
 Who, *ki*, Pr. rel.  
 Whole, *egész*; wholesome, *egészséges*.  
 Wholesale merchant, *nagyke-reskedő*.  
 Wickedness, *gonoszság*.  
 Wide, A., *széles*.  
 Wild, *szilaj* (said of the mind), *vad*.  
 Will, V., *akar-ni*; — S., *akarat*.  
 William, *Vilmos*.  
 Wing, S., *szárny*.  
 Winter, *tél*.  
 Without, *nélkül*, Po.  
 Wood, *erdő, fa*, S. coll.  
 Word, *szó*.  
 Work, S., *munka, dolog*; to work, *dolgozik (dolgoz-ni)*.  
 Write, V., *ír-ni*.

## Y.

- Year, *év*.  
 Yes, *igen is*.  
 Yesterday, *tegnap*.  
 Yet, *még*; yet — not, *mégsem*.  
 Yield, V., *enged-ni*.  
 Yoke, S., *iga*.  
 You, *ti* (ye), *őn* (when a person is spoken to).  
 Younger brother, *öcse*.  
 Youth, *ifjúság, ifjú* (young man).



## CONTENTS OF THE SECOND PART.

---

### SKETCHES OF THE HISTORY OF HUNGARIAN LITERATURE.

	Page.
<i>I. Literary development and the fate of the language . . . . .</i>	3—28.
1. §. General remarks. — Period of the first settlement of the nation in Pannonia . . . . .	3.
2. §. The XI <sup>th</sup> and XII <sup>th</sup> Centuries . . . . .	5.
3. §. The XIII <sup>th</sup> Century . . . . .	8.
4. §. The XIV <sup>th</sup> Century . . . . .	9.
5. §. The XV <sup>th</sup> Century . . . . .	40.
6. §. The XVI. and XVII. Centuries . . . . .	44.
7. §. The XVIII <sup>th</sup> Century, until 1790 . . . . .	47.
8. §. Preparatory steps towards the rise of the nation. 1790—1830 . . . . .	49.
9. §. The rapid progress in literature owing to the Academy. 1831—1848 . . . . .	23.
<i>II. Literary productions and authors . . . . .</i>	28—44.
1. Qualifications of literary productions . . . . .	28.
2. Authors and their works. . . . .	30—44.

### SELECTIONS FROM HUNGARIAN CLASSICS.

<i>I. Prose writing . . . . .</i>	45—85.
a. Fables and an Allegory, from Andrew Fay . . . . .	45.

	Page.
b. An Allegory, from Charles Kisfaludy . . .	53.
c. Fables, from Joseph Kárman . . .	54.
d. Fables, from Francis Kazinczy . . .	55.
e. Oratorical, from Francis Kölcsey . . .	56.
f. Historical, from Joseph Péczely . . .	68.
<b>II. Poetry . . . . .</b>	<b>85—116.</b>
1. Remény, Emlékezet (Hope, Remembrance), from Fr. Kölcsey . . . .	85.
2. Szép Ilonka (Fair Helen), from M. Vörösmarty . . . . .	86.
3. Julius Caesar, from M. Vörösmarty . . . . .	91.
4. Az elhagyott anya (The forsaken mother), from M. Vörösmarty . . . .	95.
5. A' hontalan (The homeless), by Vörösmarty . . . . .	98.
6. Szózat (Appeal), by Vörösmarty . . . . .	100.
7. A' felkelt nemességhez (To the insurgent nobility), from Berzsenyi . . . .	103.
8. A' Magyarokhoz (To the Hungarians), from Berzsenyi . . . . .	
9. Jámorság és közepszer (Moderation and Medium [mediocritas]), from Berzsenyi . . . . .	107.
10. A' temető (The church-yard), from Berzsenyi . . . . .	108.
11. Fohászkodás (Sigh [prayer]), from Berzsenyi . . . . .	110.
12. Vanitatum Vanitas, from Kölcsey . . . . .	111.
13. Szülőföldem szép határa (My beautiful country), a song by Charles Kisfaludy . . . .	114.
Epigrams, from Vörösmarty, Berzsenyi and Wattay . . . . .	115.
<i>Vocabulary to the selections . . . . .</i>	<i>117.</i>



## TYPOGRAPHICAL ERRORS AND CORRECTIONS.

Page	4 line	19, read:	very	instead of:	veri
"	10	" 7,	" <i>miv,</i>	" "	" <i>mi,</i>
"	14	" 4,	" soft	" "	" sof
"	13	" 6,	" <i>já-val</i>	" "	" <i>já-vál</i>
"	27	" 2,	" <i>egészséges</i>	" "	" <i>egészséges</i>
"	28	" 20,	" <i>ügyes</i>	" "	" <i>ügges</i>
"	37	" 30,	" Prepositions	" "	" Preposition
"	45	" 8,	" are more than one	" "	" are more
"	50	" 4,	" <i>drágábbak.</i>	" "	" <i>drágábbab.</i>
"	50	" 29,	" <i>kivánnak.</i>	" "	" <i>hivánnak.</i>
"	51	" 5,	" <i>kicsiny.</i>	" "	" <i>kincsiny.</i>
"	56	" 15,	" <i>mert nem</i>	" "	" <i>mertnem</i>
"	64	" 28,	" forms	" "	" orms
"	74	" 22,	" <i>haza 's</i>	" "	" <i>hazas'</i>
"	76	" 17,	" <i>öl</i>	" "	" <i>ól.</i>
"	86	" 26,	" <i>kellessem,</i>	" "	" <i>kelessem</i>
"	93	" 22,	" <i>Ön</i>	" "	" <i>Őn</i>
"	144	" 14,	after to feed, put: <i>ítat-ni</i> to give to drink,		
"	146	" 17,	read: <i>veregethetend,</i> instead of: <i>vergethetend.</i>		
"	147	" 6,	" <i>Vergőd-ni.</i>	" "	" <i>Vergöd-ni,</i>
"	139	" 25,	" Plur. <i>Törjétek,</i>	" "	" <i>Törjétek,</i>
"	164	" 1,	" <i>sikamolik,</i>	" "	" <i>sikamolik'</i>
"	"	" 2,	" <i>sikamlík,</i>	" "	" <i>sikamlík'</i>
"	"	" 26,	" Neuter, Medial and Active Verbs. instead of: Neuter Verbs.		
"	177	" 4,	read: <i>sz, cs, cz</i> instead of: <i>sz, cz</i>		
"	198	" 23,	" <i>környék</i>	" "	" <i>kőnyék</i>
"	204	" 23,	" <i>ász,</i>	" "	" <i>fász,</i>
"	217	" 23,	" <i>bennünket</i> and <i>benneket</i> instead of: <i>benünket</i> and <i>beneteket.</i>		

Page 218	line	3	read: <i>Tied</i> ,	instead of: <i>Tieid</i> ,
"	"	7,	" <i>Tieid</i> ,	" " <i>Tieid</i> ,
" 227	"	5,	" Adjective and its dependencies; instead of: Adjectives;	
" 239	"	20	" <i>Mert</i>	instead of: <i>Nert</i>
" 243	"	21	" ones	" " ons
"	"	23	" <i>király' halálán</i> ,	" " <i>király,halálán</i> ,
" 244	"	41	" <i>néven ven-ni</i>	" " <i>néven-ven ni</i>
" 246	"	4	" <i>alatt</i>	" " <i>allat</i> ,
"	"	2	" <i>felett</i> above, <i>mellett</i>	instead of: <i>fellett</i> above, <i>mellet</i>
" 247	"	2	" the father	instead of: he father
" 248	"	2	" <i>született</i> ,	" " <i>szülelett</i> ,
" 250	"	10	" <i>tettem</i>	" " <i>lettem</i>
" 251	"	4	" an oath,	" " on oath,
" 253	"	9	" <i>nyúlra</i> , he shot the hare. instead of: <i>nyúlra</i> hare.	
" 258	"	4	" <i>fenyeget</i>	instead of: <i>fengeget</i>
"	"	2	" <i>retent</i>	" " <i>rentent</i>
" 263	"	3	after <i>Nagyszombat</i> ; put: <i>az atyámnál levő</i>	
<i>urak</i> , the gentlemen (that are) with my father. — Otherwise only the affix <i>nál nél</i> is used: as,				
" 270	line	43,	read: <i>liable</i>	instead of: <i>ilable</i>
"	"	22,	" <i>kigerjedez</i> .	" " <i>kigerjedes</i> .
" 280	"	22,	" <i>los</i>	" " <i>ost</i>
" 284	"	47,	" the cannons", answered the colonel.	
instead of: cannons.				
" 289	column	first line	49, read: <i>Búza</i> ,	instead of: <i>Buza</i> ,
" 302	"	sec.	" 47. " street.	" streel.
" 307	"	first	" 22. " <i>resztény</i> ,	" <i>esztény</i> ,
" 308	"	"	" 21. " <i>leront-ani</i> ,	" <i>leront-ani</i> .
" 310	"	"	" 15. " <i>telyesít-eni</i>	" <i>telyesít-eni</i> .
"	"	"	" 29. " <i>németül Adv.</i>	" <i>nemetül</i> .
" 314	"	"	" 7. " <i>hősi</i> ; hero-like	" <i>hősi</i> hero-like.
"	"	"	" 15. " <i>otthon</i>	" <i>o hon</i> .
" 314	"	sec.	" 34. " Printing-trade,	" Printing-tra
" 316	"	"	" 8. " <i>osztózní</i> ;	" <i>osztóznni</i> ;
" 317	"	"	" 7. " <i>asztalkendő</i> ;	" <i>asztatkendő</i> ;
" 318	"	first	" 28. " <i>még-</i>	" <i>még-</i>
" 319	"	<i>2nd</i>	" 4. " <i>nélkül</i> ,	" <i>nétkül</i> .

## SECOND PART.



# SKETCHES

OF THE

## HISTORY OF HUNGARIAN LITERATURE.

---

### I. LITERARY DEVELOPMENT AND THE FATE OF THE LANGUAGE.

#### ***NATIONAL STRUGGLES.***

#### 1. §. GENERAL REMARKS. — PERIOD OF THE FIRST SETTLEMENT OF THE NATION IN PANNONIA.

Language and customs are the features of nations and the expressions of a national mind. As the latter grows older, the former change proportionally.

In the Hungarian language we immediately notice the oriental character of the nation, which has been kept up through nearly 9 centuries: although hard struggles, partly national, partly political, and lasting external wars, ultimately diminished the primitive people.

This peculiar phenomenon of an oriental language in the middle of Europe, surrounded as it was, every where by nations of an occidental



character, unobserved by the people of the western shores, had attracted the attention of some German philologists as far as they found it necessary to mention the Hungarian language, in order to satisfy the opinion which the German public conceived of its philosophers. It was considered as having exhausted Philological materials, when the work had a section or an appendix, in which even the Hungarian language was mentioned; hence, the confused notions of the Hungarian nation and of its language\*).

We do not inherit any literary productions

---

\*) Adelung, the great German philologist, in his *Mithridates*, speaking of the Hungarian language, mentions some very strange things. — Comparing the Works written by German and Slavonian authors on the Hungarian nation and on its language, we are led to conclude, that the Hungarians hardly had a language before they came into Pannonia, and that after their settlement in modern Hungary they made excursions to different parts of Europe in order to rob other people of a few words. — Adelung, in his *Mithridates*, gives a quantity of words as derived: — from German; amongst others: *Lyuk*, (hole) from *Loch*; *lusta* (disorderly idle), from *laß* (faul); *eszem* (I eat), from *ich esse*; *Vitorla* (the sail), from *Wetterhahn* (weather cock); *bűcsű* (the leave) from *Büße* (the penance); *föld* (the earth) from *Feld* (fields); — from French: *Aczél* (steel), from *acier*; *érsek*, from *archeveque*; — from Latin: *Szarvas* (the stag, deer) from, *cervus*; *falu* (village), from *villa*. The Slavonian writers still are worse. But the fact, that all the foreign authors disagree with one another in their theories of derivation, deprives them of credit, and renders refutation and vindication of the Hungarians superfluous.

of the first period of the settlement of the Hungarians in Europe, — before their conversion to Christianity. Foreign authors are the sources of the national History (History of the country); from what is mentioned by them, we may conclude, that the period, at which the Hungarians lived under their heathen monarchs, was the time of songsters. It is mentioned\*): „they gave feasts, danced at the sound of their military music, and sung their national songs.“

## 2. §. THE XI<sup>th</sup> AND XII<sup>th</sup> CENTURIES.

(Flourishing period of the nation.)

The introduction of Christianity amongst the Hungarians has not had the same effect upon their language, which it has exercised on nearly all other European languages. — The tribes inhabiting the land beyond the Eastern empire\*\*), received the doctrine of the Christian church from people bearing the worn-out coat of a Grecian nation, and with these doctrines their language received a tint of Grecism. The immigrated hordes of the West of Europa were instructed in the religious doctrines of the Western empire,

---

\*) Anonymi Belae regis notarii res gestae Hungarorum, Endlicher edition.

\*\*) Roman oriental empire.

and inclined, more or less, towards Romanism, in language and social character.

Between these two large sects of the Christian church the Magyars have settled, considered by the Ecclesiastical Locumtenant of Rome as the bastion of papal domination against oriental invasions, and Grecian encroachments,—cajrolled by the eastern potentates, who sought to gain in them an ally against the overgrowing Roman giant. — Besides these, there were three strange elements combined in the conversion of the heathen Magyars, who received baptism about 1000 years after Christ\*). The conversion was begun by Greeks, but was achieved by their own prince and his consort, and received the sanction of the Pope. Besides, the Magyars, in fact, received baptism, not because they were convinced of the beneficial effects of the Christian doctrines on human society, but out of deep reverence and partly from fear of their chief, who already had been brought up in the Christian religion. —

All these circumstances combined had great influence on the whole series of events by which we trace the life of the Magyar nation, and contributed much to preserve the Hungarian language.

---

\*) The conversion had begun in 950; but it was only Prince Stephen, afterwards King Stephen I., who took a decisive step in regard to this important object, after 997 after Christ.

The Kings of the Arpadian line remained victors in all the struggles against the Roman Python, up to the 13<sup>th</sup> century. The national customs and language were kept up with the political rights of the nation. The aversion to Latin learning was ever so great, that it was enforced by laws and statutes upon persons who wished to be ordained\*). — King Albert (Béla) III., a pupil of the Byzantine court, introduced a chancery similar to that of the Byzantine court, and by royal decrees literal proceedings in the transactions, both of private and public affairs, were, from that time, enforced.

Although the indomitable desire of the nation for primeval customs soon overpowered the weak monarchs reigning in the 13<sup>th</sup> century, and foreign social reforms were abolished by law, the language restored to its primeval rights: nevertheless the fatal custom of dividing the realm between father and son, thus establishing two courts which undermined each other, nearly annihilated the royal authority, and with it the moral existence of the Magyars.

---

\*) Under King Coloman, 1092—1115.

3. §. THE XIII<sup>th</sup> CENTURY.

(Period of the decline of the national power.)

The 13<sup>th</sup> century is the fatal century of the nation. The ancient glory vanishes, internal dissensions, mostly the consequence of weak and morally powerless Kings, begin to gnaw the roots of the national strength. The incessant shocks, which the political institutions of the Magyars received from papal ambition, the devastating ravages of Tartarian ferocity\*), the enemy of the institutions of civilized nations, and effeminate Kings, who happened to ascend the throne when the misfortunes of the nation required indefatigable and persevering exertions, were blows from which the nation has never recovered.

With ancient grandeur avitical customs declined, and instead of patriotism, the national pride often became overgrown with extuberances of anarchy. The bright points, in the History of the Hungarian nations, are only so many passing comets wanting consolidation.

The counties depopulated by Tartarians were to be repopulated by foreign immigrants; with

---

\*) In the year 1244, under King Albert (Béla) IV., the Khan Batu invaded Hungary with about 500,000 Mogolians and other Tartarian hords, depopulating it for nearly two years.



foreign immigrants a foreign language and foreign customs were brought into the land. The Magyars, though diminished in number, yet not broken in spirit, concentrated themselves in the plains of the south-east, and in that part of Hungary which is called the land beyond the forest, Transilvania, forming thus two focuses of a national Elipse. — The remoter parts of the country, from these focuses, were entirely occupied by foreign people, who spoke languages of nearly as many different characters as there were counties of the realm occupied by them. —

When a nation, afflicted with such calamities remote from its avitical seats, surrounded and pressed by foreign elements, is able to keep up the language, the manners and social institutions inherited by their great ancestors, historians must be induced to believe in its destination for immortality.

#### 4. §. THE XIV<sup>th</sup> CENTURY.

(Foreign dynasties occupy the throne.)

After the expiration of the Arpadian line, foreign dynasties decided on the fate of the nation, and on the fate of its language. —

Charles the First, of the Anjou dynasty, brought over with him an Italian court, from Naples, that disliked Hungarian customs, and Hungarian

manners, and despised the Hungarian language. He himself reorganized the chancery, introduced by Bela III<sup>th</sup>, and gave it a more stable foundation; being supported by the clergy, he introduced the Latin language as the language of public business. Dreading the power of the Hungarian nobility, he established something like a Hungarian court at Visegrad, the ultimate design of which was to bury the rough nationalism under the splendour of an effeminating Italian court, but not to satisfy the real desires of some grandees of the nation. —

His son Lewis the First, engaged throughout his life with the external increase of an Empire, had little time to sacrifice to the interest of the Hungarian nation. — The money raised in the realm, instead of employing it to develop the moral and intellectual strength of the nation, which might have been a durable foundation of his Eastern empire, and would have raised the Hungarians to the first rank of European nations, he squandered to support foreign courts, and to satisfy the vanity of medieval conceptions of grandeur.

The Latin style received its definite diplomatical forms under the reign of this King, and the gates of the royal court and those of the Jurisdictions were thus shut against the national language, which henceforth retired to the

peaceable home of the agriculturist, and to the camps of the army. The avidity of the nobility having been satisfied by a new burden, imposed upon the peasantry, they could not perceive any danger for the nationality, as they did a century ago.

Things remained in that state until the reformation in the church brought on a new era for literature. —

### 5. §. THE XV<sup>th</sup> CENTURY.

(Reformation of the Romish Church, — The nation rises under brave leaders; John Hunyadi, and his son Matthew.)

In the Laws of Hungary, enacted under the Kings of the Arpadian dynasty, there is mentioned the name of „Hungarian rites” \*). This singular fact evidently proves, that the nation never submitted entirely to papal despotism; and consequently the reformation of the church, urged by the follies of the Roman clergy itself, no sooner was begun, than it struck root in Hungary. The imminent danger of an invasion from Turkish hordes, already ravaging the yonder coasts of the Mediterranean, occupied the attention of the Euro-

---

\*) Under Ladislaus I, and Andreas III. The former in his Decree regarding the rites of the church says: „Latini, qui Ungarorum consuetudine, scilicet....., si se nostro consuetudini meliori non consentire dixerint, quocunque volunt eo vadant.

pean courts, and especially that of the pope, so much, that the lands beyond the Tisza\*) were lost sight off; the neglect and contempt of the Hungarian language, by those priests who were the fanatical subjects of the papal throne, were very favourable circumstances to promote the progress of the Reformation, and were thus the causes of the re-establishment of the language. —

Already at the beginning of the XV<sup>th</sup> century, we meet with a translation of a part of the bible (see below) into Hungarian, thus, at a time when not many other people of Europe could enjoy the benefits of reading the holy writ. The language was successively cultivated by the Reformers, and scarcely had Luther and Calvin (in the next century) awakened the sleeping mind of their people, when the people of Hungary embraced the new doctrine with ardent zeal. —

The revival of the doctrine, established to alleviate the burdens of human society, was every where followed by the revival of science and that of nationality. Hungary was not at this time backward, but had its share in all of them, and might have risen to the height which was attained by other nations, if external wars and tyrannical intrigues at home had not fettered the people; the former threatening annihilation of physical

---

\*) Tisza, Theis, is a river in Hungary, along the shores of which the Hungarians are concentrated.

existence, the latter suppressing intellectual development. —

There is one strange phenomenon in the History of Hungarian literature of this period, and that is the reign of Mathias Corvinus\*), the son of John Hunyadi, the terror of the Turks. —

This King was a true Hungarian, having at his heart the greatness of his nation; he protected the sciences and highly esteemed learned men; he founded a library, in his residence at Buda, comprehending 50,000 volumes; a printing office was established under his protection in the same town: yet, this period is void in Hungarian literature. Unfortunately this great King lived in a period when scholasticism was flourishing, when a Romano-mania infected the lower and higher classes of human society, and when the whole of western Europe was entangled in the papal net, woven in monastical institutions. It is impossible to decide on the period of his reign in regard to the subject of Hungarian literature, for, the splendid Library of King Matthew has been entirely destroyed by the pillaging Turks, and when Buda was devastated by the besiegers.\*\*)

---

\*) From 1458 until 1490.

\*\*) After the unfortunate battle at Mohács the Turks occupied Buda and with it the lower part of the kingdom; in 1686 Buda was reconquered by the united army of the German empire and Hungary.



6. §. THE XVI<sup>th</sup> & XVII<sup>th</sup> CENTURIES.

(Hungary under the dominion of the Austrian dynasty; —  
Struggles for national and religious freedom.)

The XVI<sup>th</sup> and XVII<sup>th</sup> centuries are those of hard struggles for national existence. The Turks, threatening to extinguish the nation physically, depopulated the country which formed the nation's focus; foreign potentates, — whose governments have stigmatized themselves as enemies even to the name of nation itself, and as Great-Inquisitors wheresoever the existence of the least moral power of a nation was conjectured, — have endeavoured to prevent intellectual development; in this work they have been assisted by the ecclesiastics of the only beatifying church. —

The battle at Mohács\*) delivered up the country to the Turks, for them to ravage through a century and a half. The death of Lewis the Second delivered also the nation to the Habsburgian dynasty, who, while endeavouring to suppress the national spirit, stifled the national language.

The misfortune which had befallen the nation of having lost its King, exposed to the danger of being conquered by the Turks, induced one part of it to elect Ferdinand, duke of Austria, as King of Hungary, whilst the other full

---

\*) Fought in 1526, in which king Lewis II perished, with him 2 Archbishops 5 Bishops and a considerable part of the nobility.

of distrust, preferred conferring the royal dignity on a native grandee. But Hungary had no man intellectually or morally capable of bearing a crown on his head, and fell a sacrifice to its follies of former times.

The distrusting party was in time justified before the world, for, scarcely had the Austrian duke the crown he longed for, when he unhesitatingly submitted to pay tribute to the Sultan. instead of revenging the battle of Mohács, by driving the invaders from a country whose monarch he pretended to be.

His successors submitted to pay the same tribute. Rudolph I, besides paying the tribute, began publicly to pursue the principle of Austrian policy, which has been so truly observed by all his successors. The nobility was alarmed at the arbitrariness of Rudolph, and having plainly understood, that Austria pursued an anti-magyar policy, they demanded, though fruitlessly, the banishment of the foreign officers from the country.

In the mean time the new doctrine of the Christian church had gained ground all over Hungary, and the Protestants consequently were persecuted by the protectors of the kingdom and its liberties with indefatigable zeal. The Apostles of the new doctrine worked through the lumber of a neglected language, with patriotic zeal and Christian perseverance, for the sake of

their believers the catholic priests, in order to dam up the rapid stream of ecclesiastical innovations, were obliged to assist in the work of cultivating the national language. Thus, in the shortest time, the Hungarian language became the language of divines and of those who promulgated the doctrine of Christ. — On the other side, the Hungarian nobility, though too late, seeing themselves deceived and betrayed, were reanimated to recover their nationality and with it the rights of the language. It was now evident to them, that they had a mortal enemy in the Habsburgian dynasty, and that there would be no end of enmities until either the nation or the dynasty be extinguished. —

That part of the nation which had not been subjugated by the Turks rose with just indignation, to combat for its existence with the Christian enemy, or, if fate had already marked the limits of the national existence, to struggle heroically till the last breath, and to find an honorable death, under the device „for God and the fatherland \*)“. — In the History of these struggles only leaders succeeded each other, the principle remained the same, and will be the same in every

---

\*) „Istenért és hazáért“ (for God and the fatherland) were the inscriptions on the banners of Bocskay, 1605—6, Bethlen, 1649, Rákótzky, 1632.

same in every ensuing struggle. The heroical deeds were celebrated by poets, patriotic poems stimulated the warriors to perseverance, and inflamed the youthful heart to despise the dangers of war. —

Prosaic writers hastened to make known to the people its ancient rights, by translating the diplomatical volumes, which a century ago had been collected and consigned in the Latin language; Chronicles were consigned to the Hungarian language, both in prose and poetry, reminding the nation of its glorious ancestors and handing down the deeds of their age to posterity. As Hungarian writing progressed, there arose men who endeavoured to bring the language under the rules of Grammar, and, to their praise be it said, although the works were defective, yet, taken relatively, they were carefully compiled.

#### 7. §. THE XVIII<sup>th</sup> CENTURY UNTIL 1790.

(Relaxation of the nation; closer alliances with the house of Austria; reaction of the nation in consequence of the arbitrary measures of the Viennese court.)

Every excitement is counterbalanced by an equivalent relaxation. The nation was physically and morally fatigued by the wearisome wars; the dynasty itself seemed inclined to satisfy the desires of the patriots: thus a way was tried of

amicably arranging the differences between the nation and the reigning house. Induced by such motives the nation entered into a closer alliance with the dynasty, desiring to make its interests those of the reigning house; but the dynasty thought and acted in a contrary direction, and made the nation subservient to its private interests.

As a language unknown to the people, when it is used to administer to them the blessing of religious faith, is the surest foundation of the hierarchical power, and as monarchs subduing nations rely upon those who govern the inexplicable feelings of the people, in order to secure a durable reign: ecclesiastical and political powers render each other ready assistance, in order to suffocate nations in their own language.

The Hungarian language, therefore, was banished to the home of the shepherd and agriculturist, and the Latin was introduced in schools and all public transactions; in the public meetings of the county-court-halls Latin was the language of transactions and conversation.

The space of time from 1700 till 1780 may justly be called the Latin Period of the nation, in opposition to that of the Arpadian dynasty; for, as in the latter laws enforcing Latin learning were enacted continually, so in this decrees were sanctioned, that no person unacquainted



with the Hungarian language should be employed in ecclesiastical offices.

The voice raised by some patriots to form an association of learned men, for cultivating and propagating the Hungarian language, still sounded in the wilderness unre-echoed.

Joseph II., considering Hungary as an integral part of the German empire (the behaviour of his predecessors caused him to believe as much), wished to lay the foundation of an internal coalition of all the different nations who were kept together by the iron arm of despotism into one empire. He introduced the German language, as that of public instructions and transactions, into all the provinces, which his ancestors had brought under his sceptre. His innovating orders, therefore, threw a new ferment into the scarcely settled mind of the nation. It once more rose indignantly, and the yoke of a foreign government would have been thrown off, had not the Emperor's death and the revocation of his innovatory edicts changed the features of the affairs of the realm. —

#### 8. §. PREPARATORY STEPS TOWARDS THE RISE OF THE NATION. 1790—1830.

The menacing aspect of France supported the nation in its claims, and it was only through the mildness and ready compliance of Leopold, with

which he met the grievances of the nation in the diet 1790—1, that the dynasty was saved from its fall.

The lower house\*) was saluted by the vicegerent (Locumtenens) Ürményi in Hungarian; he admonished the representatives to unite their moral strength, for the good of the nation. His speech was answered by the deputy of the Chapter-house (capitulum) of Esztergom, who censured the innovations made by the late monarch.—

The lower house then proceeded to settle upon the language to be used in the transactions of the diet. It was resolved: that henceforth the Hungarian language shall be received in parliamentary transactions, and the diary (minutes of the diet) be kept in the national language, and the publication of the minutes as well as the reception of the Hungarian language in all public transactions were urged. —

The upper-house (*felső tábla*) objected to the last two resolutions as running from one extreme to another, — always accompanied by internal convulsions, — which might prove dangerous under the then being state of political affairs. —

The patriots, in both houses, urged the establishment of a Hungarian Academy, and a com-

---

\*) The lower-house (*alsó tábla*) was constituted by the county-deputies of the nobility and the deputies of the municipal towns (*libera regia civitas*).

mittee, formed by deputies of both houses, was charged with the drawing up of its plan. — The 16<sup>th</sup> Article of the law of 1794, sanctioned by Leopold the First, commanded the introduction of the Hungarian language into all the upper-schools (Gymnasium, Colleges and the University); but in public transactions (*dicasterialia negotia*) the Latin style was still to be retained. —

Under the direction of Kelemen (an attorney at the royal court in Pest) a dramatic society was formed, which for want of public support was soon dissolved, — it did not exist in 1792. — The erection of a national theatre was delayed for nearly another half century. The Dramatic society at Kolosvár, in Transilvania, formed in 1799, was more fortunate, being supported by the provincial diet, 1804, when a voluntary contribution of 30,000 florins (3000 £) for the erection of a proper theatre was resolved; the number of performers soon increased so much, that one part of them was translocated to Debreczin\*); — the new theatre was finished in 1820, and inaugurated by private performers of the nobility on the 12<sup>th</sup> of March, 1821. —

Count Francis Széchényi, father of the late minister, after his return from the Neapolitan embassy, adopted as his favourite pursuit the intel-

---

\*) The principal town in the east of Hungary.

lectual development of his country; he, therefore, opened his large private library to Hungarian learned men. In 1802, his library was transferred to Pest, and opened for public use, under the patronage of the Count Palatine, the Archduke Joseph. Thus, the noble count immortalized his name by laying the foundation of the Hungarian National Museum, which was finally established in 1811. —

The indefatigable zeal of Nicolas Revay, Professor of Hungarian literature, at the University of Pest, deserves due regard; his work, "*Antiquitates literaturae Hungaricae*, Pestini, 1803", though written in Latin, had a twofold effect: it, first, brought to public knowledge some monuments of Hungarian literature of former centuries, which, up to his time, were concealed in private and public archives, or at least not duly regarded; secondly, it attracted the attention of the patriots and enemies of Hungarian nationality, and produced a literary controversy between them which had a beneficial influence on Hungarian literature. —

Foreign wars retarded the development of institutions for promoting national literature, and therefore, the progress of literature itself, though they gave origin to many patriotic and heroic songs.

After the restoration of peace, the liberal

party of Hungary concentrated its whole strength, to act vigorously in favour of national development. The establishment of the Hungarian Academy was the chief object that occupied their attention; and, when the disputes and fruitless deliberations about raising funds for the Academy arose, the noble count Stephen Széchényi raised a new monument to his family, by generously offering his whole yearly income, estimated at 60,000 florins, as a contribution (or, rather as the first deposit) to the funds of a Hungarian Academy; animated by such generosity count Károlyi made an offer of 45,000, count Andrassy one of 20,000, florins. The long wished-for object was thus obtained. The Article XI. of the law of 1827, finally established the erection of the Academy, under the name of "*A Magyar Tudós Társaság*", and a commission consisting of members from both houses was charged with its organisation. The commission discharged its duty at the end of 1830, and the new Academy held its first grand meeting on the 15<sup>th</sup> of February, 1831.

#### 9. §. THE RAPID PROGRESS IN LITERATURE OWING TO THE ACADEMY. 1831—1848.

With the year 1831, the Hungarian language commenced a new era. The Academy proclaimed to be their object:



“To direct all their efforts towards the cultivation of sciences and belles-letters, in the national language; by such means, to give it elegance, to enrich and provide it with a sublime style, that it might eternally subsist in its own splendour; national and intellectual power being successively developed by useful knowledge.

“With indefatigable zeal to bring to light the traces and literary monuments of the Hungarian language, wherever they might be concealed.

“To promulgate all the inventions of former and recent times, and the progress made in science.

“Lastly, to encourage fertile minds, which otherwise, left to themselves, might languish, to accomplish works that should bring renown and glory upon the nation.”

The more grand the object of the Academy was, in regard to the nation, the more obstacles were to be removed, in order to pursue the path pointed out: the greater were its merits, and the higher claims had its members to the gratitude of the nation, which, however, being prevented by fatal events, could not discharge its duty.

In less than ten years the Hungarian nation was close on the heels of those nations who had left her behind, in the former century. Under the protection of the Academy, and by means of its

material assistance, there were published belletristic works, not yielding to foreign contemporaneous literature in point of elegance. The Academy, by publishing a dictionary of scientific technical terms, paved the way for those who pursued scientific studies.

In the upper-schools, the language disentangled itself from the net of Latinism, in the elementary schools it overpowered the giant of Slavonism and the German language.

Under the direction of Gabriel Döbrentei and Andrew Fáy a stable Dramatic society was formed at Buda, in 1833, — at that time there were 14 associations of that kind in the Kingdom. — The academy, in regard to the funds it could dispose of, liberally rewarded the best original dramatic productions; thus, the newly formed dramatic society has never been in want of classical dramas. The indefatigable zeal of the patriots, at last, succeeded in establishing a proper national theatre at Pest. The funds, for the erection and maintenance of this theatre, were raised by a contribution of the nobility; as enacted in the law of 1840. By such means the nation, at this time represented only by the nobility, discharged the duty it held towards the national dramatists.

Another important step, taken by the same diet, was the restoration of the Hungarian lan-

guage to its rights, by establishing it as the diplomatical one, throughout the whole kingdom; even the Viennese court was to transact business with Hungary in the national language.

The death of Charles Kisfaludy (1829), a very sad event, considering the early and irreparable loss of the dramatic poet, was followed by consequences very beneficial to Hungarian literature. The patriots, in order to honour the memory of the great poet, wished to adorn his grave with a proper tomb-stone; to defray these expenses, a subscription of voluntary contributions was opened. The contributions received were so abundant, that, after the expenses for the erection of the tomb-stone were defrayed, the treasurers of the executive commission returned a surplus.

No more noble object could be pursued, no higher honour could be conferred upon the memory of the deceased, than by the institution of the "*Kisfaludy társasság*" (Kisfaludy-association) for promoting Hungarian polite literature, to which purpose the above surplus was contributed.

This association was a strong and powerful lever in raising polite literature; besides its moral influence, it provided material assistance for the poorer literati, and, what was of still greater importance, it became the primary canal through

which productions in polite literature were conveyed to the public.

Louis Kossuth as editor of the „*pesti hírlap*, (Pest journal, from 1841—43), gave the nation a new impulse with his leading articles. The political movement, — which was a national one, — influenced the literary progress in a very high degree; both (the political and literary movements) seemed to unite in order to realise the idea of a great Hungarian nation. All the inhabitants of the country, belonging to very different nations\*) were entangled in the great national movement; in various parts of the realm new focuses of Hungarian nationality were formed, whence the beneficial rays of mental and moral liberty, with the desire for the formation of one great nation, extended over the surrounding countries.

The association\*\*) for protecting home industry, besides its beneficial influence upon the manufacturing and working classes, produced a national polytechnic institution, a new field for scientific and literary labour.

In the last five years (from 1843) scientific works on all kinds of subjects were published;

---

\*) Hungary, besides the Hungarians, is inhabited by: Slavonians (slavi), Serbians, Croatsians, Russians, Vens, Bulgarians, Germans, Wallachians, Jews, and a few French, Greeks, and of the Monte Negro tribe.

\*\*) Formed under the presidency of Count Batthanyi.

every capable mind was engaged in conveying materials, or arranging the ready ones, for a great national monument. The year 1848 seemed to throw down the abyss all foreign elements, and the nation to have the same footing on which the principal nations of Europe stood. — Fate had decided differently from what human conceptions of righteousness could have expected, and lingering humanity would have desired. The moral power of the nation was maimed by the physical force of the colossus of European despotism; the nation was crushed; its language and literature were buried under the ruins of nationality, and wherever a glimmering spot yet strikes a despotical eye, it is carefully interred by the enemies of even the name of Hungary.

## II. LITERARY PRODUCTIONS AND AUTHORS.

### 1. Qualification of literary productions.

The history of Hungary is a series of uninterrupted moral and physical struggles for primitive personal independence from the unjust institutions of Franconian (German) feudalism, and a successive breaking of Asiatic\*) fluctuation, excited by national emotions, against the narrow

---

\*) Such as the free and not subdued nations of Asia produced.



shores of European constitutionalism. These elements, already powerful enough to keep up commotions like those witnessed in the preceding centuries, were reinforced by the ecclesiastical movements.

As literary productions are the geological strata, by which we trace the age of intellectual and moral life, in which we may notice the different vicissitudes that have afflicted the latter, and the successive changes of the external appearance of nationalism: we must expect, that the literary productions of the Hungarian nation will be qualified by circumstances, which either could not influence the western nations, or would have a very unimportant effect on their social life. —

Theological and religious works were the principal features of Hungarian literature of the centuries before 1790, — a natural consequence of the hard struggles of the protestant principle against papal darkness.

In the works of polite literature of Hungary a patriotic animation is observed, which often becomes the leading idea. When reading these works, we feel with the authors themselves, the heart beats faster, and, mysteriously overpowered, an enthusiasm for national glory becomes the only moving power of the mind; we represent to ourselves, we feel, we see, the exertions made by the nation to divest itself of the foreign gar-

ment, in which it was wrapped up by European civilisation\*).

The literary productions of the Hungarian nation bear, therefore, a national character, and in that respect they are somewhat different from those of other European nations.

## **2. Authors and their works.**

### **a. 894—1526.**

(Arpadian, and the first period of the subjection of the nation under foreign dynasties.)

There are no traces of literary productions yet discovered, belonging to the 10<sup>th</sup> or 11<sup>th</sup> century; the first state of the language is, therefore, concealed from the philologist. All that foreign and domestic writers remember is, that the Hungarians had their own martial songs, that their princes and grandees kept songsters\*\*) to amuse them at their feats and in their campaigns. As the first century, remembered as the European existence of the nation, really was a continual campaign, those songs must have been common amongst the Hungarians. — Public business was transacted in the national language\*\*\*)

---

\*) I do not mean culture (cultura), with which the word civilisation is often, but erroneously, exchanged.

\*\*) We are reminded of the German wandering songsters.

\*\*\*) Under King Coloman (1095—1144), who for his learn-

The first literary monument of this period is a liturgical book, containing the funeral ceremonies in Hungarian. Pázmán, and, after him, Revay, analyzed its text, in regard to style and genius; Döbrentei did the same in his „*Magyar nyelvemlékek*“ (Monuments of the Hungarian language). The latter placed its origin between 1170 and 1200.

Of more value and importance is a translation of a great part of the Bible. Authors differ in regard to the year of its origin; recent examinations show, that it belongs to the time between 1437 and 1440. This translation, containing the Books of Ruth, Esther, Baruch, Maccabeus, the Prophets (of the four principal prophets there are only fragments) and the four Gospels\*), was achieved by two friars, *Tamás* and *Bálint*, and was intended for the use of Hungarian Hussites who took refuge in Moldavia.

Another translation of the whole Bible by *Bertalan* was printed in 1508. The prayer-book of madame Paul de Kinizsi, containing forms of devotion in prose and poetry, is of 1513.

Less important productions, belonging to the

---

ing was called the „librifér“ (book-bearer), a certain Albricus was charged with the translation of the King's decrees into Latin.

\*) The manuscripts are preserved in the royal libraries at Vienna and Munich.

close of the XV<sup>th</sup> century, are: *Emlék-dal Mátyás halálára*, Memorial song of the death of King Matthew; *Siralom ének Bot Jánosról*, Elegy upon John Bot; etc.

**b. 1526—1848.**

(Hungary under the rule of Kings of the Austrian dynasty. — Reformation of the church.)

**α. 1527—1790.**

(Religious struggles, and pacific means of reconciling the nation with its fate.)

The reformation from Germany soon spread over Hungary. Endowed men received instruction, in the new doctrine, in the German universities, and became apostles of it in their native country. The contest between the reformed churches and the catholics produced a great number of religious and theological works, mostly dogmatical ones.

In the latter part of the XVI<sup>th</sup> century five translations of the Scriptures are upon record.

*Komjáthy Benedek: Zent Paal leveley magyar nyelűen 1533.* — Letters of St. Paul in Hungarian, by Benet Komjáthy, 1533.

*Gabriel: Wj Testamentomagyar nyelűen 1536.* New Testament in Hungarian, by Gabriel, 1536.

*Sylvester János.*—The same.

*Heltai Gáspár, Magyar Biblia*, Hungarian Bible, 1551.

*Károlyi Gáspár*, *Magyar Biblia*, 1589. This translation is considered as the best; its second edition, revised by Albert Molnár; appeared in 1608. Many editions of the translation of Károlyi were printed up to 1846.

*Heltai Gáspár* (Jasper Heltai) holds undoubtedly the most prominent point in regard to literature. Besides his theological works, he published a translation of the laws of the realm from the Latin collection; a Chronicle, „*Magyar Krónika*“, the first historical work of any importance.

*Bornemissza Péter* (Peter Bornemissa), the most celebrated ecclesiastical orator, left a collection of five thick volumes of his sermons, 1579.

*Juhász János* (John Juhász) exerted himself in the Exegesis (exposition) of the Letters of John, 1569.

The secular writers deserving our esteem are:

*Tinódy Sebestyén* (Sebastian Tinódy), a poet, who celebrated the heroic deeds of gallant leaders and soldiers, 1552—58.

*Válkay, Torday, Székely*, who wrote: „*A' világ, chronikája*“ (Chronicle of the World) and *Gossárváry*, were the Historians.

*Csáktornya* and *Juhász* gave some proofs of imitation of the Roman classics.

In the XVII<sup>th</sup> and the first half of the XVIII<sup>th</sup> century, were, *Pázmán*, about 1640, *Bél Mátyás*,



about 1710, and *Bod Péter*, about 1743, the most celebrated ecclesiastical writers; the first on the part of the Catholic, the latter two on the part of the Protestant Church. Bod, besides his theological works, wrote a History of Hungarian literature: „*Magyar Athénás*“ (Hungarian Athens), 1766. *Davidis*, *Németi*, *Alvinczy*, *Telkibányi* (the latter wrote on Puritanism 1654), and *Katona*, exerted themselves in theological writings in the XVII<sup>th</sup> century; *Bertalanfi*, and the authoress *Daniel Polyxena*, in the XVIII<sup>th</sup> century; *Rimai*'s celebrated Hymns are of the beginning of the XVIII<sup>th</sup> century.

Translations of the Scripture have been accomplished by:

*Káldi*, a jesuit, who translated the Vulgata, 1626.

*Komáromi Csipkés*, a protestant, who translated the whole Bible, 1635.

*Baranyi György* (George Baranyi), who translated the New Testament, 1754.

In polite literature the heroic poem „*Zríniás*“, or the Fall of Szigeth\*), by Nicholas Zrinyi (called the poet, in order to distinguish him from

---

\*) Szigeth, a fortress in the south of Hungary, was taken by the Turks in 1566. Nicholas Zrinyi defended the fortress with a handful of troops, against the whole army of the Turks for five weeks, and died like a hero.

the hero), and the lyric poems of *Gyöngyösi*, bear the character of progress though not of the purity of the language. *Anyós* and *Baróthy*, lyric poets, and *Bessenyei*, a dramatist, lived in the latter half of the XVIII<sup>th</sup> century, preparing the way for the coming æra.

As linguistic works may be mentioned: the Grammar of *Katona*, 1645, and the „Dictionarium trilingue“ (Dictionary in three — Latin, Hungarian and German — Languages), by *Páriz-pápai*.

In regard to science in general, *Apátzi* was the compiler of an Encyclopedia.

β. 1790—1848

(The nation throws off the yoke of the dead Latin language, and saves itself from being swallowed by the overgrowing giant of German culture. — Rise of the literature.)

The space of time from 1791 until 1848, thus, 7 years above half a century, may be separated into two periods: the preparatory one, comprehending the first 40 years, and the period of the rise of literature, comprehending not two decenniums; the latter of which is that of gigantic exertions in regard to the intellectual and social life of the nation.

*Décsy Sámuel* and *Aranka* (both of 1791) are the first who rouse the slumbering nation with their cries for a Hungarian Academy; they were followed by *Endrődy*, with his History of Hungarian Dramaturgy (History of Hungarian Theatres), 1791,

by *Kármán* (an attorney), with his *Urania*, a periodical publication of polite literature, 1794; the „*Magyar Műzsák*“, another periodical of polite literature, established at Kassa in the north of Hungary, 1797. — The lyric poet *Csokonai* began to write in the same decennium. —

In the beginning of the XIX<sup>th</sup> century two political Journals of some importance were established; the „*Nemzeti Ujság*“ (National Journal), and the „*Hazai és Külföldi Tudósítások*“ (Domestic and Foreign Intelligence). In regard to belles-letters, there shone four guiding stars on the horizon of Hungarian literature:

*Kazinczy Ferencz* (Francis Kazinczy), in regard to national philology and the regeneration of the language. Göthe, Bürger, Ossian, of whose writings he made translations, Gessner, whose works he translated entirely, seem to have been his touch-stones.

*Berzsenyi Daniel* (Daniel Berzsenyi), the greatest lyric poet in regard to Odes; he combined Horatian elevation with the lyric flow of Mathisson; his language is pure and precise.

*Kisfaludy Sándor* (Alexander Kisfaludy), highly merited in regard to Lyrics in general. His Ballads, Romances and the Love songs (a long poem divided into two parts, the first „*Gyötrött szerelem*“, Unhappy Love, the latter „*Boldog szerelem*“, Happy love), discover the opulence of his genius.

*Kisfaludy Károly* (Charles Kisfaludy), the regenerator of the drama. The subjects of most of his plays refer to the golden era of the nation, and are really national ones.

After 1834 rapid progress was made in Literature in every respect. The members of the Academy seemed to rival each other in sacrificing all their talents to the intellectual and mental development of the nation. Between 1834-36, the language, nursed by the Academy, grew exuberantly; the political journal „*Jelenkor*“ and its gratis supplement, conducted by *Helmetzy*, contributed much to introducing purity and conciseness in style. The Annals (Annual Reports) of the Academy, the Magazine of Science (*Tudománytár*), published by the Academy, the *Muzarion*, edited by *Bartholomew Szemere*, and the Critical Reports (*Kritikai lapok*), conducted by *Joseph Bajza*, may be considered as the depositories of the fruit of the annual labor in cultivating the language. The speed with which these were gathered, and the anxiety to fill the empty stores in time, got in some green crop as well, but, the green fruit having been carefully sorted from the ripe, the sound stock was saved. The mass of scientific subjects pressed hard on the Academy and threatened to overwhelm it.

Hence, the writings of *Kállay*, *Nyirý*, *Kölcsey*, *Szemere*, *Bajza*, *Guzmics*, on philo-

sophical subjects, the works of *Warga*, treating of politics, of *Győrry* and *Nagy*, treating of mathematics, may be found insufficient to satisfy the expectations of the History of European literature of the period; nor might the exertions of *Fridwalszky* and *Pólya*, in regard to descriptive Natural History, and the writings of *Bugát*, *Ekstein* and *Pólya*, on medical subjects, form an epoch in contemporary English or French literature: but, in respect to Hungary, which scarcely three decenniums previously had shaken off the heavy burden of a dead language that grasped the native one with cold, deadly hands, all these works deserve due regard, and the perseverance of the authors themselves deserves to have their merits acknowledged by foreign nations.

Polite literature, having received a great impulse in the preceding decenniums, advanced with accelerated speed, in order to reach the point attained by other nations\*). The Academy (up to 1836) had published 36 new dramas; amongst others, the „*Fátyol titka*“ (Secret of the Veil), a comedy by *Vörösmarty*, stands next to the Plays of *Kisfaludy*; *Náráy* exerted himself in

---

\*) There is a certain point of rise in polite literature, which every nation, sooner or later, attains; beyond this, there is a decline, scientific culture may progress or not. The Hungarian nation had not yet reached that point in its literature.



translating Shakespeare and had translated nearly all his classic dramas into Hungarian. *Horváth Endre*\*) (Andrew Horváth) and *Vörösmarty*\*\*\*) who had already won the prize in the epopee, were followed by *Garray*. The lyric poems of *Vörösmarty*, *Kölcsey*, *Bajza*, and *Czuczor* occupy the first rank, and may be ranked with those of any other nation; in the same department exerted themselves with nearly equal success: *Erdélyi János* (John Erdélyi), *Szabó József* (Joseph Szabó), *Eötvös József* (Joseph Eötvös) and *Szalay László* (Ladislaus Szalay). Fictions, Novels and Romantic writings were cultivated by *Fáy* and *Náray*, the former already celebrated as the Hungarian Aesop, the latter as a sentimental romancist.

From 1836 the literary movements came to a more settled state, and more uniform speed seemed to insure the wished-for progress, at the same time, to prevent the national strength from being overstrained, and the literary vehicles from being overturned.

The Academy now opened its literary stores to public use. The Dictionaries of mathematical, philosophical, and juridical terms, and its Hungarian - German Dictionary, comprehended

\*) He wrote the heroic poem entitled: *Árpád*, in XII Songs.

\*\*) He wrote the heroic poems: *Zalán futása*, *Cserhatom*, *Eger*. —

nearly all that philologists had gathered in the course of 6 years; the „*Külföldi játékszín*“ (Foreign Theatres), published by the same Academy, exhausted nearly all that foreign literature had contributed to enrich the national one. The new course of the *Tudománytár* (Magazine of Science), augmented by a supplementary part, the „*Literatura*“ (containing an annual report of foreign and home literature), had increased in its literary value. Materials for an elaborate etymological work on the national language were deposited in the „*Magyar nyelv' rendszere*“, System of the Hungarian language, by the Hungarian Academy, 1846.

The *Kisfaludy Társasság* (Kisfaludy-Association for promoting polite literature), with little money, has effected a great deal. Its „*Nemzeti Könyvtár*“ (National Library) is a repository of works of celebrated authors; the „*Külföldi Regénytár*“ (Magazine of Foreign Romances), published by the same association, comprehends translations of celebrated foreign authors of Novels and Romances; the Collection of national songs and traditions, made by John Erdelyi (on commission of the *Kisfaludy Társasság*), is a recently raised monument in the History of national poetry. Amongst other periodicals of polite literature, the Athenaeum may be mentioned particularly. —

In Philosophy, labor better rewarded *Szon- tagh* than any of his predecessors or contempo-

rary writers; *Vandrák* endeavoured to pave the road for the psychological and metaphysical doctrines of the German philosophers, Fries and Kant.

*Péczely József*\*) (Joseph Péczely) and *Horváth Mihály*\*\*) (Michael Horváth) gave the History of Hungary, which until their time was merely a memorial of Kings, a new feature by deserting the path of their antecessors and pursuing, from period to period, the development of national life. An illustrative History of Hungary was attempted by *Geiger*. — *Bajza*, in his Universal History, has followed the steps of *Schlosser*, the German Historian, the Statistics of *Fényes*; and his description of Hungary, are elaborate politico-geographical works.

The mathematical works of *Tárczy*, *Tatai*, *Lichard*, were intended for Protestant schools; those of *Taubner*, though richer in matter, were not favoured so much. *Molnár*, considering the period, was successful enough in his „*Erőműtan*“ (Mechanics.)

In Experimental Philosophy *Tárczy* and *Wargha* tried their strength; in Chemistry *Nendtwich* is valued, for his preparing the path by settling the scientific terms.

---

\*) Professor at the Protestant College in Drebeczin.

\*\*) Professor at the Protestant Gymnasium at Pápa.

In regard to Natural History, the Association of physicians and natural philosophers of Hungary might have given origin to an Academy of Natural History and Physical sciences, if fate had been more favourable to its existence. An attempt at an illustrated Natural History (exhausting all its branches) was made by *Hanák*; *Pólya* published a detailed and long treatise on technicalities regarding Natural History and Physiology, entitled: *Természetmúszólár és Létszerirat*.

The indefatigable study of ancient national literature by *Döbrentei Gábor* (Gabriel Döbrentei) may be estimated by his „*Régi Magyar Nyelvemlékek*“, Ancient Literary Monuments of the Hungarian Language; in this work he collected ancient Hungarian writings of the XII<sup>th</sup>, XIV<sup>th</sup>, XV<sup>th</sup>, XVI<sup>th</sup> centuries, which either were dispersedly published by former writers, or, until his time, were concealed in the worm-eaten shrines of the monasteries, or in archives to which private men are not easily admitted. *Tóldy* cultivated the literary History of national poetry.

The last decennium was not less productive in polite literature. — *Szigligeti*, *Nagy (Ignátz)*, *Tóth*, *Csapó*, *Obernnyik*, *Gaal*, provided for original drames for the recently erected national Theatre. Many of their dramas are, in regard to style and elaboration, co-ordinate with the classical works of foreign nations. *Vörösmarty* contri-

buted a new series of lyric poetry, and immortalized himself by his „Szózat“ — Appeal —, which the Academy adorned with the first prize as the best patriotic poem. The songs of *Petőfi* are popular, as his lyric elevation rarely ascended above the atmosphere of common life. In the department of Novelistic and Romantic many steady hands were engaged. *Jó'sika Miklós* (Nicholas Jósika) continued to increase the series of his very popular Romances. The *Buda-pesti árvízkönyv* is a depository of many instructive and amusing narratives and heart improving poems, many renowned authors have contributed to this collection. Baron *Eötvös Jó'sef* is one of the fertile and classical geniuses that appeared in the course of the development of national literature, his historical and fictitious Romances bear a political character, and, besides attracting the mind of the reader, they instil a desire and excite an enthusiasm for social reform. *Kúthy Lajos* (Lewis Kuthy) is highly esteemed as a novelist. The „*Francia regénycsarnok*“ (Hall of French Romances) conducted by *Récsi*, had opened a new field for those who desired to acclimate exotics of polite literature.

The struggles for national existence, in 1848, stopped the literary stream, claim having been laid to the physical power of the nation in order to insure the field opened to literary labor by



removing the bars of censorship. — Many new periodicals were established in order to receive all the literary trash, which poured forth when the flood-gates were opened; nearly the whole lot was of a political character, having been accumulated behind the dams of censorship; martial songs and exciting poems occupy the lyric department. The Muses, shunning martial arts, hastily retired, to meet the nation again after a pleasant and peaceful home shall have been insured, or to mourn eternally if the envious Mars should spitefully wound the fatal tendon of their Achilles.

---

SELECTIONS  
FROM  
HUNGARIAN CLASSICS.

---

I. PROSE WRITING.

a. Fables, and an Allegory from Andrew Fáy.

**1. A' kökény.**

*A' kökény nehezen vette, hogy gyümölcsét nem szedik. — Várjatok csak, így szól, hadd csipje meg termésemet a' dér! — Akkor kevésbbé leszesz fanyar, mond a' kertész, de jó soha!*

*Balesetek megdöbbentik ugyan a' rossz szívet, és aggkor megsibasztja annak ártalmát, de mindkettőnek vajmi ritkán sikerül megjavítani azt.*

**2. A' róka és a' nyúl.**

*Futárnak ajánltalak, az oroszlánnál szomszéd! mond a' róka, megállva a' nyúl alma felett. — Ó csak te ne ajánlottál! sohajt ez; az oroszlán azt*

*hiendi, rokon ravasz indulatú vagyok veled; te pedig, minthogy leköteleztél, jogosítottnak érzended magadat, fiamat fahí fel!*

### **3. A' gólya.**

*A' gólya Pest és Buda felett vette repülését, 's egy tornyon megüledett. — Pompás két város! így kiált fel, széttekingetve mindenfelé; be sok gólyafészek eltérne kéményein!*

*Kiki a' maga módja szerint! Némely utazó megtérvén hazájába, peregve tudja előadni: mely-lyik fogadóban evett jól és olcsón? másik: hol szebbek és nyájásabbak a' nők, vagy rakotabbak a' phárao-asztalok?*

### **4. A' macska és a' sármány.**

*A' macska, egy blakban, légy után ugorván a' második emeletből az utca kövezetére esett le. A' sármány szánakozva közelít feléje: szegény cziba! bizony zúzamból sajnállak, így szól a' jó madár, nem tört-e valami tagod? — Emez, az álnok, felocsúdván esése szédültéből, egyet szökik, 's a' szives szánakozót elkapja. — Egy légyért ugyan kissé nagyolnám tett ugrásomat, mond a' hitetlen, de egy sármány-pecsenye csak megérdemli. —*

*Még akkor se higj a' roszelelkűnek mikor a' sors' keze megúzta őt!*

### 5. *Az idő profeta.*

*A' számár elordította magát. — Eső lesz-e szolga, vagy szél? kérdi a' juhász tőle. Füles mit sem tudván profétaságáról, buta képpel rá mered gazdájára. — Már hogy idő lesz gazdácskám, annyit mondhatok, felel végre bölcs komolysággal neki.*

*Ki nem ért valamihez, mégis érteni akar, vagy bölcsen hallgat, vagy kétértelműséggel vágja ki mások előtt, értetlensége gyanújából magát.*

### 6. *A' Pergamen.*

*Egy, nemes származásában büszke, de üres szívű, fejű, gögösen sétálgatott folyósóján fel és alá, 's hetyke kényből nyugvó ebét megrúgta. — Ne bántsd gazdám a' kutyaöröt, morog felköltében a' ház-őrző; e' takarja minden becsed, érdemed!*

### 7. *A' számár és a' csikó.*

*A' számár, helyben léptetve, rovott padozaton hajtott egy vízhúzó gépet. A' tüzes csikó fülelve tekintett be a' nyílt ajtón. — Te szeles, tüzes, illy munkára nehezen volnál szer! így szólítja meg őt gúnnyalva a' füles. —*

*Igaz, hogy számárnak való munka! mond a' csikó. De kérlek: mellyitek is a' gép, te-e bűtya vagy e' kerekas alkotmány.*

Lángésznek koporsó a' szoros korlát, és a' bureauk' gépszerüségai. —

### 8. Nagyok leereszkedése.

A' macska mindenfelé dicsekvék, hogy őt az oroszán, kit betegségében meglátogata, elfogadta légyen rokonának. — 'S nem volt valami kérése hozzád? kérdé a' ravasz róka. — De igen, felel a' kandúr, egy patkány melly barlangjába vette magát gyakran háborgatja a' beteg nyugalnát; arra kért: ölném el az alkalmatlankodót. Mindjárt gondoltam, felel ravaszdi; ritkán gyanútlan a' nagy urak' leereszkedése, 's többnyire arra mutat, hogy ránk szorúltak.

### 9. A' medve-táncz.

Egy utczajáró olasznak majma és medvéje va-la, miket síp- után tánczoltata a' pór nép előtt. Épen végzi maczkó keserves tánczát, 's aléltan testében és komor kedélyében, pihene, midőn a' könnyelmű majom fölibe szökve: bátya! így szólítja meg őt kaczagva; sajnálnálak, de bizony nem érek reá; mert ha tisztes komoly arczodat, méltóságos tekintetedet, ügyetlen nehézkes tánczoddal egybevetve látom, csak nem halálra kell haczagnom magamat! — Elég bolondúl és könnyelműleg! morog a' medve; én tánczolok, mert tánczoltatnak, mordúl és kelleetlenül, mint kinek testével együtt szelleme is töretik; de te rablétedre könnyelmű kedvvel tánczolsz, mint kinek lelke



gyáva felfogni sorsát, vagy nem érdemes jobbra. Ez köztünk a' különbség. Am illjék a' rabtáncz neked, nem irígylem; de nekem nem kell!

Magyarom! mellyikkel kívánsz tartani? a' medvével-e, vagy a' majommal?

### **10. Bölcsesség útja az életben.**

Egy varázs Imán, haldokló ágyához inti négy fiait. — Indúljatok holtom után, így szóla gyöngé hergessel hozzájuk, kelet felé, mindaddig vándorolva, míg nem Zita kies völgyében, egy dombocská' lejtős oldalában, a' Bölcsesség templomához értek; itt van számotokra letéve a' bölcsék' köve. Kielégítő boldogság fekszik annak birásában; tegyétek azt tulajdonotokká. Barátim és rokonim közt fog elvinni utatok, kik, ha betértek, szívesen fogadandnak; 's két fényes csillag leendő kalauztok, az egymást metsző ösvényeken. Atyai áldásom mellé fogadjátok tanácsomat: haladni mohón ne siesse-tek, de nap se múljon úgy el tőletek, hogy ne haladjatok. Ezt mondá 's kihergé lelkét.

Másnap útnak ered a' négy fiú. Az első hosszas készülteket tesz, hosszú 's bizonytalan határ-idejű az út, úgymond, bő eleség, köntös és szerek időjárás viszontagságai ellen, kellenek hozzá; felesleg legyenek ellátva inkább, mint szorúljak. Mint nevetem majd szűkölő testvéreimet, kik most bőség ölében gúnyolnak! Ezt mondván, még többet nyoma be, már is súlyos iszákjába. — A' második kaczagá

az igen gondost. — *Feledéd-e, így szólt, hogy szíves barátok, rokonok közt utazandunk? illy útra elég a' vidor elme, víg kedély! 's könnyelműleg ragadja lantját, egyedüli úti szerül kezébe. — A' harmadik alljas gondoskodásnak vőn minden készületet pár könyvet tett útítársúl zsebébe; egyebet vinni vagy felejtett, vagy feledni igyekezett, mint hitvány felesleges lomot, 's akadályait tiszta elmélkedéseinek. — A' negyedik fegyvert övedze ótalomúl derekára, nem terhelő 's csak szükségessel tölt izsákot vete hátára, 's vidor reménnyel fogá vándor-botját jobbja.*

*Indúlnak, mennek; de csak hamar maradozni kezd lenyomó terhe alatt az első, 's elveszti szeme elől haladó testvéreit. De tán elfogja terhéből hánymi a' feleslegest? Korán sem, a' rokonoknál, kiknek fogyhatlan vala szivességök utasinkhoz, még többel nevelé lomját, melly megszűkülés remegése miatt különben is keveset fogya. Ennek terhe, gondja, és a' sóvárgás, már fél uton elbetegíték vándorunkat; napok, hetek, hónapok teltek el, míg haladhata. — A' másodiknak örök menyekző vala utazása. Táncz, muzsika, víg robaj, zajgott mindenütt a'\*) merre fordult; szilaj dőzsölések, kicsapongó mulatozások és lakomák közt, fajtalan szírének, 's mámoros barátok feledteték vele útja célját. Majd számára rendelt vendégségek, majd*

\*) The article is placed with propriety before the interrogative Adverbs: *hol? hogy? mikor? merre?* etc. when they are used definitely.

tikkadtság ezektől, késleltetéik indulásait; szívesen marasztatott, szívesen maradt a' könnyelmű. — A' harmadik már az első keresztútnál kétkedni kezde a' kalauz csillagocskákban. — Illy kétes fény után folytassam-e én, úgymond, utamat? 's szerencsém-et bizonytalanságnak áldozam-e fel? hát ha e' csillagok csalfa lidérczek, 's ingoványba vezetnek? Így tünődik előbb magában, majd megosztva barátival kétségeit, ezekkel együtt elbűlcsekedik a' kalauz iker-csillagtól a' jámbor szándékot és a' jó akaratot. — Az iránytűt fogadja tehát biztosabb vezérül 's az ég tündöklőbb csillagait, 's ezeknek képzeményes vezérlésök után, bujdoklik ide 's tova a' puszták sivatagjain a' rengeteg erdők vadonjain! Posványok, tavak, ingoványok, szédítő mélységű nyílások, mászhatlan szirtek, zárják el előtte az ösvényeket 's visszafordulni késztetik. Éhség szomjúság inségei, szaggató tövisek préda-leső vadak, súlyosítják, rémítik bolyongásait. Messze, messze marad útjának óhajtott céljától!

A' negyedik vándor videron halad előre. Beter szívesen köszöntve rokonikhoz és atya barátihoz, kedvtelve mulat nálók, de nem feledi útját, 's naponként halad ebben. Mentében, jobbra balra hajlong kínálkozó rózsákat szaggatni, 's illatjok balzsamainál könnyen feledi a' tövisek' hitvány karczolásait: a' kétes utakon hiven 's kétkedés nélkül követi vezér két csillagát, 's im Zita kies völgye, illatos virányival mosolyg eleibe, 's dombján a'

*Bölcsesség' temploma, nyílt küszöbökkel áll előtte. Bizton lép be azokon vándorunk 's oltárán találja letéve számára a' bölcsek kövét. Kezéhez veszi azt, 's vele jámbor megelégedést 's szelíd boldogságot ejt birtokába.*

*Sok bolyongás, tévelygés után, nagy sokára fáradt unalommal ér el a' bölcselkedő. A' reménylt kincs helyett illy írást olvas az oltár felett: halandó! két kalauzod van az életben: józan ész és lelkiisméret; ha ezek vezérlését megvetéd, távol ejtéd magadat bölcsességtől és boldogságtól.*

*Még későbbben érkezék a' megrakott utazó. Lihegve veté le súlyos iszákját, 's az ohajtott cél felé siet. De számára ez vala az oltár felibe írva: kincs és vagyon súlyosan nyomnak, nőttök új kincs-szomjat növeszt; de gyűjtsd halandó bár milly halmokra azokat, rajtok meg nem vásárolhatod azon bölcsességet és boldogságot miktől távol ejtenek súlyaik!*

*A' feslettség tikkadásával sáppadtan mint kísértet, beesett szemekkel mint csontváz, kínosan vánczoroga utóljára elő a' dőzsbarát. Lankadt reszkető lábakkal lép be a' szent küszöbön, de megütkezten riad vissza olvasván az oltár felett: halandó ki élni siet, ritkán él boldogúl, ki elzajogja életét, ritkán ér örömet! Csak az bölcs és boldog, ki olly örömeket éldel mi ket előbb-később megbánás nem követ! —*



b. An Allegory, form Charles Kisfalu y.

### ***Az Élet.***

*Az élet hasonló egy szekérhez, mellynek minden kereke más kátyuba szalad. Halál húzza, Remény tartóztatja. Indulat a' kocsis és pattogva sürgeti futását. Szerelem és Barátság benn ölelkezve ülnek, 's bájszínü szappanbuborékokat fúvnak a' levegőbe. A' Kivánat nagy helyet foglal el 's önmagát terhelve mindent felvesz a' mit útközben talál. Egy örökké változó alak lebbeg fölöttök, a' benn ülők szünetlen kapkodnak utána, de csak árnyéka esik reájok, ez a' Szerencse. Bölcsesség kalauz gyanánt megy elő lámpát akar gyűjtani de a' Vélemény mindig melette jár 's elóltja világát. Téren, tetőn így fut a' szekér; ha eltéved sok a' tanácsló, kevés a' segítő; ha megsülyed ezer az utmutató de hasztalan: nem képes haladni már, és a' kocsis kétségbe esve törtet előre, de mindig mélyebb posványba jut. Erre a' Szerelem, és Barátság egymásután leszálnak 's hitetlen elszöknek, a' sok felleg kísérők semmiségbe oszlanak. Védőleg jönnek most a' Tudományok is, de magokkal egyenetlen, többször oda ütik a' szeget a' hová nem kell, 's a' szekér szertedől. Felkaczag a' halál 's óriássá növe szétüzi az egész társasságot.*

*Csak egy szelíd fényes ifjú küzd meg vele, diadalmasan kiragadván kezéből az enyészet szövét-*



nekét: ez a' Hit. Végre eljön egy tisztos ős 's ősveszedvén az elszórt töredékeket azokkal más kocsikat igazgat, 's a' mint lehet a' kora sülyedéstől megóvjá: ez a' Tapasztalás.

c. Fables, from Joseph Kármán.

### 1. A' forrás és a' csatorna.

Ellankadva a' nap hevétől talált egy utazó a' kősziklák alatt egy hűves forrásra. Frisesség ömlött tőle minden ereiben és háládóan vált el attól. Beérkezik a' városba; a' piacon a' felhők felé szökéllett kevély márványból a' vízboltozat. Lába alatt megszólal a' csatorna. — "A' víz, mellyet iszol, amaz forrásnak a' kőszikla alatt hives vize, és én hoztam ide." „A' forrás, melly a' kősziklából foly, frisítő, hives és tiszta volt. Ezen a' te fenyőized érzik," felelé az utazó.

A' teremő eredeti lelkek ritkák! idegen érdem többnyire a' mi érdemünk. —

### 2. A' fülemile és a' szentjános-bogár.

Ide 's tova szállongott egy csendes nyári éj-jelen a' jánosbogár. Nevetséges magával való megelégedéssel nézegette fénylő részeit, és kevélyen azt mondja; „bizony, én vagyok a' legszebb teremés az ég alatt, a' nap és hold az én vetelkedő társaim, és a' földnek királyi csak azért

becsülik a' drágaköveket, mert az én fülemhez hasonlitanak. Közelvaló ágon csevegett egy fülemile, látta a' fénylő prédát, 's annak világától vezetetvén felé szállott, és a' kevély bogarat elnyelte.

Az a' lyánka, a' kinek orcáján lilomok és rózsák nyílnak, ha okos, elrejti szépségét a' világ zűrzavarjától.

d. Fables, from Francis Kazinczy.

### 1. A' majom és a' róka.

Mondj nekem akármelly nemesebb állatot a' kit én mímelni ne tudjak! úgymond a' rókának a' kérekedékeny majom. De a' róka azt felelé: de te mondj inkább nekem bármelly nemtelent a' ki méltónak tartána tégedet mímelni.

### 2. A' farkas és a' juhász.

Egy juhásznak nyáját előlte a' kegyetlen dög. Megtudta azt a' farkas 's ímhol jő condoleálni\*) a' juhásznak.

Juhász! úgymond, tehát való csakugyan hogy illy nagy csapás állatid' ére? azt hallom, egész nyájad elhullott; szegény, ártani nem tudó, szép, kövér juhok; a' lelkem is sír bennem mikor elképzelem hogy

---

\*) Instead of fájlalni, to condole.

*elvesztek. Köszönöm szives részvétét jó uram,  
Fogasi uram! Be szánakozó szive van az úrnak.*

*De az bizony, kiálta a' Komondor, ha szomszédja' vesztességében ő maga vall kárt. —*

**e. Oratorial, from Kölcsény,**

***Emlék beszéd,***

***Kanzinczy Ferencz felett.***

(Speech in commeration of Francis Kazinczy, held by  
Francis Kölcsény.)

*Mi szép az emberi élet, midőn a' mindennapi-  
ság' parányi köréből kiemelkedik, 's magát valami  
nagy és szent, és milliomokat érdeklő czél után  
intézi! Mi szép, világosító csillagként tűnni fel  
ezrek előtt, és szabadon, de általmelegült lélekkel  
választani magának pályát, 's azt jó és balsze-  
rencse közt örökre tiszta 's soha nem hidegülő  
szenvedelemben futni meg! Azonban ez, a' mi illy  
szép, nem egyszersmind olly boldogító is. Hányszor  
nem talál a' hévvel ölelő kar borzalmas hideg ille-  
tésre!, hányszor süllyed el a' küzdő fénynyel és ve-  
szélylyel teljes pályája közepén, áldás és szánako-  
dás által nem kísérve! sőt hányszor kell magának  
a' fenragyogó czélnek nyom és remény nélkül leszá-  
lani, midőn az érette vívó lelke' elkeseredésében áll  
ott, 's honának és korának érzéketlenségét átkozza!  
A' sorsnak kedvenczei nincsenek, csak eszközei.  
Kemény részvétlenséggel az egyesek iránt, intézi ez  
az egész menetelét. 'S így a' már elveszettnek lát-*

szó magból gyakran hosszú évek után virágoztatja fel a' telyes szépségü plántát; nem tartván figyelmére méltónak, hogy az, ki a' magot a' jelenlét pusztságában, egyedül a' még akkor kétes reményért, hintette el, többé nincs; 's emléktelen sírja felett díszlik a' virágbokor, midőn már sem illat sem árnyék nem enyhítheti az égő fájdalmat, minek gyötrelmei közt elhamvadott.

E' gondolatok támadának lelkemben, a' hívértekor, hogy Kazinczy Ferencz élni megszűnt vala. Képzeteim előmbé állították a' nagy férfiút, úgy a' mint őtet legutólszor e' társassági körben láthatám. Itt ült ő közöttünk, a' hetven évet meghaladott ősz, a' több mint félszázados író, egy készüllettel és küzdéssel telyes időszak' legrégibb bajnoka; 's keblében hordozta borzasztólag szép pályája' emlékezetét, 's részek után egy, a' nemzet előtt valakára felcsilámló reménytől biztatva tetteinek önérzésében keresett az élet' nyomasztó terhe ellen enyhületet, — enyhületet a' gondok ellen, mik végnapjáig kinozták. Eszköz vólt ő is a' sors' kezében; izzadott ő is azért, a' minek gyölmölcseit aratni más fogja; félszázadig küzdött a' pusztában 's egy messze pilantás az ígéret' földébe lőn minden jutalma. —

Jól érzem én T. Társasság, midőn e' tiszteletre méltó kör' elhunyt tagjának emlékezetét megújítom, nem kellene illy elbúsító képeket mutatnom fel. Azok közt állok, kiknek szent kötelességök, minden egyebet félretévén, a' haza' dicsőségét esz-



közleni; 's felednem kellett volna talán Kazinczyt, az embert, a' szenvedettét, és egyedül a' literatort állítnom elő, tiszta nyugalomban mint művész a' márványszobrot, hogy reá koszorúkat aggassunk.

De az én lelkem' minden ideái összeolvadásban vagynak egymással, 's a' szív' hurjain rezegnek keresztül. Rokonom és barátom, tanítóm és társam vala, 's most midőn szavam az elnyugodott felett fog hangzani: keblembé zárjam-e fájdalmamat? féljek-e, ha kínos érzelmeket rezzentek fel, 's a' visszaemlékezés' szelid ohajtásai helyett könnycseppeket fakasztok? És bár fakaszthatnék szívből forró vérkönyeket! bár szózatom villám erővel hatná keresztül a' hazát, 's e' nemzetet! melly saját jeleseit századok óta könyezetlen látá sirba szállani 's nem tudá, hogy kebleik sebbel rakva valának ő érette; nem tudá, hogy neki áldozának fel minden szerencsét, maradékaikra nem hagyhatván egyebet, a' meg nem ismert, meg nem jutalmazott, sokszor épen eltaposott, érdem' keserű dicsőségénél.

A' végzet akará ezt így! és valóban ritka szép és jó kezdődött és tenyészett valaha előrement áldozatok nélkül. Kenyér után indul a' sokaság; magányos hasznokat vadász 's azt a' mi az egésznek érdekli, a' mi lelket táplál, nemzeti erőt fejt 's gyümölcsei csak jövőendőben érnek meg, gyűlöli. Atyáinkat hosszú zsibbadás lankasztá; vőlt idő, mikor bűnösen feledének mindent a' mi őket a' porból, hová hullának, felemelheté vala. Nehány



kevésnek mellében támadt a' gondolat: a' haza' veszélyben forgó nyelvét ragadni meg, ezt felvirágoztatni, ezt erőre hozni, 's erejével rázni fel az álomba süllyedt népet hogy lásson és érezzen. De a' nép őket nem hallgatá; de a' népnek ereje nem volt reájok fel 's jövőbe kipillantani; 's így elhagyatra futák meg a' pályát, külöködőknek tartattak és kinevettetének; mert nem akarák követni a' bölcsességet, melly egyedül a' jelenlét' hasznairól gondoskodik. Illy körülmények közt küzdött a' mi Kazinczyk is; nem haszon nélkül a' nemzetre, nem nyom nélkül a' jövő korra nézve, de fájdaloml önmagának. Mert koszorúi nem enyhíték, hanem égették homlokát; 's neve' híres voltát élte' nyugalmával fizeté. Pedig ő vala, ki fiatalsága' küszöbén, még csak tizenhat éves gyermek, iróink' párányi körében megjelenvén, nemes, de tiszteletben, kevesektől tartott célját el nem csüggedő erőben, páratlan állandósággal szünetlen haladásban követte. Ő vala ki nemzetének negyven év előtt hirtelen fellobbanó 's hirtelen elalvó tüzét olthatatlan hordá keblében, még akkor is, mikor lélekfagylaló vészek környékezék. Ő vala ki a' szerencsét sem nem ígérő, sem nem nyújtó literatori pályára számosokat tüzelt fel; 's mozgást és életet öntött a' tövises útra, mit sok mások elunatkozva, kétségtől leverve pusztán hagytanak. Ki nem emlékezik viszsza az ő Gessnerére\*) 's Bácsmegyeijére?\*)

---

\*) Works of Kazinczy.

*Mi maradandó behatást tőn a' szép izlésű fiatal író, ki alantmászás és iskolai feszesség helyett, könnyű lebegésű fenséggel és csinnal jelene meg; 's a' valahára tökéletre jutandó magyar Muzeum, 's az ő Orpheusa sebesen eltűnő jelenetek valának ugyan; de az általok hintett mag, évtizedek után sokat ígérő virágokat vala termendő.*

*Azonban miért említem ezt? Ő még akkor ifjúsága' erejében élt; 's polgári fekvése által, a' literatorkodást kísérő kedvetlenségektől fődözteték. Csuda-e ha a' lánglelkű ember fáradatlan munkált? ha a' közönség' részvétlenséget csüggedetlen türe? ha magát feledvén, hazájának szentelé mindenét, és a' sivatag jelenben csak a' virágzó jövőndőt szemlélte? De jött az időpont, egyike azoknak, miket a' sors lesújtó villámként rejteget felhőiben, hogy váratlan rohanással öldököljenek és íme ő tettei' 's hatása' munkás köréből lánczok közé jut, és szabadságát 's élte' minden reményeit hetedfél hoszú évig siratja. Hány nem veszté el bátorságát, hány nem mondott le keble' legforróbb vágyairól, kit a' szerencse nem épen illy keményen próbála meg! A' mi barátunk búban mint örömben, kétség mint remény közt, saját ideájához hű maradt; és a' brünni erősségben, mint a' kufsteini hegyormon, 's a' munkácsi vár' falai közt szerelme a' nyelvhez nem kisebbedék. Ott a' vigasztalástól üres magányban érlelte meg ő a' nagy gondolatot: újító változást hozni a' nyelvbe; 's ez által izlésünknek, gondol-*

kozásunk módjának, 's tudományi művelődésünknek más és nagy befolyásu utat mutatni.

A' mi magyar nyelvünkkel véghezvitt újításokat sokan nevették 's nevetik maiglan; pedig azok a' nemzeti ébredező szellem' természetes kiütései valának. Ezen szellem, mint mindig 's mindenütt: úgy most is és közöttünk egyes jelenetekben tüntette fel magát, hogy lassanként közönséges legyen. Nyelvünket ragadá meg előbb, az levén a' legtermészetesb mód egymást érteni, egymásra figyelmezni, ideákat venni és adni, 's azt a' mi a' kebelben titkon és külön forr, nyilvánná és egyetemivé csinálni. Illy szempontból tekintem én a' nyelvvel kezdett 's gyors rohanással előre törekedő változást. Mert semmi sem esik a' világon ok és egybefüggés nélkül: a' mi történik ma, annak magyarai század előtt, 's talán senkitől sem sejtve, hintettek el, 's a' mi történni fog század után, az a' mostani tettekből, gondolatokból, vagy talán csak sejdítésekben ver magának gyökeret. Homályban él és munkál az író, 's egykorúai által kicsinységekkel bajlódónak tartatik; mert idejét idegen szavak magyarrá tételével, régiek keresgélésével, 's több illy parányisággal vesztegeti. De a' vezető okot legtöbbször csak a' következés világosítja fel, 's tisztán csak a' maradék fogja láthatni; miként nyert az egész nemzet szó által ideát, idea által tettet, 's tett által jótévő egyetemi változásokat; miként enyésztek el egymás után száz meg száz lé-

lekszorongató formák, 's mind ezek után miként lön lehetőségessé sok szép és jó, minek forrásai, hosszú időkhig zárva levén, folyást nem lelhettek.

Kazinczy nem vala legelső, nem is egyetlen egy, ki a' nyelvvel történt nevezetes fordulást kezdé és eszközlé. De övé a' dicsőség, hogy ízlést párosított igyekezeteivel, hogy dolgozásait érzelmi hevével el tudta önteni, 's hogy a' régiség, tudományát, mit Baróti Szabó keresett, 's a' mi Révait nagygyá tette, telyesen méltánylá. Csak így, 's csak neki lehetett hatalmában olly széles terjedtségű befolyást szerezni, 's olly közönséges erővel hatni a' nyelvre és írókra; mint nem még az ideig senki más. A' közelebb múlt ötven 's néhány év alatt, ki volt íróink közül, kivel e' férfiú kisebb vagy nagyobb érintésbe nem állott volna? Ki nem kereste ismeretségét a' jelesnek, kit Orczy és Raday szerettek, kit Baróczi kedvele, kinek Virág és Révai baráti valának, ki Dayka' és Csokonai' kifejlésökre nagy befolyást gyakorolt? Keresztül nézek íróinknak itt e' tiszteletre méltó gyülekezetben jelen álló koszorúján és sokat látok, ki a' legelső szikrát Kazinczy' lánglelkétől kapá, 's kit futásában ennek példája vezérlett 's állhatatossága őrizett meg visszahanyatlástól. Neki nem volt elég minden lelki erejét és szíve' minden érzelmeit a' nagy célra szentelni, dolgozásoktól elborítva sem fordítá el a' haza' serdülő ifjairól tekintetét; 's minden hevílő pillantás, minden kilobbanó gerjelem, melly



bennküzdő erőt, munkásságot, bármí távolról sejdítettett, részvételét nagy részben nyeré meg. E részvétel által adott ő sok mulólag kipattanni látszó szikrának maradandóságot; e' részvétel által pótolá ki sok kezdőnek azt, a' mit boldogabb fekvésű népeknél az olvasó közönség első tapsai visznek véghez. Mert volt idő, keserűen emlékezem vissza, midőn a' literatori pályára készülő ifjút szülői, mint veszni indultat siratták, midőn a' magyar könyvet magyar írón kívül más nem ismerte, 's midőn fiatal művész egykorúi közt sem talált keblet, hol kiömölhessen. Hány nem némúlt el akkor, mint a' fogásba zárt fülmile, végképen? hány nem fogott volna még elnémúlni, hanemha ő, a' siriglan buzgó, nyújtott volna vigasztaló szót? Mert ő mondhatá, még nagyobb igazsal, mint az Anchises' fia: ifjú! rényt és való munkát tölem tanulj, szerencsét másoktól!

„S nem csak azokra hatott ő, kik nevét és műveit tiszteletben tartották, hanem azokra is, kik eránta ellenséges indulattal viseltetének. Valának ugyan is nem kevesen, kik vagy érdemeit irigylették, vagy művitelte által éredekeltettek, vagy okfejeit, miken dolgozásait alapítá, veszélyeseknek lenni hitték. Ezek' köréből üté ki magát a' sokáig titokban forrott nyelvújítási pör, melly Kazinczy ellen intézet személyes csapást; sok a' literatori viadalmakkal köz, illetlen scénákát\*)

---

\*) Instead of jelenés, scence.



tüntetett fel: de tárgya által a' nemzetben eddig szokatlan figyelmet gerjesztett; 's a' reá következő ellenhatásnál fogva írónkba elevenséget öntött, serdülő ifjúságunk' elébe szebb és terjedtebb pályát jelelt, 's azt a' mit ez ideignem bíránk, egy olvasó közönséget, alkotott, számra, és részvétre nézve kicsinyt ugyan, de reményt adót, hogy valaha nevedni 's írónk eránt melegegdeni nagyobb mértékben fog. 'S ez okra nézve az én ősz barátomat soha sem tartottam szánásra méltónak a' nyilak miatt, miket ellenségi kezek reája, mint íróra löttek. Nem zavarhatták volna ezek öreg kora' nyugalmát, ha azt a' sors más oldalról keményebb csapásokkal nem rabolja el. Mert példaként ragyogni 's minden fogyatkozások mellett is, miket az emberi természet szükségesen hoz magával, 's minden ellenigyekezetek mellett is, mik ezen fogyatkozásokat vagy nagyon kitüntetni, vagy költöttekkel is számosítani törekednek, tisztelőket és követőket találni, vigasztaló érzelem. 'S mint kell e' vigasztaló érzelemnek erősödnie, midőn az ellenfél által hintett mag saját örömeinkre 's hasznunkra virúl fel! 'S ha Kazinczy, mint hiszem és tudom, a' nemzeti nyelvet és hazát tiszta szerelemmel ölelte által: milly könnyen kellett neki gúnyt és megtámadást tűrnie, midőn az ellene szánt csapások által a' nyelv' föléledése' nagy munkáját elősegíteni szemlélte! Az önérzés, mit ő olly méltán hordhatott keblében, irigylést érdemelne; ha valamit irigyenünk lehetne a' férfinak,

kinek a' sors ez érzelmen kívül olly igen keveset nyújt vala.

Sok mindennapi embert hallék már életében és halálában magasztaló beszéddel hirdetni; de gyűlöletes előttem minden hízelkedés 's kivált a' koporsón túl, hol a' történet komoly Múzsájának országa kezdődik. A' való érdem' alakja nagyító csövek nélkül is tisztán látható, 's úgy hiszem azoknak, miket eddig elmondottam, sem bizonyítására, sem mentségére szükségem nem leend. Mert nem állítám, hogy Kazinczy örökemlékü műveket hagyott maga után: mint az Iliás, nem mondom; hogy nyelvünket a' lehetőség' legfelsőbb pontjára hágtatta, hogy törekedésein túl már nincs haladás, kívül már nincsen út. Csak azt mondom: Kazinczy, izlést erőhöz csatolva, kezdett a' nyelvvel küzdeni olly korban, midőn az egy nagy és következzel telyes mozdúlatra vala hajlandó, 's ízetlenség 's gyöngeség által örökre hibás utat vett volna magának. Kazinczy, a' maga Gesnerétől fogvást a' Pannonhalmi útig minden írásait csinnal, hévvel és ifjúi élettél öntötte be 's ez által az írósereg' figyelmét magára ragadván, literaturánkban új időszak' alapítója lön; Kazinczy fellázasztott maga ellen sok író, 's ezzel sok kilobbanást okozott, melly íróinkra és nemzetünkre elektromi szikra gyanánt munkált 's a' literatura' parányi körét kiszélesítette. Ezek az ő nagy és tagadhatatlan érdemei. Mert prosája minden fogyatkozási mellett is örökre

szép lesz; versein művészi kéz fog ismerszeni, 's kivált epigrammái, a' költés' koszorójában hervadatlan virágok maradnak: de a' nemzetet nem azok által tevő hálaadósává. Szellem vala ő, melly a' tespedő egésszet olly sokáig nemcsak egyedül eleveníté, 's lépcső, mellyen egykorú magasbra hágassanak, 's szerencsésebb maradék tetőre juthasson. A' sors talán nem fog bennünket ismét elszülyeszteni, 's így eljő az idő, el kell az időnek jönnie, midőn az ő 's együttélők' dolgozásai ragyogó művek által fognak homályba tétetni, csak a' lélek, mellyet ő az egésznek kölcsönözött, meg nem szűnik folyvást ragyogni, munkálni, míg a' nemzetiség' utolsó szikrája el nem hamvad. Ez oldalról kell ötet méltatnunk, ez oldalról mit nem érdemlett ő mi tőlünk? Nyelvünk' bajnokáva szentelé magát, 's e' nyelv a' mi őseink' egyetlen egy hagyománya, mit a' századok' pusztító vészei közül kevés hű kezek ragadhatnak ki. És ti hűek hol vagytok? hol a' hála, mit a' hazától érdemlétek? hol a' köny, melly szentté tenné a' sírdombot, mit hamvaitok felett a' mindennapi szokás szűken hányatott!

Epések lesznek talán szavaim; de keserű kínos emlékezetek támadnak lelkemben. Mert gondolkodom a' népről, melly Zrinyit,\*) az író, el tudta feledni; melly Faludyt\*), míg élt, nem ismeré; melly

---

\*) Poets of the XVIII<sup>th</sup> Century.

*Révairól\*) hallani nem akart; melly Baróti Szabót\*\*) meg nem siratta; 's mellynek kebelében az ötvenhat évet szakadatlan munka közt eltöltött Kazinczy nyomorúsággal élt és holt. Ő szép reményekre születve, sokat ígérő ifjúságot élve, hirtelen a' sors által leveretett; 's midőn előtte minden pálya, a' literatorin kívül, bezáródék, ez egyetlenegy pályán közönségünk elvoná kezét a' magát neki áldozó elől, hogy tévelyegjen elhagyatva, küzdjön nem segítve, 's arcza' izzadását 's szeme' vérkönyeit hagyja jelül kéziratain, 's árva gyermekein inséget. Két rendbeli folyóiratai részvétlenség miatt mindjárt kezdetben elakadtanak; nyomtatott számos művei tizenegy millió népesség közt vevőt nem leltenek; legnagyobb becsű kéziratainak nyomtatót nem talált, halálig tartott fáradozásai jutalmát nem arathatta az országban, hol annyi idegen gazdag táplálást nyert magának. Voltak ugyan, tagadni nem fogom, kik ő felé is részvevő keblet nyitottak, 's kik életének gondjait egyes jótétekekkel enyhítgeték; de a' nemzet' nagy írójának jótétekre szorúlni nem kellene; 's pillantatonként nyújtott vigasztalás hőszi kinokat nem orvosol! Ah láttam én e' kinokat! mert tanúja valék álmatlanul töltött éjjeleinek, tanúja valék a' fájdalmas elhajdulásnak, midőn barátja' vidám asztala mellett*

---

\*) Professor of Hungarian Literatur at Pest.

\*\*) Poets of the XVIII<sup>th</sup> and XIX<sup>th</sup> centuries.



gyermekre visszaemlékezett. Megrezzent akkor minden ideg keblemben, 's véráldozatnak képzelém a' szent öreget, melly a' nép' büneiért utolsó hőrgései közt vonaglik, —

Társaim! nem szenved ő többet! Lenyugvék ősz fűrtjeiben a' széphalmi\*) lak' romjai közt, úgy hűnyvén el, mint századok előtt, a' nyugoti tenger' partjain egymás hazának fia — Camoens. És gyermekeit idegen kéz fogja ápolni; és sirját szívszorúlva kerüli ki a' magyar nyelv-művész, sorsától rettegven. 'S bár emlékezete' keserű voltát szerencsésebb évek hamar feledtetnék el! hogy a' maradék előtt csak dicsősége ragyogjon, kínai pedig megfoghatatlanok legyenek. —

#### d. Historical, from Péczely.

##### **Buda' visszavétele.**

Junius 15<sup>én</sup> indult meg komáromi táborából Lothringiai Károly. Seregei összes száma 63,000 volt, köztök: 14,000 Magyar, 30,000 birodalombeli segítő hadak, a' többiek önkéntesek, 's a' császár örökös tartományaiból valók. A' Magyarok a' Náador, Eszterházi, Pálfi, Batthyáni, Petneházi, a' többek is mind a' legbátrabb, legeszesb, harczban tapasztalt férfiak' vezérlése alatt, kik közül név szerint említendők: a 8000 Brandenburgiakat ve-

---

\*) Széphalom was the place where Kazinczy lived.



zetett Schöning, a' császár' veje, 's bajor választófejedelem, Maximilian Emanuel, 's a' badeni Markgróf Lajos, ifjak mind ketten, amaz alig 24—30 éves, de mind ketten tapasztalt vitézek már, 's ösméretesek a' Bécs' közelebbi megszállásában kitüntetett bátorságukról. Junius 18<sup>án</sup> érkezett meg a' herczeg Buda alá, mindennel, mi sikert ígérhet gazdagon ellátva. Rakva volt a' Duna hajókkal; ezeken 's a' Duna' közel eső szigetein annyi élelem, hogy 100,000 ember 9 hónapig könnyen megérhette vele. A' bécsi fegyvertárból hozattak, egyéb vivó szerszámokon kívül, 60 legnagyobb 30 kisebb rendű, és 40 mosár ágyúk. —

A' seregek' kormányzásá megosztva annyiban, hogy a' fiatal tűz-és erőteljes császári vőnek a' maga 8000 Bajorjain kívül, még ugyan annyi császáriak, 's 5000 Szászok adattak parancsnoksága alá: de a' fővezérség valósággal, a' sokat tapasztalt, mélyen látó, hidegen fontoló Károlynál, ki mozgató lelke az egésznek. Öröm de egyszersmind némi titkos borzalom futotta el mindenek', kivált a' Magyarok' kebleit, midőn megérkeztökkel Budának általok 2 évvel előbb erősen megrongált falait, omladékaikból kivetkeztetve, a' legjobb állapotban, új fényben magasan égnek emelkedni megpillanták; mert egyszerre előttök állott a' várnak a' gyászos mohácsi vérnep óta kiállott sok visszontagsága, több rendbeli ostroma, a' roppant ember vesztesség, mellybe azok kerültek, 's mellybe ez utolsónak hitt

is hogy kerülni fog, előre bizonyosnak tartották; hallva kivált a' vitéz Abdi' nagy készületeit; magának, katonáinak a' most újra 6000 rel szaporított, így összesen már 16,000 emberből álló őrseregnek vég magok eltökélését: életöktől elébb, mint a' vártól válni meg. Így is Istenbe vetett erős bizodalommal 's azzal az ostromlottakéhoz hasonló elszántsággal; hogy vagy győznek, vagy dicsően vesznek, bátran szembe szállnak a' miéink az akadályokkal, mellyeket természet, mesterség, 's mindenek felett a' várat őltalmazók' rendítetlen lelke, egyetértése látszanak veszélytelyes merényökben elejőkbe vetni.

Hogy az ellenség' erejét annyival inkább megosszák, három oldalról határazák a' várat egyzersmind megtámadni, fővezéreink. A' szerény herczeg az ifjú tüzes választófejedelemnek engedvén a' helyválasztást: ez a' vár megett a' szent Gellért hegyén fogott állást, mivel azon részről volt a' vár, a' legerősebb, legtöbb nehezséggel, vesszedelemmel járó a' megtámadás, Épen az ellenkező oldalon, a' bécsi kapu irányában, állott meg hadai' legnagyobb részével a' herczeg; a' víziváros felől Schöning a' Brandenburgiakkal 's néhány császári csapatokkal. Márgit' szigetére tétetett a' kórház; a' lovasság' egy része Csepel' szigetén; a' másik nagyobb fele, az Eszék felől váratott Nagyvezér' feltartóztatására, Pálffy' vezérlése alatt, Székes Fehérvár felé, a' Sárvíz mentiben, allittatott fel.

*Az elsőbb napokban mindjárt két olly történet adta magát elő, miből csak jót jövendöltek magoknak a' miéink. Pálfy egy, Ercsiből Budára szándékozó török csapatot körül fogott, és úgy levágott, hogy az egészből nem menekedhetett több háromnál. Ugyan akkor a' Csepel' szigetén őrt álló Batthyáni elfogott 14 ellenséges hajót, mellyekben számos fő török asszonyok, köztök a' basa' 92 válogatott nőből álló háremje, saját felesége, kincseikkel együtt menekedni próbálának, a' fenyegető veszély elől. Véltnél nagyobb volt a' nyeresség, ki-mondhatatlan az öröm. A' fogolyok, mind ritka szépségek, száznál felesb számmal, mint rabszolgák eladattak, a' nyert prédán megosztott a' diadalmas huszárság, süveggel mérve aranyat, ezüstöt, mit együtt többre becsültek 200,000 aranynál.*

*Miután a' futó-sánczokon, az ellenség' hasztalan kiütési közt, harmad napig szakadatlanúl dolgoztatott, június 21<sup>én</sup> hozzá kezdett a' víziváros ágyáztatásához Károly herczeg; 24<sup>én</sup> a' nyitott résen már rohanást parancsolt, 's bár mint vitézkedett is az őrsereg, északára kelve engedni kényszeríté azt, 's a' felső városba vonúlui. Julius 1<sup>ső</sup> napján ezt is elkezdte, még pedig tüzes golyókkal lövetni, 's 12 napi folytonos tüzelés által annyira megrongálta falait, hogy nagy reménységben volt ostrommal megvételehez. Julius 13<sup>án</sup> tehát estveli 6 órakor rohanót fuvat. Az adott jelre ritka lelkesedéssel törnek elő három felől futó-sánczaikból*

vitézeink. Kevés óranegyed alatt meghágva általok a' meredek hegy, ált-törve az ellenséges sáncz, a' várbeliek irtóztató kő'- puska'- és ágyugolyó'- zápora között. Már az omladékon foly a' harcz olly útalkodottsággal egyik, mint másik részről. A' csata' és öldöklés' dühében Abdi basa elgyújtja löporral töltött, földalatti fúrásait; egy pillanat alatt szétszaggatva, levegőbe vetetnek az elővivők, a' megrepesztett földdel az árokba zuhannak a' hátulsók; puskaporos zsákok hajigáltatnak utánok, 's mielőtt a' félig zuzattak, félig perzseltek magok mentéséről gondoskodhatnak, a' köfalakról sebtén leugráló merész várbeliektől összekonczoltatnak. Előbb, mintsem a' földalatti fúrások elpatantak, kihágtak már a' falakra néhányan a' miéink közül; látván ezeknek veszedelmét pihent csapatok sietnek segítségökre, legelől az idegen nemzetbeli önként vállalkozott urak és Catalaunusok. Ezek, a' füst és láng között, a' falakra vergődván, a' Jancsárokat visszaverik; azután társaikkal egyesülve, a' sánczon keresztül a' második falig előnyomúlnak; de mielőtt felhághatnának, az omladék mellyen kapaszkodának terhöket nem bírva, leszakadt, sokakat agyonüt, többeket megsebesít; a' hatrálásról mégsem gondolkozik senki az ostromlók közül, mignem a' fővezér, látva a' lehetetlenséget, 1400 bátor vitézei' elhullta után, visszatérőt fúvat. —

Mihelyt népét rendbe szedte, újra elkezdte 's 14 napig egyere folytatta az ágyúztatást Károly



herczeg, sz. Ferenczi szerzetes Gábor Péter' és a' *Niederlandi Gonzalez Antal* igazgatása alatt. Leg-  
irtóztatóbb pusztitást tettek az ezen utolsó által  
felállított mosarak, mellyekből másányi, — és több —  
nehézségű, tüzet okádó golyók hányattak a' várba.  
Egy ezek közül *Julius* 22<sup>kén</sup> a' főfegyvertárra rep-  
pül, keresztültöri a' bálthajtást; meggyúl a' több  
mint ezer má'sa port magában rejtő puskaporos  
torony: egy percz alatt az egész épület a' szom-  
széd házakkal, 's mintegy 1500 emberrel a' leve-  
gőbe vetetik; az ég elsötétül; a' föld köröskörül  
egy mértföldnyire megrendül; a' sáncz 60 lépés-  
nyire szétyel nyílik; a' *Duna* árkából kivetődik, úgy  
hogy az örök futással kéntelenek a' rohanó habok elől  
menekedni. Sokan lettek a' mi táborunkban is, kivált  
a' közelebb állott *Bajorok* közül, a' lehullott omladék-  
kok' áldozatai. Innen mérve az ellenség' lehető kárát,  
ilyedtségét, *Károly herczeg*, rögtön mielőtt zavarodásából  
magához jöhetne, fölkéreti a' várat *Gróf Königsegg*  
által, minden vagyonaik — 's hozzá tarto-  
zóikkal együtt szabad elmenetelt ajánlva a' várbeliek-  
nek, ha önként kaput nyitnak; 's hogy ha nem: korra,  
nemre, rangra tekintet nélkül, végkiirtással fenye-  
getve mindnyájokat. *Abdi basa* minden felelet he-  
lyett száz kapitány *Lebel*, 's száz más társai' el-  
metszett fejeiket póznákra fűzve, magosan, hogy  
az ostromlók láthassák, a' *Stambuli* kapu elibe  
fölfüggeszteti. Erre újonnan megdördülnek menny-  
dörgésöket *Becsig* hallattató retenetes ágyúink, 's



olly szörnyű rombolást tesznek hogy más nap, ha különös eset által meg nem gátoltatnak ostromot valának a' miéink ismét próbálandók. Egy szerencsétlenül elgyúlt földalatti furásunk saját embereink közül igen sokakat eltemet, megöl vagy megsebesít; az ártásra soha nem rest ellenség e' közben kirohan, 's mielőtt a' nagyobb erőtlől visszanyomatnék, a' Brandenburgiaknak elébb, ezután a' Szászoknak esvén, belőlök több százat levág.

Julius 27<sup>ikén</sup> csakugyan meglett a' szándékba vett második általános rohanás, az elsőnél is jóval hevesb és vérengzőbb. Tizenkét ezer válogatott vitéz rohanta meg egyszerre a' várat, 6000 a' bécsi, 4000, mind Bajorok, a' vármeggetti oldalt, amazok a' Pfalz-Neuburgi herczeg' és Souches tábornok', ezek választó fejedelmök' Badeni, Lajos' és Sabaudiai Eugenius' vezérlése alatt, Két ezer Magyar a' Nádorral, a' feljebbi napokban fellobant puska-porral ejtett akna felöli résre küldetett. Három óráig tartott a' viadal. Elébb, minthogy az ellenség nem csak igen dühösen harczolt, hanem néhány földalatti furásait is igen szerencsésen gyújtotta fel, visszatolattak a' két fő oldalon a' mieink. Kivont karddal állja útját hátrálni kezdő övéinek Károly herczeg; Badeni Lajos és Eugenius személyesen vezetik újabb tűzbe a' megrémült Bajorokat; magok elől harczolnak mindenütt, sebet is kapnak, de szerencsére egyik sem veszedelmest. A' Magyarok vitézül felvergődtek a' törésig, 's bár áltörniök a'

sokkal nanyobb számú ellenségen lehetetlen, kicsapását legalább, mi küldetésök' főczélja volt, feltartóztatják, 's akadályoztatni azon oldalról társaik' harczát nem engedik. Megvétettek halhatlan erőlködés —, 's a' sebeseket nem számlálva, 2600, mások szerint 2900, császáriak, 400 Brandenburgiak, 800 Bajorok, 200 tisztek eleste után, a' külső erősségek, császári zászlók lobogtak a' bástyákon, a' legelső eyy köz magyar vitéz által feltüzve, kinek nevét nem, csak származását tudjuk, hogy győri fi\*) volt; az ellenség, mellynek még nagyobb volt a' miénknél vesztesege, a' belső várba szorúlt, 's most először felel a' basa: hogy a' várat feladnia lehetetlen 's bizalmát veti a' Prófétában hogy ez azt, mint eddig, ezután is megöltalmazza csudatevő hatalmával. —

Károly miután a' belső erősség vivásához a' szükséges előkészületeket megtette, falrontó ágyuit az általellenben lévő hegyre nem kis bajjal felvonattá, sőt a' falak' egy részét is föld alatti furásaival fölvetette: hasonló feltételek alatt, mint először, újra felkéri a' várat. Abdi jól tudta, hogy Constanczinápolyban közönségesen könnyörgések és prédikációk tartattattak minden templomokban Buda' megmaradásáért; hogy többmint 10,000 ember imádkozott a' Sultánnal a' főváros' egyik legnépesebb piaczn, az ostromnak Budától, a' pestisnek és háborúnak a' birodalomtól elfordításáért; de ugyanő jól látta helyzete' szorúltságát is; azért szelideb-

\*) Instead of férfi, man.

ben mint előbb, de egész elhatározottsággal válaszolá: hogy Budát, az osman europai birodalomnak, sőt magát Jerusalemnnek is kulcsát, magát ugyan nem, de helyette akármelly más magyar várat, többet is egynél, kész általengedni a' herczegnek, csak hagyjon fel az ostrommal. A' herczeg egyenesen csak Budát kívánván, végre ezt is megajánlá, azon föltétellel, hogy a' háborúnak azzal vége szakad. Minthogy Károly ezt nem ígéré meg, közelgetni mondatván külömben is a' rég várt nagyvezér, Abdi az alkudozást abban hagyja. —

Augustus első napján valósággal Budához 4 mértföldnyire Ercsinél állott 60,000 emberével a' nagyvezér. Mit megértvén a' várat ostrommal megvenni mielőtt a' segítség elérkeznék, volt a' választófejedelem' akarátja, 's ezt olly hévvel sürgeté, hogy végre Károly is hosszas ellenzés után engedett. Megrohanák tehát újra a' két földalaton seregeink a' várat, de csak hamar nagy veszteséggel visszaverettek; 's látva, hogy hasztalan minden erőlködés, szándékjokkal felhagytak. —

Az alatt közelebb mozdult, 's Hamsabeg és Budaörs közt ütött tábort Sulejman; Károly pedig lovasságát 's minden erejét összevonván, besánczolta magát Buda körül olly móddal, hogy néki Budát ostromolni a' mikor akarja, mindig hatalmában lehessen; a' nagyvezérnek ő hozzá, vagy a' várhoz férni épen ne. A' fiatal heves vérű Maximilián 's vele a' főhaditisztek' nagy többsége, kikben több

harczvágy mint előrelátás volt, mind igen ellenzék a' sánczok közzé zárkozást, 's helyette azt javas-  
láák, hogy az ostromot rövid ideig abban hagyván  
menjenek elibe — a' következés inkább biztosítá-  
sára — egész táborukkal a' nagyvezérnek; de Ká-  
roly dönthetlen okokkal megmutatá, hogy ezt cse-  
lekedni annyit tenne, mint az idei táborozás' nagy  
célját — Buda' visszavételét szántszándékkal el-  
vetni szemök elől. Mert, hogy a' nagyvezér fog e'  
egy hamar nyílt csatába ereszkedni, az még bizony-  
talan; semmi bizonyosabb ellenben, mint hogy a'  
bátor, eszes várba használja fogja a' vártól tá-  
vozásukat minden ostrom készületeik, összerombo-  
lására; 's ki tudja nem talál-e' még abban is, a'  
nagyvezérrel egyetértve, módot, hogy új csapato-  
kat szállit a' várba? Károly állhatatossága, helyesb  
nézete csakugyan győzött; Buda bekerítve, Károly  
seregeivel sánczaiban maradott, csupán Heusler  
Generált rendélvén néhány huszár osztályokkal a'  
közel eső Pál-völgyéhez, merről várta az első meg-  
támadtatást.

Sulejman, miután táborállásunkat maga néhány  
könnyű lovasok' kíséretében, megvizsgálta, hadi ta-  
nácsot tartott 's méghatárzá, kerüljön bár mibe,  
segítő seregeket küldeni a' várba.

Illy szándékkal kiválaszt jobb szárnyáról 8000  
jancsárt és spahit, mind a' legbátrabbakat, kiknek  
azon felül jutalommal sem mulasztá el élesztetni tü-  
zőket, mindennek közülök, ki táborunkon keresztül



a' várba jutand 20 aranyat igérvén, 's előre hármat mindjárt fejenként nekik e' summából ki is fizetvén. Kettős, természet- és pénzvágy ébresztette dühösséggel rohantak ezek Augustus 14<sup>én</sup> Heuslerre, 's már zavarba hozták csapatjait, midőn a' segítségire siető Pálffy 's több generalok által magok sokkal nagyobb zavarban 30 zászló 11 ágyu, 10 társzekér és 3000 halott' hátrahagyásával visszaveretnek. Más nap bal szárnyát ereszté ellenünk Sulejman, 's ekkor ismét elvesztvén 2000 embert, nagy sietséggel Ercsi megé három mértföldnyire visszavonúlt; de Augustus 17<sup>én</sup> éjjel újra, nagy vigyázattal visszatért, két ezer válogatott spahi, 's ugyanannyi, lóra ültetett jancsár kíséretiben; mielőtt viradni kezdett volna, sánczainkat megtámadta 's a' várbeliek' kicsapásától is segítetre, mintegy 500-at vitézeik közül, többnyire sebekkel rakva beszállított a' várba. Mintha a' veszély már elhárítva, mintha a' diadal már kezében lett volna minden ágyuit kisütteté öröme' jeléül Abdi; míg két, az ellenség kezibe került, levele nyilván hirdeté igen szorúlt állapotját.

A' következett napokon négyszer állította csatarendbe, négyszer vonta vissza, hogy csatáznia ne kelljen, seregeit Sulejman; végre Aug. 30<sup>án</sup> új próbát tett; de hadaí nagy részével maga akkor is csak messzeről nézte, mint próbáltak néhány bátor gyalog és lovas ezredei (3000 jancsár 1500 tatár) több ízben sánczainkon keresztül törni, mint



verettek mindannyiszor vissza, míg nem Pálfitól és Schöningtől körülkerítve, minthogy magukat megadni nem akarák, mindnyájan összevagdaltattak, de résziünkről is igen véres harcz után, mellyben Károly herczegnek is veszélyben forgott élete, megöletett, oldala mellett egy ágyugolyó által lovászmestere; elestek több jeles tiszteink, köztük Mercy, egyike legkitünőbb alvezéreinknek. Egy két sebből vérző török eltökélve nem boszúlatlan veszni, egyenesen az öltözete, fegyverei, egész külseje által kitetsző Generálnak (Mercynek) tart, annak egy csapással ketté hasítja fejét, miután több tiszteket földre terít körölte, 's akkor a' minden felül reá fordult csata' 's vett számtalan sebei következtében, elért célja', kitöltött boszúja' öröm érzeti közt összeroskad maga. A' kisedel őrsereg ez nap is, mint annyiszor dicsőséggel nem csak visszaveré a' Bajoroknak egy igen heves rohanását, hanem falai közül kijönni, a' bajor táborra ütni bátorkodott, 's abban nem kevés kárt, zavart okozott. Annyival könnyebb lett volna a' nagyvezérnek, ha bátorságán nem múlik, Abdival kezét fogva, a' szorongatott vár' szabadítására valamit tenni; annnyival megfoghatlanabb veszteglése nagy táborával. De ő úgy látszik, egészen megváltozott táborunkkal szemközt; első szerencsétlen próbatétele oltá felejtve lön előtte kötelesség, becsület, fogadás, minden csak urának őt büntetlenségéről előre bizonyossá tevő kegyelme nem.

Ezen közben megérkeztek, 's a' nagyvezértől akadályozatlan, táborunkkal egyesültek Scherffenberg és Carafa, amaz Erdélyből tizenkét ezer, ez felső Magyarországból 8000 emberrel. Maximilián 's a' vele együttértők újra nyílt csatát sürgetének, határozattan mint elébb is, ostrom 's sánczaikban maradás mellett nyilatkozáék Károly; Innen keserű összeszólalkozások. Épen jókor megjön Bécsből udvari főcancellár Gróf Strattman; kibékítője lesz a' csak az eszközök' megválasztásában különböző pártnak; Károly' értelme ismét győz 's meghatároztatik Budának, a' nagyvezér szemláltára ostrommal megvétele. De mielőtt ezt tennék, Károly, vért kimélőleg, fölkéreti még egyszer a' várat. Abdit ha saját gondolkozása, a' becsületre, eddig szerzett hírére sokat tartása, a' kötelesség érzete engedték volna, nem engedé egy pillanatig is kétkedni a' sultan parancsa, melly csák a' vár falain dicső — vagy a' vesztőhelyen gyalázatos halál közt engedett néki 's övéinek választást. Elhatározattan felelé azért habozás mélkül, hogy maga 's vitézei elszánvák vagy megvédni a' várat vagy omladéki közt keresni hős halált.

E' válasz' vétele után mindjárt másnap September 1<sup>én</sup> meg akarta Károly rohantatni a' várat, melly, mióta a' nagyvezér közelében volt is, szüntelen lövődöttetvén, mindenfelől tetemesen meg volt rongálva: de Maximilián, hogy vitézeinek a' várhoz jutást könnyítse, egy napot kérvén az omladékoknak

a' maga oldalán utból eltakarítására, következő napra haladt a' végviadal. —

Hétfőn Sept 2<sup>dikán</sup> estveli 6 órakor adá hat ágyu a' jelt az általános megtámadásra. Előre, hogy a' várba a' víz felől se juthasson semmi segitség, a' Duna, Budán felül egy szigetnél, erős lánczokkal átkötöttet; 's hogy az ostromlók háborítatlan dolgozhassanak, Károly seregei egy részével hátra maradt a' nagyvezérrel ha kívánatni fog, maga személyesen küzdendő; az adott jelre mindenfelől egyszerre a' várnak esvén a' mieink elkezdődik a' viadal, egyike a' legmegátalkodottabbaknak, mellyek valaha vár felett folytak. Kettőztetik erejüket ostromlók, ostromlottak, azok, mivel mindent, a' legjobbat, ezek, mivel semmit sem reménylenek. Abdi — hol legjobban összerombolva a' vár, leghevesebb a' megtámadás, legszembetünőbb a' veszedelem — a' bécsi oldalon törésre áll legbátrabbjaival; halált megvetve rohannak reája a' mieink, legelől az a' báró d'Asti, ki első volt közelebb az érsekújvári, — első akar lenni most a' Budai várfal meghágásában, — 's lesz az első áldozat; rettenthetetlenül lépnek helyére társai, nagy részint önként válalkozottak, 's kik osztozni akarának dicsőségében, osztoznak többnyire halálban. De mig itt egyetlen férfinak lelke, karja, hatalma, kétséssé teszi győzedelmünket; kivíva már az, 's a' vár kezünkben a' víziváros felől. Oroszláni erő- 's bá-

torsággal küzd ott Magyarjaival, 's maga legelső kihág a' köfalra Petneházi, Tökölnek egykor, most a' császárnak szolgálatjában ezredes; utána rettenetes vezéröknek, győzedelem' bizodalmával, a' lelkes katonák; fegyverök alatt elhúl minden mi ellentáll. Ide siet most a' bécsi oldalról Abdi: de itt már nincs emberi erő, melly segíthessen; amott távoztával sülyed bátorsága vitézeinek, hanyatlík szerencsájök; hátrál mindenütt a' törökség, harczolva a' bátrak, futva, menekvésről gondoskodva a' félénkék; nyomokban az ingerült diadalmas ellenség; fegyvertelent, rangra, nemre, korra tekintés nélkül soká feltartóztatott bosszújának áldozó; a' harczolók' vad lármája 's győztesek' örömmriadási közt 'lhangzanak az esdeklők' jajai, a' haldoklók' hergése; hasztalan a' térdre hullva irgalomért könyörgés, hasztalan a' fehér zászlók' lobogtatása; semmit sem hall, sem lát a' bosszú- 's győzedelem ittas katona, csak egy forog mindig mindenütt szeme lelke előtt, a' hosszú ostromban kiállott sok szenvedése' 's elhullott rokonai' képe, a' másfél százados nemzeti csúfos rabiga, a' sok vér, melly annak széttöréséért keresztény erekből most 's valaha folyt. Leirhatatlan az öldöklés' dühe az ijedség' és tolongás' zavarara. Terittrék hollakkal a' tűz és vértől párologó utcák; kétségbe esve futkosnak a' buvóhelyet, menedéket keresők; zugok, földalatti boltozatok, pinczék fogadnak be sokakat, sokan kik illyeket közel nem értek ilyedtök-



ben a' halál elöl, a' halál' karjai közzé, a' Duna' véres habjaiba veték magokat. Csak egy maroknyi sereg tartja még magát, a' zsidó utczában, a' két-ségbeesés' megátalkottságával harczolva, nem a' győzelemért, hanem hogy minél drágábban adja el életét. Egy ősz bajnok küzd legelől közöttök, két kard villog két kezében; test halom körulte; oszt és kap sebeket; de lankadatlan ereje, míg nem egy lövés találja messziről: mire kihull gyilkos aczéja keziből, 's élet nélkül rogyik a' halott rakásra. A' vitéz várba Abdi az. Társai dicsően mint ő végzék pályájokat; legtöbben mellette hullottak el; kevesen karddal kezökben a' királyi kastélyba vonúltak, ott többekkel egyesülve újabb csatát kezdtek, 's rövid de dühös önvédelem után, mind levágattak. —

A' nagyvezér, megfoghatatlan, egy magas domb' tetejéről nézte összedugott karokkal a' harc' fordulatait, övéi szorongattatását, mindnyájoknak, a' várnak, velek az Ozmán uraságnak Magyarországon, egész nyugoton, siralmas enyészét. Midőn látta hogy vesztve minden, félelem, szegény, bánat miatt magán kívül siet táborába, rögtön indulót fuvat, 's nyakra füre — hogy ne üzettethessék, maga után a' hidakat mindenütt felégetve — Belgrádba szalad. Innen küldi tudósítását udvarához, hogy Budát 160,000 vakmerő keresztyénnel szemközt megtartania lehetetlen volt; de mentve táborá; fenn a' jobb jövő' reménye. A'



*nagyúr és a' diván, mint istentől bűneikért rájuk mért csapást tekinték a' nagy veszteséget, hálát adnak a' sereg' megmaradásaért, 's megtartója a' nagyvezér, büntetés helyett, jutalmakkal és dicséretekkel halmoztatik.*

---

## II. POETRY.

---

### 1. *Remény, emlékezet.*

(Hope and remembrance).

*Éltünk' rögös határain  
Két genius vezet,  
'S fellel borulván útain,  
Nyújt mindegyik kezét;  
De bár tekint biztatva rád,  
Vigasztalást egyik sem ad:  
Remény 's emlékezet.*

*Emlékezet lebegtetí  
Szárnyát a' múlt felett,  
'S bús képzetekben rengetí  
Borongó kebeled';  
Múlt kedv után titkon epeszt  
Múlt kin között ismét senyveszt  
'S lelkedre hoz telet.*

*Kéklő lepelben messze jár  
Előted a' remény;  
Magához int, de meg nem vár,  
Tovább, tovább lengvén.*

'S míg lepke szárnyát kergeted,  
 Lezúg híjában életed,  
 'S állasz pályád' szélén.

Roszat ne félj, 's ne kívánj jót  
 Múlt és jövő közül;  
 Öleld meg a' jelenvalót  
 Melly játszik és örül.  
 'S bár ködbe néha burkozik  
 De színe gyorsan változik,  
 Ajkán mosolygás ül.

*Kölcsey Ferencz.*

## **2. Szép Ilonka** (a ballad).

### **I.**

A' vadász ül hosszú méla lesben  
 Vár felajzott nyílra gyors vadat;  
 'S mind fölebb és mindig fényesebben  
 A' serény nap délfelé mutat.  
 Hasztalan vár, Vértés' belsejében  
 Nyugszik a' vad hús forrás' tövében.

A' vadász még lesben ül sokáig,  
 Alkonyattól vár szerencsejelt;  
 Vár feszülten a' nap' áldoztáig  
 'S im a' várt szerencse megjelent:

*Ah de nem rad, könnyü kis pillangó  
'S szép sugár lány, röpteként csapongó.*

*„Tarka lepke, szép arany pillangó  
Lepj meg engem, szállj rám kis madár;  
Vagy vezess el, merre vagy szállandó,  
A' hol a' nap nyugodóba jár.“  
Szól 's irámlik mint az őz' futása  
Könnyü 's játszi a' lány' illanása.*

*„Istenemre!“ szöla felszökölve,  
A' vadász: „ez már királyi rad.“  
És legottan, minden mást feledre  
Hévvél a' lány nyomdokán halad.  
Ő a' lányért, a' lány a' pillangóért  
Verseneznek tündér kedvetelésért.*

*„Mevagy! így szól a' leány örömmel.“  
Elfogván a' szállongó lepkét;  
„Mevagy! így szól a' vadász gyönyörrel  
A' leányra nyújtva jobb kezét;  
'S rezzent kézből kis pillangó elszáll;  
A' leány rab szép szem' sugaránál!*

## II.

*All-e még az ősz Peterdi háza?  
Él-e még a' régi harcz' fia?  
All a' ház még, bár fogy gazdasága  
'S telt pohárnál ül az ősz maga.  
A' sugár lány körben és a' vendég:  
Lángszemében csábító varázs ég.*

'S Hunyadiért, a' kidölt dicsőért,  
 A' kupák már felillantanak,  
 Osz vezére' 's a' hon' nagy nevéért  
 A' vén bajnok' könnyei hultanak;  
 Most könnyüi, vére hajdanában  
 Bőven omlott Nándor' ostromában.

„Hínyt vezérem' ifjú szép sugára,“  
 Szól az ősz most, „éljen a' király!“  
 A' vadásznak vér tolúl arczára  
 'S még kupája illetetlen áll.  
 „Illetetlen mért hagyád kupádat  
 Fogd fel gyermek és kövesd apádat.“

„Mert, apád én kétszer is lehetnék,  
 És ha ittam az nincs czenkekért;  
 Talpig ember, a' kit én említék,  
 Nem gyaláz meg, ő olly hősivért!“  
 'S illetődve 's méltóság szemében,  
 Kél az ifjú, tölt pohár kezében.

„Éljen hát a' hős vezér' magzatja,  
 Addig éljen míg a' honnak él!  
 De szakadjon élte' pillanatja,  
 Mellyben attól elpártolni kél;  
 Egy király se inkább, mint hitetlen:  
 Nyüög a' népen a' rossz 's tehetetlen.“

'S mind zajosban, mindég hevesebben  
 Vig beszéd közt a' gyors óra ment.  
 A' leányka híven és hívebben



*Bámulá a' lelkes idegent.*

*„Vajh ki ő, és merre van hazája?  
Gondolá, de nem mondotta szája.“*

*„Téged is te erdők' szép virága  
Üdvözölve tisztel e' pohár;  
Hozzon isten egykor fel Budába,  
Osz apáddal a' vadász elvár;  
Fenn lakozva a' magas Budában  
Leltek engem Mátyás' udvarában.“*

*Szól 's búcsúzik a' vadász, rivalva  
Inti őt a' kúrthang; menni kell.  
Semmi szóra, semmi biztatásra  
Nem maradhat vendéglőivel.  
„Emlékezzel visszatérni hozzánk  
Jó vadász, ha meg nem látogatnánk.“*

*Mond szérenyen szép Ilonka, állván  
A' kis csarnok' végső lépcsőjén,  
'S homlokát az ifjú megcsókolván,  
Útnak indul a' hold' éjjelén.  
'S csendes a' ház, ah de nincs nyugalma,  
Fölveré azt szerelem' hatalma.*

### III.

*Föl Peterdi 's bájos unokája  
Látogatni mentenek Budát;  
Minden lépten nő az agg' csodája;  
Mert sok újat meglepetve lát.*

*A' leányka titkon édes óra'  
Jövetén vár szép találkozóra.*

*'S van tolongás 's új öröm Budában:  
Győzelemből várják a' királyt,  
A' ki Bécsset vivó haragában  
Vérboszút a' rosz szomszédon állt.  
Vágyva néz sok hű szem ellenébe:  
Nem vidúl meg szép Ilonka' képe.*

*Hol van ő a' nyájas ösméretlen?  
Milly szerencse fordúlt étetén?  
Honn-e vagy tán messze költözötte  
Jár az őzek' hűvös rejtekén.“  
Kérdi titkon aggó gondolattal  
'S arcza majd ég, majd színében elhal.*

*'S felrobognak hadvész ülte képpel  
Ujlaki 's a' megbékült Garrák.  
'S a' király jő felség érzetével  
Környékeztén őt a' hős apák.  
Ősz, Peterdi ösmer vendégére,  
A' király az: „Áldás életére!“*

*„Fény nevére áldás életéré.“  
Fenn kiáltja minden hű ajak;  
Százszorozva visszazeng nevére  
A' hegy és völgy és a' zárt falak.  
Haloványan hófehér szobornál  
Szép Ilonka némán és merőn áll.*

*A' vadászhoz Mátyás' udvarában  
Szép leánykám menjünk-e hát?  
Jobb nekünk a' Vértes' vadonában,  
Kis tanyánk ott nyugodalmat ad.  
Szól az ősz jó sejtő fájdalommal,  
'S a' bús pár meggy gondsujtotta nyommal.*

*És ha láttál szépen nőtt virágot  
Elhajolni belső baj miatt,  
Úgy hajolt el, félvén a' világot,  
Szép Ilonka titkos bú alatt.  
Társasága lángzó érzemenyek,  
Kinos emlék, és kihalt remények.*

*A' rövid de gyötrő élet elfolyt,  
Szép Ilonka hervadt sír felé;  
Hervadása lilium-hullás volt:  
Ártatlanság' képe 's bánaté.  
A' király jön 's áll a' puszta házban:  
Ők nyugosznak örökös hazában  
Vörösmarty.*

### 3. Julius Caesar, by Shakespeare,

translated by Vörösmarty.

Act III. Scene 2.

*Brutus. —*

*Legyetek mind végig türelemmel, Rómaiak, házamfiai, barátim, hallgassatok meg ügyem miatt és*

*legyetek csendesen, hogy meghallhassatok. Higyetek nekem becsületem ért 's legyetek tekintettel becsületem iránt, hogy hihessetek. Birálgatok meg bölcsességtek szerint, 's ébreszszétek fel érzékeiteket, hogy jobban ítélhessetek. Ha valaki van ezen gyülekezetben, szíves barátja Caesarnak, annak mondom, hogy Brutus' szeretete Caesar iránt nem csekélyebb mint az övé. Ha most ezen jó barát kérdezi, miért támadott fel Brutus Caesar ellen? válaszom ez: nem mivel Caesart kevésbbé szeretem, hanem mert Rómát jobban szeretem. Azt óhajtanátok-e inkább, hogy Caesar élne, 's mindnyájan rabokul halnátok, mint, hogy Caesar haljon meg 's ti mindnyájan éljeteek szabad emberekül? Mivel Caesar engem szeretett, megsiratom; mivel szerencsés volt, örvendek; mivel vitéz volt, becsülöm őt, de mivel nagyra vágyó volt, ledöftem őt. Tehát könnyű szeretetéért, öröm szerencséjén, becsület vitézségéért; 's halál nagyravágyásáért. Hol van itt olly nyomorú, ki rabszolga kívánna lenni? Ha van, szóljon; mert őt bántottam meg; hol van itt olly durva, ki római nem kívánna lenni? Ha van, szóljon mert őt bántottam meg. Megszűnöm hogy választ adjatok. —*

*Úgy tehát senkit sem bánték meg. Nem tettem Caesárral egyebet, mint mit ti fognátok tenni Brutussal. A' vizsgálat halála felett a' capitoliumban föl van jegyezve; dicsősége nem kisebbitve, a' miben jeles volt, sem vétkei nagyítva, mellyekért a' halált szenvedte. — — Itt hozatik teste Antonius' gyászkiáltásában, ki ámbár megölésében részese nem*

volt, osztozandik halála, jótéteményeiben, helyet foghatván a' közigazgatásban mint ki nem közületek? Evvel én távozom, kinél, valamint legjobb barátomat megöltem, Róma' javáért, ugyan azon tör van számomra, ha honomnak halálomat tetszendik kívánni.

From the same:

*Antonius. —*

*Barátim, Romaiak, földieim,  
Figyeljetek rám.  
Temetni jöttem Caesart, nem dicsérni.  
A' rossz, mit ember tesz, túléli őt;  
A' jó gyakorta sírba száll vele:  
Ez legyen Caesar' sorsa is. A'nemes  
Brutus mondá hogy Caesar nagyravágyott.  
Ha ez való, úgy súlyos bűne volt,  
És Caesar érte súlyosan lakolt meg.  
Most Brutus engedvén 's a' többiek,  
(s Brutus derék becsületes férfiú)  
Jövök beszélni holt Caesar fölött.  
Barátom volt ő, hozzám hű 's igaz.  
De Brutus mondja, hogy nagyokra tört;  
(S Brutus derék, becsületes férfiú,  
'S a' többi mind derék jó férfiak)  
Rómába ő sok foglyokat hozott;  
Váltságok a' közkinctárt gazdagítá  
Ez nagyravágyását jelenti-e?*



*Szegény ha jajdúlt, Caesar sirt vele;  
 A' nagyravágásnak nem illy szelid  
 Anyagból kéne\*) szerkeztetve lenni.  
 De Brutus mondja hogy nagyokra lőrt,  
 S Brutus becses, derék egy férfiú!  
 Látlátok a' Lupercal ünnepen,  
 Háromszor nyújtám a' koronát neki.  
 'S ő visszatolta. És ez nagyravágás?  
 De Brutus mondja, hogy nagyokra tört,  
 'S bizonynyal ő derék egy férfiú.  
 Nem szólok én, hogy Brutusnak beszédét  
 Czáfoljam: azt mondom csak mit tudok.  
 Mind kedvelétek őt, és volt miért;  
 Mi tilthat el most értte sírnotok?  
 Vad állatokba szöktél, óh ítélet,  
 'S az ember ész nélkül maradt! Türelmet!  
 Caesárral szívem ott a' gyászpaddon van:  
 Pihennem kell, míg hozzám visszatér.*

---

*Még tegnap hasztalan daczolt vala  
 Caesárral a' világ. Ma itt hever  
 'S nincs olly szegény, ki bókoljon neki.  
 Oh honfiak, ha dühre, lázadásra  
 Ingerleném a' lelket bennetek,  
 Megbántanám Brutust, meg Cassiust,  
 Kik tudva van, derék jó férfiak.*

---

\*) Instead of *ke'ene*, ought.

Nem bánom őket hát, inkább leszek  
 Igaztalan holtunkhoz és magamhoz,  
 Hozzátak, mint olly tisztelt férfiakhoz,  
 De itt egy irat, rajt' Caesar' pecsétje!  
 Végrendelménye; házában lelém.  
 Csak hallja ezt a' község (mellyet én,  
 Bocsássatok meg, fel nem olvasok)  
 Csókolni járand holt Caesar sebeit;  
 Kendőket áztat szent vérébe; sőt  
 Emlékül egy hajszáért esdekel  
 'S majd haldokolva feljegyzendi vég\*)  
 Intézetében 's dús örök gyanánt  
 Utóira szállítandja. —

#### 4. *Az elhagyott anya.*\*\*)

Ismérek egy édes; ah! árva anyát,  
 Melly bűnnek eredten emésztí magát,  
 Elhagyva, kerülve leányaitól,  
 Bár értők epedve a' hív anya szól  
 Oh jertek\*\*\*) ölembe,  
 Szép gyermekeim;

\*) *Végintézet*, last will, the word is divided because of the metre.

\*\*) The forsaken mother, a beautiful allegory, in which the poet compares his country to a mother deserted by her children.

\*\*\*) Instead of *jöjjetek*, come.

Aldásra emelten  
 Várnak kezeim  
 Oh jertek! oh jertek! az édes anyához  
 Itt ül lekötötten a' szörnyű magányhoz;  
 Oh jertek ölembe  
 Gyermekeim!  
 Míg el nem apadnak  
 Hév könnyeim.

Én szültelek, álltam  
 Bölcsőtök előtt;  
 Emlőim adának  
 Új életerőt  
 Mint kis csecsemőket  
 Már én emelélek  
 Míg bennetek alvék  
 A' gyermeki lélek.  
 Én látnotok\*) adtam  
 Olly nap' sugarát,  
 A' mellyet irígyel  
 Sok földi család.  
 Szép arczaitoknak  
 Én adta me' bájt,  
 Melly annyi szivekben  
 Viszhangra talált.  
 Én termetet adtam.  
 Olly őzi sugárt;

---

\*) *Látnotok*, to see, is the Infinitive with affixes.

'S szűz kebleitekre  
 A' lilium-árt. \*)  
 Én adtam a' szájnak  
 Az édeni mézet,  
 Melly akkor is édes  
 Ha töreid érzed;  
 Én adtam e' tündér  
 Lángú szemet,  
 Melly a' szerelemnek  
 Csillaga lett;  
 Melly egy sugarával  
 Szül enyhe tavaszt,  
 Egy más sugarával  
 Elégeti azt.  
 Szépségemet imé reátok adám  
 Hogy halljam e' szókat: „óh édes anyám!“  
 Hogy zengjen e' név is  
 Ajkitokon,  
 'S elhagyva ne légyek  
 Bús napomon.  
 Oh jertek! oh jertek  
 Az édes anyához:  
 Itt ül lekötötten  
 A' szörnyű magányhoz.  
 Oh jertek ölembe  
 Gyermekeim  
 Mig el nem apadnak

\*) *Lilium-ár*, lily-stream, lily-growth.  
 Csink, hung. Gram.

*Hév könyeim.*

*Igy szólal esengve*

*Hiába, hiába!*

*Nincs a' ki omoljon*

*Szülői karába*

*Sors űzi fiait, remeg élteikért;*

*Ah! lánya! égne az idegen-ért.*

*'S ő ott ül örömtelen 's egyedül,*

*A' köny kiapadva szelid szemeiből,*

*'S mint lelke törötten az égre tekint*

*Láthatni kívülve az anyai kint.*

*Csak szívdobogása jelenti hogy él*

*'S minden dobogással egy élet alél.*

*Vörösmarty.*

### **5. Montalan.**

*Járatlan utakon ki jársz*

*'S keblet viharra, vészre társz,*

*Örömtől idegen,*

*Ki vagy te bánat' embere,*

*Mi sorsnak üldöz fegyvere,*

*Hogy bolygsz\*) vad bérczeken?*

*„Hagyj\*\*) bolyganom vad bérczeken,*

*Hagyd dúlni a' vést keblemen:*

---

\*) Instead of *bolyogsz*.

\*\*) Instead of *hagyjál*, let, let me.



*Én bújdosó vagyok;  
Kietlenb\*) itt e' puszta szív  
Zajosbb a' vész melly benne vív:  
Fájdalmim olly naggak."*

*Tán dús valál és kincsedet  
Erette ádáz végzeted,  
'S most inség szomorít?  
„Dús voltam 's dúsnek lenni jó  
'S inségem most olly szívható;  
De ez nem tántorít."*

*Két név előtted szent talán;  
A' hű barát, a' hű leány  
És ők elhagytanak?  
„Pártos barátság szerelem  
Földön legkinzóbb gyötreme:  
Ők híven haltanak."*

*Kihaltak ők? tán gyermeked,  
Szép hölgyed, minden örömed  
Emésztő sírba szállt?  
„Mind sirban a' mit szereték  
De a' szív mély 's nagy menedék,  
Elnyögte a' halált."*

*Te türsz bár kinod súlya nagy;  
Tán a' becsület' rabja vagy,  
'S neved gyalázva volt?*

---

\*) Instead of kiellenebb.

„Gyalázva minden címerem  
De azt hazámért szenvedem  
'S ez rajtam drága folt.“

*Ha! számkivetve vagy tehát  
'S mellyért vérzettel ten\*) hazád  
Sújt kérlelhetlenül?  
„A' számüzöttnek honja van  
'S bár szenved ő 's bóldogtalan  
A' nemzet él 's derül.*

*„A' nemzet, mellyhez tartozám,  
Kiirtva 's vérbe fúlt hazám  
Többé fel nem virúl:  
Engem millióknak veszte nyom,  
Egy nép' halálát hordozom  
Keblemben ostorúl.“*

*Vörösmarty.*

## **6. Szózat.**

*Hazádnak rendületlenül  
Légy hive oh Magyar!  
Bölcsöd az 's majdan sírod is,  
Melly ápol 's eltakar.*

*A' nagy világon e' kívül  
Nincsen számodra hely,*

---

\*) Instead of *te*, thy own.

*Aldjon vagy verjen sors' keze  
Itt éljed, halnod kell.*

*Ez a' föld, mellyen annyiszor  
Apáid' vére folyt,  
Ez, mellyhez minden szent nevet  
Egy ezred-év csato**lt***

*Itt küzdtenek honért a' hős  
Árpádnak hadai;  
Itt törtek össze rabigát  
Hunyadnak karjai.*

*Szabadság! itten hordozák  
Véres zászlódat,  
'S elhulltanak legjobbjaink  
A' hosszú harcz alatt.*

*És annyi balszerencse közt,  
Oly sok vizály után,  
Mégfogya bár, de törve nem,  
Él nemzet e' hazán.*

*'S népek' hazája, nagy világ,  
Hozzad bátran kiált:  
„Egy ezredévi szenvedés  
Kér éltet vagy halált.”*

*Az nem lehet hogy annyi szív  
Hiában onta vért,*

'S keservben annyi hű kebel  
Szakadt meg a' honért.

Az nem lehet hogy ész, erő,  
'S olly szent akarat,  
Hiába sorvadozzanak  
Egy átok súly alatt

Még jöni kell, még jöni fog  
Egy jobb kor, melly után  
Buzgó imádság epedez  
'Száz ezrek' ajakán.

Vagy jöni fog, ha jöni kell,  
A' nagyszerű halál,  
Hol a' temetkezés fölött  
Egy ország vérben áll.

'S a' sírt, hol nemzet sülyed el  
Népek veszik körül,  
'S az ember millióinak  
Szemében gyász-köny ül.

Légy hite rendületlenül  
Hazádnak oh Magyar!  
Ez éltetőd, 's ha elbukál  
Hantjára! ez takar.

A' nagy világon e' kívül  
Nincsen számodra hely;

*Aldjon, vagy verjen sors' keze,  
Itt élned, halnod kell.*

*Vörösmarty.*

### **7. A felkelt nemességhez.**

*(Szombathelyi táborban 1797.)*

*Él még nemzetem' Istene!  
Buzgó könyeimen szent öröm ömledez,  
Állsz még, állsz még, szeretett hazám!  
Nem dőlt még alacson porba nemes fejed!  
Méltán búslakodám előbb,  
Hogy hérósz eleid' nyomdokiból kitérsz,  
'S régen félt reszedelmidet  
Rád húzzák netalán majd buta korcsaid.  
Hála! mást mutat e' sereg,  
Melly most régi magyar módra nyeregben ül.  
Nem szállt Trója alá soha  
Illy szép szpártai had, sem Hunyadink' kevély  
Zászlóit nem emelte volt  
Rettentőbb hadinép Bécs' letörött falán.  
Csak sast nemzenek a' sasok,  
'S nem szül gyáva nyulat Nubia' párducza  
Thetisz' nagy fija nem maradt,  
Chironnál mikoron kardra veté szemét:  
Arpád' rére sem hülhet el*



*Ambár rég heverész a' puka pamlagon.  
 Nézd: most felköti fegyverét,\*)  
 Csákóján lobogó kolcsag emelkedik  
 Buzdító katonás ruhát  
 Öltrén, leke' nemes lángja kigerjedez,  
 Majd kardjára felesküszik,  
 Mindent ront 's megemészt, mint heves Afrika'  
 Búsult Tigrise, a' midőn  
 Ordít kölykeiért, 's körme viaskodik.  
 Majd felkelnek alattad is  
 Óh József! nagyanyád' Therezia' bajnoki,  
 'S bátran méggy szeretett vezér,  
 A' jég-Alpeszeken 's Adria' öblein. —  
 E' nép nem gyülelész-csoport,  
 Nem rabbérbe emelt bús buzogányt keze.  
 Önként áldoz az életet,  
 'S horgas kardja kövér hantjaiért hasít.  
 Miglen hősi bibor süveg  
 Tündöklök fejedén Hunnia' csillaga,  
 Esterházy\*\*), dicső Magyar.  
 Mig győző eleid' pulosa czombodon  
 Csatlog: győzni fog a' Magyar  
 'S Andrásnak ragyogó napja le nem menend!  
 Berzsenyi.*

\*) *Fegyver* arms instead of *kard*, sword.

\*\*) Prince Nicolas Esterhazy was the comander of the insurgent Nobility, against the French.

### 8. *A' magyarokhoz.*

*Romlásnak indúlt hajdan erős Magyar  
Nem látod Árpád' vére miként fajul?*

*Nem látod a' bosszús egeknek,  
Ostoraid nyomorúlt hazádon?*

*Nyólcz századoknak vérzivatarja között  
Rongált Budának tornyai állanak.*

*Ambár ezerszer vak tüzedben  
Véreidet, magadat tiportad.*

*Elszórja, hidd el, mostani veszni tért  
Erkölesöd, undok vipera-fajzatok*

*Dulják fel a' várt, melly sok ádáz  
Ostromokat mosolyogva nézett.*

*Nem ronthatott el téged egykoron  
A' vad tatár khan' xerxesi táborá*

*'S világot ostromló töröknek,  
Napkeletet leverő hatalma.*

*Nem fojthatott meg Zápolya' öldöklő  
Századja 's titkos gyilkosaid' keze:*

*A' szent rokon vérbe füresztő  
Visszavonás' tüze közt megálltál.*

*Mert régi erkölcs, szpírtai férfikar  
Küzdött 's vezérlett fergetegid között;*

*Birkozva győztél 's Herculesként  
Ércz buzogány rezegett kezében.*

*Most lassú méreg, lassú halál emészt.  
Nézd a' kevély tölgy, mellyet az éjszaki  
Szélvész le nem dönt, benne termő  
Férgek erős gyökerit megörlik,*

*'S gyenge széltől földre teritetik!  
Igy minden ország' támasza, talpköve,  
A' tiszta erkölcs, melly ha megrész  
Róma ledől 's rabigába görbed.*

*Mi a' Magyar most? — rút szybarita váz!  
Letépte fényes nemzeti bélyegét,  
'S hazája' feldult védfalából  
Rak palotát heverő helyének;*

*Eldődeinknek bajnoki köntösét  
'S nyelvét meguntán, rút idegent cserélt,  
A' nemzet' örlelkét tapodja;  
Gyermeki báb puha szive' tárgya.*

*Oh más magyar kar' menyköve villogot  
Atilla' véres harczai közt, midőn  
A' félvilággal szembe szállott  
Nemzeteket tapodó haragja.*

*Más néppel ontott bajnoki vért hazánk'  
Szerzője Árpád, a' duna' partjain,  
O, más Magyarra verte vissza  
Nagy Hunyadink Mahomed' hatalmát.*

*De jaj csak így jár minden az ég alatt!  
 Forgó viszontagság járma alatt nyögünk,  
     Tündér szerencsénk' kénye hány, vet,  
     Játszva emel, 's mosolyogva ver le.*

*Felforgat a' nagy századok' ércz keze  
 Mindent: ledőlt már a' nemes Ilion.  
     A' büszke Karthagó' hatalma  
     Róma 's erős Babylon leomlott.*

*Berzsenyi.*

### **9. Jamborság és középszer.**

*Más az Atridák' ragyogó dagályát.  
 Tarka pórúzon molyogva nyögje,  
 'S Tantalus szájjal magas asztaloknál  
     Üljön epedve.*

*Óh ti elrejtett kalybák' lakóji,  
 Régi jamborság 's te arany középszer,  
 Üljetek mellém küszöbömre: vigan  
     Látlak, öllelek.*

*Üljetek mellém ősi tűzhelyemre!  
 'S majd Szabinám'\*) hív keze fözte mellet,  
 Mártsatok vidám ajakat mosolygó  
     Bükfa kupámba.*

\*) The poet alludes to Horatian names.

A' ki keblében helyet ád ti néktek;  
A' szerencsének letapodja kényjét;  
'S szíve' épségét soha semmi bájszin  
Törbe nem ejti.

*Nem von az fényes rabigát nyakára;  
Sem majomnévért kenyerét nem adja:  
Kincseket sem gyűjt, hogy azokra árva!  
Könnye kiáltson,*

*Tiszta lélekkel 's megelégedéssel  
Látja csűrében keze' mive' bérét;  
'S izzadásának gyönyörű gyümölcsét.  
Éli örömmel.*

*Nyújas arczával szegi meg falatját,  
A' barátságnak 's jövevény szegénynek;  
'S asztalánál, mint az öreg Philemon,  
Égieket lát.*

*Lakja szentegyház, maga áldozó-pap,  
És az áldásnak poharát kezében  
Istenek töltik, kimeríthetlen  
Égi itallal.*

*Berzsenyi.*

**10. A' temetö.**

*Elrémülve tekint, O temető, reád  
A Tündér hutalom 's a' ragyogó dagály,  
Látásodra szemek' vázai 's a' világ'  
Álarczai lefullanak.*



*Te a' durva tyrán' biborit elveted  
Mint a' kóldús' utált élete terheit,  
'S a' szent emberiség' jussa szerint nekik  
Egy rangot 's nyugodalmat ádsz.*

*A' kit szíve emészt 's elhagya a' remény,  
Annak még te reményt adsz 's magas enyhületet.  
Jer\*), adj nékem is, adj! im leereszkedem  
Sentelt hantadon 's álmodok.*

*Mit? 's hát kell-e nékem álmodozás, remény?  
Agyráz altat-e vagy pólyadal engemet?  
Oh, ismerem ezen phantomi lét' körét  
'S nem szédül küszöbén fejem.*

*Minden szálfü, virág, mellyre tekintek itt,  
Érző szív vala, melly ömlede mint enyém,  
Minden porszem úgy szeretett örült,  
Mint e' gerjedező kebel.*

*Minden kö darabon, mellyre szemem' vetem,  
A' nagy Perszepeol' és Palmyra' képe int;  
Látom Théba' kevély tornyait omlani  
'S a' márvány Babylon' falát.*

*Látom hangyabolji miveidet, világ!  
Mint szórja 's temeti a' nagy Örök' keze;  
Látom hangyasereg! mint tusakodsz 's tolongsz  
Sírod' partjain 's porán.*

---

\*) Insteae of jőjj.

*Jertek\*) bámulatos bajnokok és nagyok  
 'S ti kik nem meritek nézni az elmulást,  
 És ti porba nyögők, jertek ide, 's velem  
 Élni 's halni tanuljatok.*

*Berzsenyi.*

### **II. Fohászkodás.**

*Isten! kit a' bölcs' lángesze fel nem ér,  
 Csak titkon érző lelke ohajtva sejt:  
 Léted világít mint az égő  
 Nap, de szemünk belé nem tekinthet.*

*A' legmagasb menny 's aether' uránai,  
 Mellyek körülted rendre keringenek,  
 A' láthatlan férgek, a' te  
 Bölcs kezeid' remekelt csudái.*

*Te hoztad e' nagy minden'\*\*) ezer nemét  
 A' semmiségből, a' te szemöldöked  
 Ronthat 's teremthet száz világot,  
 'S a' nagy idők' folyamit kiméri.*

*Téged dicsőit a' Zenith és Nadir  
 A' szélvész' bús harcza, az égi láng'  
 Villáma, harmatcsepp, virágszál,  
 Hirdeti nagy kezed' alkotását.*

---

\*) jöjjelek.

\*\*) Minden, universe.

Buzgón leomlok színed előtt, dicső!  
 Majdan ha lelkem záraiból kikél  
 'S hozzád közelb járulhat, akkor  
 A' miután eped ott eléri.

Addig letörlöm könyeimet 's megyek  
 Rendeltetésem' pályá' futásain,  
 A' jobb 's nemesb lelkeknek útján,  
 Merre erőm 's inaim vihetnek.

Bizton tekintem mély sírom' éjjelét!  
 Zordon, de, óh nem, nem lehet az gonosz  
 Mert a' te munkád; ott is elszórt  
 Csontaimat kezeid takarják.

Berzsenyi.

## 12. *Vanitatum Vanitas.*

Itt az irás, forgassátok  
 Érett észszel józanon,  
 'S benne feltalálhatjátok  
 Mit tanít bölcs Salomon;  
 Mikép széles e' világon  
 Minden épül hitványságon;  
 Nyár és harmat, tél, és hó,  
 Mind csak hijába való!

Földünk egy kishangyafészek  
 Egy percz hozta tünemény

*A' villám és dörgő vészek  
Csak méhdongás 's bolygó fény;  
A' történet' röptülése  
Csak egy sohajtás' lengése;  
Saru minden pompa 's ék  
Egy ezred egy buborék.*

*Sándor' csillogó pályája  
Nyúlbadúszat özfutás;  
Etele' duló csordája  
Patkánycsoport, foltdarázs;  
Mátyás' dicső csatázási,  
Napoleon' hóditási,  
'S Waterloo diadal,  
Mind csak kakas-viadal.*

*A' virtus'\*) nagy tüneményi  
Göz, mit hagymáz lehele;  
A' kebel' lángérezményi  
Vértolulás' kín jele;  
A' vég, mellyet Sokrát ére,  
Catonak kihulló vére,  
'S Zrinyi Miklós' szent porra,  
Egy bohóság' láncsorra.*

*És ti bölcsek, mit hozzátok  
A' mi volna szép 's jeles?*

---

\*) Instead of erény.

*Mámorbirta koponyátok,  
 Plató 's Aristoteles.  
 Bölcselkedő oktalanság,  
 Rendbe fűzött tudatlanság,  
 Kártyavár 's légállítvány  
 Mindenféle tudomány.*

*Demosthen dörgő nyelvével  
 Szitkozódó halkufár;  
 Xenophon méz beszédével  
 Rokka közt mesére vár;  
 Pindár' égi szárnyalása  
 Forró, hideg dadogása;  
 'S Phidias, a' mit farag  
 Berovátkolt kődarab.*

*Mi az élet tűzfolyása?  
 Hulló szikra' melege.  
 A' szenvedelmek' zúgása?  
 Lepke szárny' fergetege.  
 Kezdet és vég egymást éri  
 És az élet hű vezéri  
 Hit 's remény a' szűk pályán  
 Tarka párák 's szivarvány.*

*Holdvilág csak boldogságunk;  
 Füst a' balsors melly elszáll;  
 Gyertyaláng egész világunk;  
 Egy fuvalat a' halál.  
 Vársz hírt 's halhatatlanságot?  
 Illat az melly tölt virágot.*



*És a' rózsát ha elhúl,  
Még egy perczel éli túl.*

*Hát ne gondolj e' világgal,  
Bölcs az, mindent ki megvet  
Sorssal, Virtussal, nagysággal  
Tudományt, hírt 's életet.  
Légy mint szikla rendületlen  
Tompa, nyugodt, érzetlen  
'S kedv emel, vagy bú temet,  
Szépnek 's rúttnak húnnyj szemet.*

*Mert mozogjon, avagy álljon,  
E' parányi föld veled,  
Lengjen fényben vagy homályban  
Hóld és nap fejünk fölett,  
Bár minő színben jelentse  
Jöttét a' vándor szerencse,  
Sem rossz az, sem nem jó,  
Mind csak híjába való!!*

*Kölcsey.*

### **13. Szü őföldem szép határa.**

(Song of Charles Kisfaludy)

*Szülföldem szép határa  
Meglátlak-e valakúra?  
A' hol üllok, a' hol megyek  
Mindenkor csak feléd nézek.*

*Ha madár jön tőle kérde,  
Virúlsz-e még szülőföldem?  
Azt kérdezem a' felhőktől,  
Azt a' suttogó szelektől.*

*De azok nem vigasztalnak,  
Bús szívemmel árván hagynak;  
Árván élek bús szívemmel  
Mint a' fű, melly a' sziklán kel.*

*Kisded hajlék, hol születtem,  
Hej tőled be távol estem;  
Távol estem mint a' levél,  
Mellyet elkap a' forgó szél.*

## Epigramms.

### 14. Anglia.

*Ész, pénz ád mindent, de csak együtt osztanak  
áldást.  
Nép' esze a' törvény, melly nélkül pénze veszélyt  
hoz;  
Míg törvényidnek hódolni fog, Angol! a' pénzed,  
Addig hódol a' pénz neked, 's pénzednek a'  
tenger.*

*Berzsenyi.*

**15. Magyarország' crimere.**

*Szép vagy o hon, bércz völgy változnak gazdag  
öledben,*

*Téridet országos négy folyam' írja szegi;  
Am természetlől mind ez lelketlen ajándék  
Nagygyú csak faid' szent akarata tehet.*

*Vörösmarty.*

## 16. *Kisfaludy.*

*Kisfaludyt ne keresd e' keskeny sírban, o honfi!  
'S a' rövid élet után holtnak örökre ne völd;  
Itt csak elomlandó tetemeit jelelé ki barátai:*

*Fenn van időt múltó szelleme műveiben.*

*Vörösmartny.*

### 17. *Paris.*

*Elete színt 's fényt hord; testrére az égi szivár-  
vány;*

*Mert mint ez napfény' 's vész' közelébe ragyog.*

### 18. London.

*Mint Zeusé, feje Albionnak felhőkbe merül el,  
Néki adózik a' föld: áldozatából e' füst.*

*Wattay.*

# VOCABULARY

TO

## THE SELECTIONS.

### A.

- Aczél*, S., steel.
- Ádáz*, A., furious, vindictive.
- Aether*, S., ether,
- Ág*, S., branch, twig.
- Ágg*, S., an old man.
- Ággat-ni*, V. a., to suspend, fig.  
to adorn (with flowers).
- Ággó*, A. v., anxious.
- Ággkor*, S., old age.
- Ágy*, S., bed.
- Ágyon üt-ni*. V. a., to kill.
- Ágyugolyó*, S., cannon-ball.
- Ágyúztatás*, S., bombarding.
- Ágyváz*, S., phantom.
- Ájak*, S., lip, and lips.
- Ájánl-ani*, V. a., to recommend.
- Akadály*, S., hinderance, impediment.
- Akadályoz-ni*, V. a., to hinder, to prevent.
- Akadályozatlan*, A., unprevented.
- Akkor*, Adv., then,
- Akna*, S., a mine.
- Alacson*, A., low, base.
- Alak*, S., figure, shape.
- Alanlmászás*, S., base creeping.
- Alapít-ani*, V. a., to found,  
*talpkövet alapítani*, to lay  
the stone of foundation.
- Álarcz*, S., mask.
- Áld-ani*. V. a., to bless.
- Áldás*, S., blessing.
- Áldoz-ni*, V. a., to sacrifice;  
*a' nap áldozta*, the setting  
of the sun, sunset.
- Áldozat*, S., sacrifice.
- Áldozó-pap*, S., high priest,  
pontiff.

- Alélni*, V. a., to benum.  
*Aléltan*, Adv., fainting, weak.  
*Alka/matlankodó*, A., trouble-some.  
*Alkonyat*, S., twilight.  
*Alkot-ni*, V. a., to constitute, to form.  
*Alkolás*, S., formation, constitution, fig. creation.  
*Alkudozás*, S., negotiation.  
*Állani*, V. n., to stand; *utját állani*, to obstruct the way.  
*Állandóság*, S., constancy.  
*Állás*, S., position; *állást fog-ni*, to take a position.  
*Állapot*, S., condition, state.  
*Állhatosság*, S., perseverance.  
*Alljas*, Adv., mean, vile.  
*Álmatlanul*, Adv., sleepless.  
*Álmod-ni*, V. a., to dream.  
*Álmodozás*, S., dreaming.  
*Álnok*, S. & A., cunning, a cunning fellow.  
*Alom*, S., litter, nest.  
*Általellenben*, Adv., opposite, (vis à vis).  
*Általenged-ni*, V. a., to deliver, to surrender.  
*Álta/melegült*, A. v., warm, warmed through.  
*Áltat-ni*, V. factit., to deceive, to delude.  
*Álltör-ni*, V. a., to break through.  
*Alvezér*, S., subordinate commander, lieutenant general.  
*Ám!* Int., well!  
*Anyag*, S., stuff.
- Apa*, S., father; plur. *apák*; *apáink*, our ancestors.  
*Ápol-ni*, V. a., to cherish, to foster, to take care of.  
*Aral-ni*, V. a., to gather, to reap.  
*Arcz*, S., face, figure; *arcz iz-zadás*, hard labour, sweat of the face.  
*Ár*, S., flood.  
*Árnyék*, S., shadow.  
*Árok*, S., ditch, trench; bed of a river.  
*Ártalom*, S., noxiousness.  
*Ártás*, S., doing harm.  
*Ártatlanság*, S., innocence.  
*Árva*, A., orphan, fig. forsaken; *árván*, Adv., orphanlike, destitute.  
*Asztal*, S., table, fig. meal.  
*Asszonyosság*, S., lady.  
*Átalkodottság*, S., obstinacy.  
*Átkozni*, V. a., to curse.  
*Átok*, S., a curse, imprecation.  
*Átköt-ni*, V. a., to bind, over; fig. to block up.  
*Áztat-ni*, V. a., to wet, to soak.

## B.

- Báb*, S., a doll.  
*Badeni*, A., of Baden.  
*Báj*, S., charm, S.  
*Bajlódó*, S., a person taking pains or having much trouble.  
*Bajnok*, S., champion.



- Bajnoki*, A., heroic.  
*Bajor*, A., Bavarian, of Bavaria.  
*Bájos*, A., charming.  
*Bájszín*, S., charming figure, charming appearance.  
*Bal*—left; *balra*, to the left, on the left.  
*Baleset*, S., misfortune.  
*Balsors*, S., adverse fate, disaster.  
*Balszerencse*, S., misfortune.  
*Balsam*, S., balsam, fragrancý.  
*Bámül-ni*, V. a., to admire.  
*Bámulatos*, A., admirable.  
*Bánal*, S., sorrow, affliction.  
*Bánt-ani*, V. a., to disturb.  
*Barátság*, S., friendship.  
*Barlang*, S., cavern.  
*Bármelly*, Pr. ind.\*), whichever, whatever.  
*Basa*, S., Bashaw.  
*Bástya*, S., bastion, tower.  
*Bátorság*, S., valour, courage.  
*Be!* Int., oh!  
*Becs*, S., worth, esteem, value.  
*Becsül-ni*, V. a., to honour.  
*Becsület*, S., honour, reputation.  
*Beérkez-ni*, V. m., to arrive (in).  
*Bees-ni*, V. m., to sink, to decay; *beesett*, A., hollow, fallen in.  
*Befolyás*, S., influence.  
*Behatás*, S., impression.  
*Bekerít-eni*, V. a., to surround, to invest (a town).  
*Bélyeg*, S., a sign, mark.  
*Benküzdő*, A. v., inward struggling.  
*Benyom-ni*, V. a., to press (in).  
*Bér*, S., pay, fig. reward.  
*Bércz*, S., mountain, chain of mountains.  
*Berovátkolt*, a., jagged, notched.  
*Besánczol-ni*, V. a., to entrench.  
*Beszállít-ani*, V. a., to convey, to throw (in).  
*Beszéd*, S., speech.  
*Betegség*, S., illness.  
*Belér-ni*, V. n., to enter, to visit, to call upon.  
*Bezáród-ni*, V. m., to close, to shut.  
*Bibor*, S., purple.  
*Bír-ni*, V. a., to possess.  
*Bíral-ni*, *megbíral-ni*, V. a., to judge, to decide.  
*Bírás*, S., possession.  
*Birkoz-ni*, V. m., to wring, to struggle.  
*Bírodalombeli*, A., belonging to the empire.  
*Birtok*, S., possession.  
*Bizodalom*, S., confidence trust; *bizodalmat vetni*, to trust.  
*Bizony*, Adv., surely.  
*Bizonyítás*, S., arguing, demonstration.  
*Bizonytalanság*, S., uncertainty.

\*) Indefinite Pronoun.

- Biztat-ni*, V., fact., to encourage, to comfort.  
*Biztatás*, S., persuasion.  
*Biztos*, A., sure.  
*Biztosítás*, S., assurance.  
*Bizton*, Adv., confidently.  
*Bohóság*, S., farce.  
*Bókol-ni*, V. n., to bow.  
*Boldogító*, Adv., blissful.  
*Boldogtalan*, S., unhappy.  
*Boldogul*, Adv., happy.  
*Boldogság*, S., happiness.  
*Bolondul*, Adv., foolishly.  
*Bolthajtás*, S., arch, vault.  
*Boltozat*, S., vault.  
*Bolyog-ni*, V. n., to wander about.  
*Bolygófény*, S., ignis fatuus, jack with a lantern.  
*Bolyongás*, S., wandering about.  
*Borongó*, A. v., gloomy.  
*Borúl-ni*, V. n., to draw over, to be spread over; *feleg borúl*, it grows cloudy.  
*Borzalmas*, A., shivering, shuddering.  
*Borzalom*, S., shudder, horror.  
*Borzasztólag*, Adv., shuddering, dreadfully.  
*Boszu*, *bosszu*, S., revenge.  
*Boszúlattan*, A., unrevenged.  
*Boszús*, A., vindictive.  
*Bő*, A., sufficient.  
*Bölcs*, S., sage, philosopher; —, A., wise.  
*Bölcselkedő*, S., philosopher, —, A., philosophizing.  
*Bölcsen*, Adv., wisely.  
*Bölcsesség*, S., wisdom.  
*Bölcső*, S., cradle.  
*Bőség*, S., abundance, plenty.  
*Bőven*, Adv., copiously, abundantly.  
*Bű*, S., grief, affliction; *bűnak eredten*, Adv., pining with grief.  
*Buborék*, S., bubble.  
*Búcsúz-ni*, V. m., to take leave.  
*Bujdosó*, S., fugitive.  
*Burkoz-ni*, V. m., to wrap up, to conceal one's self.  
*Bús*, A., gloomy, sad, afflicted.  
*Bűslakod-ni*, V. m., to be sorrowful.  
*Buta*, A., stupid.  
*Buvóhely*, S., place of concealment.  
*Buzdító*, A., encouraging.  
*Buzgó*, A. v., zealous; *buzgón*, Adv., devoutly.  
*Buzogány*, S., a club for fighting.  
*Bükfa*, S., beech; — A., beechen, of beech-wood.  
*Bűn*, S., sin, crime.  
*Bűntetlenség*, S., impunity.  
*Büszke*, A., proud.

### Cs.

- Csábító*, A. v., tempting, alluring.  
*Család*, S., family.

*Csalfa*, A., fallacious, deceitful.  
*Csákó* S., a soldier's cap.  
*Csaknem*, Adv., almost, nearly.  
*Csakugyan*, C., yet, nevertheless.  
*Csapás*, S., blow, misfortune.  
*Csapal*, S., division, part of a regiment.  
*Csapongó*, A. v., rambling about.  
*Csarnok*, S., hall.  
*Császár*, S., emperor.  
*Császári*, A., imperial.  
*Csata*, S., battle.  
*Csatarend*, S., order of battle.  
*Csatáz-ni*, V. n., to have a conflict, to combat.  
*Csatázás*, S., battle, combat.  
*Csatol-ni*, V. a., to join, to combine, to unite.  
*Csatorna*, S., drainage, water-pipe.  
*Csatlog-ni*, V. n., to clatter.  
*Csecsemő*, S., infant.  
*Csekély*, A., little, small.  
*Csendes*, A., quiet, still; *csendesen*, quietly.  
*Cserél-ni*, V. a., to exchange.  
*Cseveg-ni*, V. a., to chatter.  
*Csikó*, S., a foal.  
*Csillag*, S., star.  
*Csillagocska*, S. dim., \*) little star.  
*Csillogó*, A. v., splendid.  
*Csin*, S., beauty.  
*Csinál-ni*, V. a., to make.  
*Csoda*, S., wonder; fig. admiration.

\*) Diminutive Substantive.

*Csókol-ni*, V. a., to kiss.  
*Csont*, S., bone.  
*Csontráz*, S., skeleton.  
*Csoport*, S., multitude, band; *gyűlevész-csoport*, a band flocked together.  
*Csorda*, S., horde.  
*Csuda*, S., wonder.  
*Csodatevő*, A. v., performing miracles (doing wonders).  
*Csúfos*, A., scornful.  
*Csüggedetlen*, A., undaunted.  
*Csűr*, S., barn, corn-loft.

## Cz.

*Czáfol-ni*, V. a., to refute, to disprove.  
*Czél*, S., aim, object.  
*Czélzat*, S., aim, design.  
*Czenk*, S., boy.  
*Cziba*, S., pus (cat).  
*Czímer*, S., title.  
*Czomb*, S., thigh.

## D.

*Daczol-ni*, V. a., to resist, to bid defiance.  
*Dadogás*, S., chattering.  
*Dagály*, S., tumour, fig. haughtiness.  
*Délfelé*, Adv., towards noon, southward.  
*Dér*, S., frost.  
*Derek*, S., body, trunk, rump.  
*Derül-ni*, V. n., to brighten, fig. to revive.  
*Diadal*, S., victory.

*Diadalmas*, A., victorious.  
*Diadalmasan*, Adv., triumphantly.  
*Dicsked-ni*, V. m., to boast.  
*Dicső*, A., glorious.  
*Dicsően*, Adv., gloriously.  
*Dicsőít-eni*, V. a., to glorify.  
*Dicsőség*, S., glory, renown.  
*Díszl-eni*, V. m., to shine, to be decorous.  
*Dobogás*, S., pulsation.  
*Dolgozás*, S., the work.  
*Domb*, S., hill.  
*Dombocska*, S., hillock.  
*Dög*, S., murrain.  
*Dől-ni*, V. n., to fall down, to sink.  
*Dönthetlen*, A., incontestable.  
*Dörgő*, A. v., thundering.  
*Dózsbarát*, S., debauchee, reveller.  
*Dózsölés*, S., debauchery, banqueting.  
*Drágakő*, S., precious stone.  
*Dúl-ni*, V. n., to ravage.  
*Dúló*, A. v., depopulating.  
*Durva*, A., rough, rude.  
*Dús*, A., rich.  
*Düh*, S., rage, fury.  
*Dühösen*, Adv., furiously.

### E.

*Eb*, S., dog.  
*Ébredező*, A. v., awaking, rising.  
*Ébreszt-eni*, V. a., to awaken, fig. to excite.  
*Édeni*, A., paradisiacal.

*Ég*, S., heaven, sky; *égi*, A., heavenly; *égiek*, gods.  
*Ég-ni*, V. n., to burn.  
*Éget-ni*, V. a., to burn.  
*Égő*, A. v., burning.  
*Egybefüggés*, S., connection.  
*Egybevet-ni*, V. a., to compare together.  
*Egyéb*, Pr., anything else.  
*Egyedüli*, A., only; *egyedül*, Adv., lonely, only.  
*Egyenesen*, Adv., straight-along.  
*Egyenellen*, A., disunited.  
*Egyes*, S., a single one, individual.  
*Egyesül-ni*, V. n., to unite.  
*Egyetlen*, A., only.  
*Egyetemi*, A., universal.  
*Egyetérteni*, V., to agree.  
*Egyetértés*, S., unanimity, harmony.  
*Egyetlenegy*, A., only one.  
*Egyiránt*, Adv., equally.  
*Egykoron*, Adv., once, formerly.  
*Egykorú*, A., contemporary.  
*Egymás után*, Adv., one after another.  
*Egyszersmind*, Adv., at the same time, at once.  
*Együtt*, Adv., together.  
*Együttélő*, S., contemporary, coeval.  
*Együttértő*, S. & A., (persons) of the same opinion.  
*Éhség*, S., hunger, famine.

*Éj*, S., night.

*Éjjel*, Adv., by night.

*Ejt-eni*, V. a., to drop, to precipitate; fig. to make, to prepare; *birtokába ejt*, he brings in his possession.

*Ék*, S., ornament, decoration.

*Él-ni*, V. a., to enjoy; *élni*, V. n., to live; *tülni*, to outlive.

*Elakad-ni*, V. n., to stop.

*Elahud-ni*, V. m., to fall asleep; *a tűz elalszik*, the fire goes out or is extinguished.

*Elapad-ni*, V. n., to dry up, to be exhausted.

*Elbelegit-eni*, V. a., to make ill.

*Elborít-ani*, V. a., to overcharge, to overwhelm.

*Elbölcselked-ni*, V. a., to disconcert.

*Elbuk-ni*, V. m., to be overthrown, to fall.

*Elbúsít-ani*, V. a., to sadden; *elbusító*, A. v., saddening, sad.

*Elcsüggedő*, A. v., loosing courage, desponding, despairing.

*É' del-ni*, V. a., enjoy.

*Eldőd*, S., ancestor.

*Elég*, Adv., enough.

*Eléget-ni*, V. a., to burn, to blast.

*Elektromi*, A., electrical.

*Élelem*, S., food.

*Eler-ni*, V. n., to arrive.

*Elérkez-ni*, V. m., to arrive.

*Eleset*, — with affixes: *elestem* *elested*, *eleste*, S., fall; *eleste után*, after his, her or its fall.

*Eleség*, S., food.

*Éleszt-eni*, V. a., to enliven, to enkindle (the flame).

*Életerő*, S., vital power.

*Életnélkül*, Adv., lifelessly.

*Elevenít-eni*, V. a., to vivify, to animate.

*Elevenség*, S., vivacity.

*Elfeledhet-ni*, V. factit., to cause to forget.

*Elfog-ni*, V. a., to catch.

*Elfogad-ni*, V. a., to accept, to adopt.

*Elfordítás*, S., turning away, averting.

*Elgyújt-ani*, V. a., to fire off, to blow up.

*Elhagy-ni*, V. a., to leave behind, to abandon, to forsake.

*Elhagyott*, Adv., forsaken.

*Elhajol-ni*, V. a., (to decline) to decay.

*Elhamvad-ni*, V. n., to be extinguished, fig. to expire, to die.

*Elhangoz-ni*, V. m., to die away (said of the sound).

*Elhány-ni*, V. a., to throw away.

*Elhárit-ani*, V. a., to turn away, to remove, to prevent.

*Elhatározottság*, S., resolution, firmness.

*Elhull-ani*, V. n., to fall, to die away.



- Elhűny-ni*, and *elhűnni*, V. n., to expire, to die.
- Elhajdulás*, S., lamentation, wailing.
- Eljön-ni*, V. n., to arrive.
- Elkap-ni*, V. a., to snap, to catch, to seize.
- Elkeseredés*, S., exasperation.
- Ellankad-ni*, V. n., to faint.
- Ellát-ni*, V. a., to provide for; *ellálva*, provided.
- Ellensél*, S., counterparty, opponent, adversary.
- Ellenhatás*, S., reaction, counter-effect.
- Ellenigyekezet*, S., a contrary endeavour, opposition.
- Ellenkező*, A., opposite, contrary.
- Ellenségi*, A., inimical.
- Ellenséges*, A., hostile, adverse.
- Ellentáll-ani*, V. n., to resist.
- Ellenzés*, S., opposition, dissuasion.
- Elme*, S., mind, disposition.
- Elmélkedés*, S., contemplation, reflection.
- Elmenetel*, S., departure, retreat.
- Elmetszett*, A. v., cut off (being cut off).
- Elmúl-ni*, V. m., to pass (said of the time).
- Elmúlás*, S., decay.
- Elnémül-ni*, V. n., to grow mute, to grow silent.
- Elnyög-ni*, V. a., (to groan away) to get through a sorrowful period of life.
- Elomlandó*, A. v., mortal, futile (things which must perish).
- Elölt-ani*, V. a., to extinguish.
- Elordít-ani magát*, V., to bray.
- Elő*, S., ancestor.
- Előad-ni*, V. a., to report.
- Előbb*, Adv., first.
- Előítélel*, S., prejudice.
- Előkészület*, preparatory work.
- Elöl-ni*, V. a., to extirpate.
- Előnyomul-ni*, V. n., to press forward, to advance.
- Előre*, Adv., forward.
- Előrement*, A. v., preceding.
- Elővívó*, S., those who fight in the front.
- Elpártol-ni*, V. m., to desert (a cause).
- Elpattan-ni*, V. n., to be blown up, to burst asunder.
- Ekrabol-ni*, V. a., to rob, to deprive.
- Elrémul-ni*, V. n., to tremble.
- Elront-ani*, V. a., to destroy.
- Elsötétül-ni*, V. n., to grow dark.
- Elsüllyeszt-eni*, V. a., to sink, to submerge.
- Elszán-ni*, V. n., to resolve (upon).
- Elszántság*, S., resolution.
- Elszór-ni*, V. a., to scatter; *elszórt.*, A. v., scattered.
- Elltakarítás*, S., removal.

- Ellapos-ni*, V. a., to trample (under one's feet).  
*Eltemet-ni*, V. a., to bury.  
*Eltér-ni*, V. n., to have room.  
*Éltető*, A. v., giving and preserving life.  
*Elléved-ni*, V. n., to lose one's way.  
*Eltökél-ni*, V. a. & n., to resolve.  
*Eltölt-eni*, V. a., to consume or to spend (time).  
*Eltűnő*, A. v., passing, disappearing.  
*Ehunatkoz-ni*, V. m., to be tired, to be wearied.  
*Elvád'-ni*, V. n., to part (to take leave).  
*Elvár-ni*, V. a., to expect.  
*Elveszt-eni*, V. a., to lose.  
*Elvet-ni*, V. a., to throw away, to reject.  
*Elvin-ni*, V. a., to take; *az út elvisz*, the way leads.  
*Elvon-ni*, V. a., to withdraw, to take away.  
*Eltajog-ni*, V. a., to pass one's time with noise.  
*Elzár-ni*, V. a., to shut up.  
*Emberi*, A., human; *emberiség*, S., humanity.  
*Emel-ni*, V. a., to raise, to lift up.  
*Emelet*, S., story, floor.  
*Emelked-ni*, V. m., to rise.  
*Emellen*, Adv., raised (as raised).  
*Emészt-eni*, V. a., to consume; *magát emészteni*, to be consumed; *emésztő*, A. v., consuming, devouring.  
*Emlék*, S., memory.  
*Emlékezet*, S., recollection, memory, remembrance.  
*Emléktelen*, A., without a monument, not commemorated.  
*Említ-eni*, V. a., to mention.  
*Emlő*, S., the breast.  
*Enyész-ni*, V. m., to vanish, to disappear.  
*Enyészet*, S., annihilation, destruction.  
*Enyhe*, A., mild.  
*Enyhít-eni*, V. a., to ease, to alleviate, to mitigate.  
*Enyhület*, S., alleviation, relief.  
*Eped-ni*, V. n., to long for.  
*Épen*, Adv., just.  
*Épés*, A., bilious, full of gall, fig. bitter, irreful.  
*Epeszt-eni*, V. a., to vex, to leave one languishing or long-ing for.  
*Épség*, S., integrity (integritas).  
*Épül-ni*, V. n., to be built.  
*Épület*, S., building.  
*ÉR*, S., the vein.  
*ÉR-ni*, V. a., to reach; — V. n., to avail, to be worth.  
*ÉRni, megér-ni*, V. m., to ripen, to grow ripe.  
*ÉR-ni, ráér-ni*, V. n., to have time, to be at leisure.  
*Ércz*, A., of ore.  
*Érdekel-ni*, V. a., to interest, to concern.

*Érdeklő*, A. v., interesting.

*Erdély*, S., Transilvania.

*Érdem*, S., merit.

*Érdemes*, a., worthy, deserving.

*Ered-ni*, V. n., with *nak nek*, to begin; *útnak eredni*, to depart.

*Eredeti*, A., original.

*Ereszt-eni*, V. a., to let loose; *ellenünk ereszté*, he lead against us.

*Érzetlen*, A., unfeeling, apathetic.

*Érintés*, S., contact.

*Erkölc*, S., morals, manner.

*Erőlködés*, S., effort, constraint.

*Erősen*, Adv., strongly, much.

*Erősöd-ni*, V. m., to grow strong.

*Erősség*, S., fort, fortress.

*Érsekújvár*, S., the name of a place (fortress) in Hungary.

*Értelem*, S., intellect, reason.

*Érletlenség*, S., ignorance.

*Érz-eni*, V. m., to be felt, to be tasted.

*Érzék*, S., sense (organ of sensation).

*Érzéketlenség*, S., insensibility.

*Érzelem*, S., feelings (in a subjective meaning).

*Érzelmi*, A., sensible.

*Érzemény*, S., feeling (in an objective meaning, that which is felt.)

*Érzet*, S., feeling (felt).

*Érző*, A. v., feeling, sensible.

*Esdeklő*, S., a person imploring.

*Esdekel-ni*, V. a., to supplicate, to implore.'

*Eseng-ni*, V. n., to implore, to crave.

*Esés*, S., fall.

*Eset*, S., case, accident.

*Ész*, S., reason, intellect, mind.

*Északa*, S., night: *északára kelve*, growing towards night.

*Északi*, A., northern.

*Eszes*, A., intelligent.

*Eszköz*, S., instrument.

*Eszközl-eni*, V. a., to mediate, to promote.

*Etele*, S., Attila.

*Évtized*, S., decennium.

*Ezredes*, S., colonel.

*Ezredév*, S., millennium.

*Ezredévi*, A., millennial, of a thousand years.

*Ezüst*, S., silver.

## F.

*Fagyfal-ni*, V. fact., \*) to cause congelation; *fagyfaló*, A. v., freezing.

*Fájdalom*, S., pain, affliction.

*Fajlatan*, A., lascivious.

*Fajul-ni*, *elfajul-ni*, V. n., to degenerate.

*Fakaszt-ani*, to cause to spring; *könyet fakaszt-ani*, to start tears.

*Falat*, S., a slice of bread.

*Falrontó*, A. v., battering.

*Fanyar*, A., astringent.

\*) Factitive Verb.

- Fáradt*, A. v., tired.  
*Fáradatlan*, A., indefatigable.  
*Fárodozás*, S., exertion.  
*Faragni*, V. a., to carve.  
*Farkas*, S., wolf.  
*Fegyver*, S., arms, weapon.  
*Fegyvertár*, S., arsenal.  
*Fegyvertelen*, A., unarmed.  
*Fehér*, A., white.  
*Fejenként*, Adv., one by one.  
*Fejt-eni*, V. a., to develop.  
*Fekvés*, S., situation condition.  
*Fekvésű*, A., situated, being in a good or bad condition.  
*Fél*, A., half.  
*Felad-ni*, V. a., to give up, fig. to surrender.  
*Felajzott*, A. v., bridled; *felajzott nyíl*, bridled arrow, an arrow ready to be shot off.  
*Feláldoz-ni*, V. a., to sacrifice.  
*Felállít-ani*, V. a., to erect, to place.  
*Felcsillámló*, A. v., glimmering.  
*Feldúl-ni*, V. a., to desolate, to demolish.  
*Feled-ni*, V. a., to forget.  
*Feledtet-ni*, V., fact. to cause to forget.  
*Feleg*, S., cloud.  
*Feléget-ni*, V. a., to burn down.  
*Felejt-eni*, V. a., to forget.  
*Felel-ni*, V. a., to answer.  
*Fetelet*, S., answer.  
*Felemel-ni*, V. a., to elevate, to raise.  
*Felér-ni*, V. a., to reach, to attain.  
*Feleség*, S., wife.  
*Felesküd-ni*, V. m., to take an oath, to swear.  
*Felfal-ni*, V. a., to devour.  
*Felfog-ni*, V. a., to comprehend.  
*Felforgat-ni*, V. a., to overthrow, to overturn.  
*Felhagy-ni*, V. n., to discontinue, to desist., to leave off.  
*Felhő*, S., cloud.  
*Felig*, Adv., half.  
*Felillan-ni*, V. n., to fly up; *a' kupák felillantának*, the cups were flying, the cups were passed round.  
*Felkaczag-ni*, V. n., to burst out into a laugh.  
*Felkelt nemesség*, S., the raised army of the nobility (insurrection).  
*Felkiált-ani*, V. n., to exclaim.  
*Felkölte*, S., getting up, rising.  
*Felköt-ni*, V. a., to tie up, to gird.  
*Felleg*, S., cloud, small cloud.  
*Fellobban-ni*, V. n., to blaze up; *fellobbanó*, blazing up.  
*Fellobbant*, A. v., blazed up. fig. blown up.  
*Felocsúd-ni*, V. m., to recover from stupefaction.  
*Félrelet-ni*, V. a., to put aside, to lay aside.

- Felrobog-ni*, V. n., to approach galloping.
- Felség*, S., majesty.
- Felső*, A., upper.
- Felsőváros*, S., upper-town, (upper part of the town).
- Félszázad*, S., half a century.
- Felszökell-ni*, V., m., to rise hastily (to jump up).
- Fellalál-ni*, V. a., to find, to find out.
- Feltámad-ni*, V. n., to rise.
- Fellarlóztat-ni*, V. fact., to retard, to stop.
- Feltartóztatott*, A. v., prevented, hindered.
- Feltétel*, S., condition.
- Fellüntet-ni*, V. a., to make one's appearance.
- Feltüz-ni* (said of a flag), V., a., to set up, to plant.
- Feltüzel-ni*, V. a., to inflame, to encourage, to animate, to spur.
- Felven-ni*, V. a., to pick up, to take.
- Felvergőd-ni*, V. m.\*) to get up) to approach with labor and trouble.
- Felvilágosít-ani*, V. a., to explain, to bring to light.
- Felvirágoztat-ni*, V. fact., to cause to flourish.
- Felvon-ni*, V. a., to pull up, to bring up.
- Fenn*, Adv., up.
- Fenkiált-ani*, V. n., to shout.
- Fenragyogó*, A. v., highly bright.
- Fenség*, S., sublime, sublimity.
- Fény*, S., glimmer, splendor, shine.
- Fenyeget-ni*, V. a., to threaten, to menace.
- Fenyegető*, A. v., menacing.
- Fényes*, A., bright,
- Fénylő*, A. v., bright, splendid.
- Fenyő*, S., pine-tree; *fenyőíz*, resinous taste.
- Fér-ni*, (with *hoz hez*), V. n., to get at, to come to.
- Féreg*, S., worm.
- Férőkar*, S., manly arm.
- Férfiú*, S., man.
- Fergeteg*, S., shower, tempest, wind-storm.
- Feszesség*, S., stiffness, pedantry.
- Feszülten*, Adv., attentively.
- Fiatal*, Adv., young.
- Fiatalság*, S., youth.
- Figyelem*, S., attention.
- Figyel-ni*, V. a., to attend, to listen.
- Figyelmez-ni*, V. m., to pay attention.
- Fogad-ni*, V. a., to receive.
- Fogadás*, S., vow.
- Fogadó*, S., hôtel.
- Fogasi*, S., (dentax) said of the wolf, because of his voraciousness.

---

\*) Verbum medium.



- Fogoly*, S., captive.  
*Fogság*, S., captivity, prison;  
*fogságba zárni*, to imprison.  
*Fogy-ni*, V. n., decrease, to be diminished.  
*Fogyalkozás*, S., defect.  
*Fogyhatlan*, A., not decreasing, inexhaustible.  
*Fohászkodás*, S., the sigh (sigh of devotedness).  
*Folt*, S., stain, blemish.  
*Földarázs*, S., nest of wasps, a quantity of wasps.  
*Foly-ni*, V. n., to flow, to run;  
*a' viadal foly*, the combat (fight) is fought.  
*Folyam*, S., a stream.  
*Folyás*, S., flow, kennel.  
*Folyóirat*, S., periodical.  
*Folyosó*, S., corridor.  
*Folytat-ni*, V. a., to continue.  
*Folytonos*, A., continuous.  
*Fontol-ni*, V. a., to ponderate.  
*Fordulás*, *fordulat*, S., turn, change.  
*Forgat-ni*, V. a., to turn about, fig. to read in a book.  
*Forgó*, A. v., whirling.  
*Forgósél*, S., whirl-wind.  
*Forma*, S., form.  
*Forog-ni*, V. n., to turn; *szeme, lelke előtt forogni*, (to be before the eyes) to bear in mind; *veszélyben forogni*, to be in danger.  
*Forr-ni*, V. n., to ferment, to Csink, hung. Gram. bubble, to spring from, fig. to rise.  
*Forrás*, S., spring, source.  
*Forró*, A. v., hot, ardent.  
*Fő*, S., head; —, A., principal.  
*Főcancellár*, S., High Chancellor,  
*Fődöz-ni*, V. a., to cover, fig. to protect.  
*Főfegyvertár*, S., head-arsenal.  
*Fő-haditízt*, S., superior officer.  
*Földalatti*, A., subterranean.  
*Földi*, A., earthly, fig. human; —, S., countryman.  
*Főléledés*, S., revival.  
*Fölfüggeszt-eni*, V. a., to suspend, to hang up.  
*Főlibe (föl or fel, up)*, over him.  
*Főljegyez-ni*, V. a., to write down, to specify.  
*Főlkér-ni (a' várat)*, V. a. to demand.  
*Fölver-ni*, V. a., to rouse.  
*Fölvet-ni*, V. a., to throw up, fig. to blow up.  
*Főlvirúl-ni*, V. n., to blossom, to flourish.  
*Fő-vezérség*, S., supreme command.  
*Frisesség*, S., freshness.  
*Fűl-ni*, V. n., to be suffocated.  
*Fúrás*, S., boring; *földalatti fúrás*, a mine.  
*Futár*, S., courier.  
*Futás*, S., run, course, flight.

*Fulkos-ni*, V. n., to run about.  
*Futó-sáncz*, S., trench.  
*Fúv-ni*, V. a., to blow.  
*Fuvalat*, S., breeze, breath.  
*Fül*, S., ear.  
*Fülel-ni*, V. n., to prick up  
the ears.  
*Fülemile*, S., nightingale.  
*Füles*, S., (long-ear) ass.  
*Füresztő*, A. v., bathing,  
*Fürt*, S., curl, lock (of hair).  
*Füst*, S., smoke.  
*Füz-ni*, V. a., to file, to put  
on a string, fig. to range.

## G.

*Gátol-ni*, V. a., to hinder, to  
prevent.  
*Gazda*, S., master, husband-  
man; *gazdácska*, little  
master, dear master.  
*Gazdagít-ani*, V. a., to enrich.  
*Gazdaság*, S., household.  
*Genius*, S., genius.  
*Gép*, S., engine.  
*Gépszerűség*, S., mechanical  
method, like a machine.  
*Gerjedező*, A. v., excited, moved,  
ardent.  
*Gerjelem*, S., agitation of mind,  
excitement, passion (in the  
generic meaning of the word).  
*Gerjeszt-eni*, V. a., to excite.  
*Gólya*, S., the stork.  
*Gólyafészek*, S., nest of a  
stork.

*Gond*, S., care.  
*Gondolat*, S., thought, idea.  
*Gondolkod-ni*, V. m., to think,  
to reflect.  
*Gondolkozás*, S., thinking,  
thought, fig. mind.  
*Gondos*, S. & A., careful, an-  
xious.  
*Gondoskod-ni*, V. m., to care,  
to provide for.  
*Gondoskodás*, S., care, provi-  
dence.  
*Gondsujtott*, A. v., sorrowful.  
*Gonosz*, A., evil, bad, wicked.  
*Gőgösen*, Adv., haughtily.  
*Görbed-ni*, V. n., to bend, fig.  
to submit.

*Gőz*, S., vapour, steam.  
*Gúny*, S., scorn, derision,  
mockery.  
*Gúnyol-ni*, V. a., to deride, to  
mock.

## Gy.

*Gyaláz-ni*, V. a., to dishonour,  
to defame; *meggyalázni*, to  
disgrace.  
*Gyalázatos*, A., shameful, dis-  
graceful.  
*Gyakorol-ni*, V. a., to practise;  
*befolyást gyakorolni*, to have  
influence, to influence.  
*Gyalog ezred*, S., regiment of  
infantry; *lovass ezred*, re-  
giment of cavalry.  
*Gyanú*, S., suspicion.

*Gyanútlan*, A., unsuspected, unsuspecting.

*Gyász kíséret*, S., funeral procession.

*Gyász könny*, S., mourning tear, (tears shed because of mourning.)

*Gyászos*, A., mournful.

*Gyáspad*, S., bier.

*Gyáva*, A., coward, timid.

*Gyertyaláng*, S., flame of a candle.

*Gyilkos*, S., murderer; — A., murderous.

*Gyors*, A., swift, fig. fugitive.

*Gyorsan*, Adv., quickly, speedily.

*Gyökér*, S., root; *gyökeret verni*, to strike root.

*Gyöngé*, A., weak.

*Gyöngeség*, S., weakness, infirmity.

*Gyönyör*, S., delight.

*Gyönyörű*, A., delightful; fig. sweet.

*Győri*, A., of *Győr*, belonging, to *Győr* (a county in Hungary.)

*Gyötrellem*, S., anguish, torment.

*Gyötrő*, A. v., sorrowful, grievous.

*Győztes*, S., victor.

*Gyülekezet*, S., meeting, assembly.

*Gyülekezés*, S., crowd of people, rabble.

*Gyűlöletes*, A., hated, odious.

*Gyümölcs*, S., fruit.

*Gyújt-ani*, V. a., to light (a candle etc.).

## H.

*Hab*, S., a wave.

*Háborgat-ni*, V. a., to disturb, to trouble.

*Háborítatlan*, A., undisturbed.

*Habozás*, S., fluctuation, fig. hesitation.

*Had*, S., troop, troops.

*Hadd*, instead of *hagyjad*, Imperat. of *hagyni*, let

*Hadvész*, S., danger of war; *hadvészülte kép*, the dangers of war setting on their brows.

*Hág-ni*, V. n., to leap, to ascend; *hágtatni*, V. fact., to raise.

*Hagy-ni*, to leave; *abban hagyni*, to leave any thing as it is, to desist.

*Hagymáz*, S., typhus, height of a fever.

*Hagyomány*, S., legacy.

*Hajigál-ni*, V. a., to throw, to cast.

*Hajlék*, S., dwelling, cottage, hut.

*Hajlong-ni*, V. n., to stoop.

*Hajó*, S., ship.

*Hajszál*, S., a hair.

*Hála*, S., thanks.

*Hálaadás*, A., being beholden.

*Halad-ni*, V. n., to advance, to progress; *haladó*, progressing.

- Haladás*, S., progress.  
*Háládóan*, Adv., thankfully.  
*Halál*, S., death; *halálra kacagni magát*, to burst with laughing.  
*Haldokol-ni*, V. n., to die, to be in agony.  
*Haldokló*, A., dying.  
*Halhatatlanság*, S., immortality.  
*Halkufár*, S., fishmonger.  
*Hallhatatlan*, A., unheard.  
*Halmoz-ni*, V. a., to heap.  
*Halom*, S., heap, amassment.  
*Halott*, A. v., dead.  
*Haloványan*, Adv. pale.  
*Hamar*, Adv., soon.  
*Hamu*, *hamv*, S., ashes.  
*Hant*, S., turf, grassplott, fig. ground, land.  
*Hány-ni*, A., to throw.  
*Hanyatl-ani*, V. m., to decline.  
*Hangyabolyi*, A., ant-hill-like (like an ant-hill).  
*Hangyafészek*, S., ant-hill.  
*Hangyasereg*, S., multitude of ants.  
*Harag*, S., anger.  
*Harcz*, S., fight, war, battle, struggle, combat; *a' harcز foly*, the combat is carried on.  
*Harczoló*, S., combatant, struggler.  
*Hárem*, S., harem.  
*Harmat*, S., dew; *harmatcsepp*, dew-drop.  
*Hasít-ani*, V. a., to split, to cleave.  
*Hasonlít-ani*, V. n., to resemble.  
*Hasonkítás*, S., comparison, allegory.  
*Hasonló*, A., similar, like.  
*Hasztalan*, Adv., in vain, fruitlessly.  
*Hát*, Interj., especially used in interrogations.  
*Hát*, S., the back.  
*Hat-ni*, V., intr. to act upon to affect.  
*Hatás*, S., effect.  
*Határ*, S., boundary, fig. country, field.  
*Határidő*, S., term (of time), *határidejű*, A., of a term.  
*Határoz-ni*, V. a., to determine, to resolve.  
*Hátrahagyás*, S., leaving behind.  
*Hátrál-ni*, V. n., to retreat.  
*Hátrálás*, S., retreat.  
*Hátulsó*, A., hindmost.  
*Ház-őrző*, S., house-guard.  
*Hegy*, S., mountain.  
*Hely*, S., place, room.  
*Helyezet*, S., posture, situation.  
*Helyválasztás*, S., the choice of a place, choice of a position.  
*Hergés*, S., a rattling noise in the throat.  
*Hervadás*, S., withering.  
*Hervadatlan*, A., imperishable, not withering.

- Hérosz*, A., heroic, hero-like.  
*Hetedfél*, A., six and a half.  
*Hetyke*, A., haughty.  
*Hév*, S., the heat, ardour, zeal.  
*Hév, hő*, A., hot.  
*Hever-ni*, V. n., to lie.  
*Heverőhely*, S., place of indulgence.  
*Heverész-ni*, V. n., to live an idle life.  
*Heves*, A., hot, *heves venű*, ardent.  
*Hevűlő*, A. v., ardent, fervent.  
*Hiában, hiába* and *hijába*, Adv., in vain, fruitlessly.  
*Hiába való*, A., fruitless, vain.  
*Hidegen*, Adv., coldly, coolly calmly.  
*Hidegülő*, A. v., cooling, abated.  
*Hiendi*, Future of *hin-ni*, to believe.  
*Hint-eni*, V. a., to strew, to sow.  
*Hír*, S., reputation, renown.  
*Hirdet-ni*, V. a., to announce, to celebrate.  
*Hírvétel*, S., intelligence, account.  
*Hít*, S., belief, faith.  
*Hitetlen*, A., perfidious, faithless.  
*Hitvány*, A., insipid, fig. trifling.  
*Hitványság*, S., trifle.  
*Hiven*, Adv., faithfully, confidently.
- Hizelkedés*, S., flattery.  
*Hódol-ni*, V. n., to do homage.  
*Hódítás*, S., conquest.  
*Hófehér*, A., as white as snow.  
*Höld, hold*, S., moon; *holdvilág*, moon-shine; *hold' éjjele*, S., moon-night.  
*Homály*, S., darkness, obscurity, gloom; *homályba tenni*, to obscure.  
*Homlok*, S., forehead.  
*Honfi*, S., patriot.  
*Honn*, Adv., at home.  
*Hord-ani*, V. a., to carry.  
*Hordoz-ni*, V. a., to bear, to carry.  
*Horgas*, A., crooked, having a hook: *horgas kard*, falchion.  
*Hosszas*, A., long.  
*Hölgy*, S., lady, fig. wife.  
*Hörgés*, S., rattling noise.  
*Hős*, A., heroic.  
*Hull-ani*, V., to fall, to fall off.  
*Hullás*, S., fall, decay.  
*Húny-ni, szemet húny-ni*, V. a., tho shut the eyes.  
*Húr*, S., string (for a musical instrument).  
*Huszárság*, S., hussars.  
*Húz-ni*, V. a., to draw, to pull; *veszedelmet húzni*, to bring danger.  
*Hű*, A., faithful.  
*Hűl-ni, elhűlni*, V. n., to grow cool.  
*Hüves*, A., cool.



## I.

*Ide*, Adv., here to; *ide's tova*, here and there, to and fro.  
*Ideg*, S., nerv.  
*Időjárás*, S., weather.  
*Időpont*, S., epoch.  
*Időprofétia*, S., the weather spy.  
*Időszak*, S., period.  
*Igaz*, A., true.  
*Igazgat-ni*, V., to direct.  
*Igazgatás*, S., direction.  
*Igazlalan*, A., untrue, unjust.  
*Igér-ni*, V. a., to promise.  
*Igéret*, S., promise, S.; *igéret, föld*, the land of promise.  
*Igérő*, A. v., promising.  
*Igy*, C., so, thus.  
*Igyekez-ni*, V. m., to endeavour, to attempt.  
*Igyekezet*, S., endeavour, exertion.  
*Ijedtség*, S., fright.  
*Illanás*, S., disappearing and reappearing.  
*Illat*, S., odour, fragrancy.  
*Illatos*, A., fragrant,  
*Ill-eni*, V. m., to become, to fit.  
*Illetés*, S., contact; *illetésre találni*, to come in contact.  
*Illetlen*, A., untouched; — unfit, indecent.  
*Illetőd-ni*, V. m., to be moved, to be touched.  
*Ilyedl*, (used with the possessive affixes) S., being frightened, fright.  
*Im*, *imhol*, Int., behold.

*Imádság*, S., prayer.  
*In*, S., muscle, fig. limb.  
*Indúl-ni*, V. n., to set out, to march, to decamp.  
*Indulás*, S., decamping, departing.  
*Indulat*, S., disposition of mind, passion (passio).  
*Indulatú*, A., having a certain disposition of mind.  
*Induló*, S., march; *indulót fuvatni*, to sound the march.  
*Indult*, *veszni indult*, to come to ruin, to get lost, to be left to ruin.  
*Ingerl-eni*, V. a., to excite.  
*Ingovany*, S., marsh, morass.  
*Inség*, S., need, misery, distress,  
*Int-eni*, V. n., to beckon.  
*Intéz-ni*, V. n., to direct.  
*Irámol-ni*, V. a., to run.  
*Irány*, S., direction.  
*Iránytű*, S., compass-needle.  
*Irás*, S., writing, scriptures.  
*Irat*, S., writ, writing.  
*Irgalom*, S., mercy.  
*Irgyel-ni*, V. a., to envy.  
*Irigylés*, S., envy.  
*Író*, S., writer, author.  
*Irtóztató*, A., horrible, dreadful.  
*Ismér-ni*, V. a., to know (anybody).  
*Ismeretség*, S., acquaintance.  
*Ismersz-eni*, V. m., to be known, to be distinguishable.  
*Ismét*, Adv., again.  
*Iszák*, S., haver-sack, knapsack.

*Ital*, S., drink; *égiital*, 'nectar.

*Ítélt-ni*, V. a., to judge.

*Ítélet*, S., judgement.

*Ittas*, A., intoxicated.

*Iz*, S., times, with numerals or  
Adjectives — *több ízben*,  
many times, more times.

*Izellenség*, S., tastelessness.

*Izlés*, S., taste.

*Izlésű*, of taste; *szép izlésű*, of  
a fine taste.

*Izzad-ni*, to sweat, to perspire  
fig. to work hard.

*Izzadás*, S., sweating, fig. la-  
bour.

## J.

*Jaj*, S., lamentation; *jajdul-ni*,  
V. n., to cry, to lament.

*Jámbor*, A., pious.

*Jámborság*, S., piety, conten-  
dedness.

*Jancsár*, S., janizary.

*Járatlan*, A., impassable.

*Járom*, S., yoke.

*Járul-ni*, V. n., to approach.  
to accede, to have access.

*Játszi*, A., playful, merry.

*Javaslt-ani*, to advise.

*Jel*, S., sign, signal.

*Jelelt-ni*, V. a., to point out, to  
indicate.

*Jelenet*, S., phenomenon, appa-  
rition.

*Jetenlél*, S., present, present  
time.

*Jelent-eni*, V. a., to announce,  
to signify.

*Jelenvaló*, S., present.

*Jeles*, A., eminent, distin-  
guished; — S., an eminent  
man.

*Jobb*, instead of *jobb kéz*, right  
hand.

*Jobbra*, Adv., to and on the  
right.

*Jogosított*, A. v., entitled.

*Jókor*, Adv., in time, in good  
time.

*Jótétemény* S., benefit.

*Jótét*, S., benefit.

*Jótévő*, A. v., beneficial.

*Józan*, A., sober.

*Józanon*, Adv., with sobriety.

*Jötté*, S., arrival.

*Jövendő*, S. & A., future.

*Jövendőlt-ni*, V. a., to pro-  
gnosticate.

*Jövevény*, A. & S., arriving,  
stranger.

*Jövő*, A. v., future.

*Juh*, S., sheep, ewe.

*Juhász*, S., shepherd.

*Jut-ni*, V. n., to get (in, to).

*Jutalmaz-ni*, *megjutalmaz-ni*,  
V. a., to remunerate, to re-  
ward.

*Jus*, S., right.

## K.

*Kaczag-ni*, V. a., to laugh, to  
mock any one.

- Kakas-viadal*, S., cockfight.  
*Kalaus*, S., guide.  
*Kalyba*, S., hut.  
*Kandúr*, S., tom (he cat).  
*Kapaszkod-ni*, V. m., to clasp, to cling.  
*Kapkod-ni*, V. a., to snatch, to grasp.  
*Kapu*, S., gate.  
*Kár*, S., damage.  
*Kar*, S., arm.  
*Karczolás*, S., scretch.  
*Kártyavár*, S., castle built of cards.  
*Kastély*, S., castle.  
*Kátyu*, S., mire, pool.  
*Kebel*, S., bosom.  
*Kedély*, S., mind, humor.  
*Kedvel-ni*, V. a., to like, to favour.  
*Kedvencz*, S., favourite.  
*Kedvetlenség*, S., vexation.  
*Kedvtetés*, S., delight, pleasure.  
*Kedvtelve*, Adv., with delight, with pleasure.  
*Kegyelem*, S., grace.  
*Kéklő*, (*kékellő*), A. v., bluish.  
*Kel-ni*, and *kél-ni*, V. n., to rise, fig. to grow.  
*Kelletlenül*, Adv., forced.  
*Kémény*, S., chimney-pot.  
*Kendő*, S., handkerchief.  
*Kénlelen*, *kénytelen*, A., obliged, compelled.  
*Kény*, S., humor, arbitrariness.  
*Kép*, S., countenance, picture, image.  
*Képes*, A., able.  
*Képzél-ni*, V. a., to think.  
*Képzélet*, S., imagination, thought.  
*Képzeményes*, A., imaginary.  
*Képzet*, S., image, fig. representation.  
*Kérd-eni*, V. a., to ask.  
*Kerekes*, A., having wheels; *kerekes alkotmány*, wheel-work.  
*Kérés*, S., petition.  
*Keresgélés*, S., frequent searching.  
*Keresztút*, S., cross-way.  
*Kering-eni*, V. n., to move in a circular motion, to course.  
*Kérkedékeny*, A. v., boasting.  
*Kérlelhetlenül*, Adv., inexorable.  
*Kerül-ni*, (with *ba* or *be*), V. n., to cost, to require.  
*Kerül-ni*, V. a., to avoid; *kézbe kerülni*, to fall into any one's hands.  
*Keserű*, A., bitter.  
*Keserűen*, Adv., bitterly, grieved (with grief).  
*Keserv*, S., sorrow, grief.  
*Keserves*, A., bitter, tiresome.  
*Keskeny*, A., narrow.  
*Késlettel-ni*, V. a., to delay.  
*Készlet-ni*, V. fact., to compel.  
*Készület*, S., preparation.  
*Készülő*, A. v., preparing.  
*Kéértelműség*, S., duplicity.  
*Kétes*, A., doubtful, uncertain.  
*Kétked-ni*, V. m., to doubt.  
*Kétkedés*, S., doubt, hesitation.

- Kétség*, S., despair; *kétségbe esni*, to despair.  
*Kétségbeesés*, S., despair.  
*Kettőztet-ni*, V. a., to double.  
*Kettős*, A., double.  
*Kevély*, A., proud.  
*Kevélyen*, Adv., proudly.  
*Kevésbbé*, Adv., least.  
*Kezd-eni*, V. a., to begin, to commence.  
*Kezdet*, S., beginning.  
*Kezdő*, A. v., beginning, — S., beginner.  
*Kezdőd-ni*, V. m., to be beginning.  
*Kezéhez venni*, to take possession.  
*Kézirat*, S., manuscript.  
*Kiáll-ani*, V. n., to suffer, to undergo, to endure.  
*Kiált-ani*, V. n., to cry, to hollow.  
*Kibékítő*, S., reconciler.  
*Kicsapás*, S., sally.  
*Kicsapongó*, A. v., licentious, dissolute.  
*Kicsinység*, S., trifle.  
*Kidőlt*, A. v., fallen, dead.  
*Kielégítő*, A. v., satisfactory.  
*Kiemelked-ni*, V. m., to rise.  
*Kies*, A., pleasant, beautiful.  
*Kietlen*, A., desolate.  
*Kifejlés*, S., development, culture of the mind.  
*Kigerjedez-ni*, V. n., to burst forth.  
*Kihág-ni*, V. n., to ascend, to scale.  
*Kihalt*, A. v., (died away) extinguished.  
*Kiherg-eni a' lelkét*, to expire.  
*Kihull-ani*, V. n., to drop (out of or from).  
*Kiirt-ani*, V. a., to extirpate.  
*Kikél-ni*, V. n., to arise (out of) fig. to be delivered.  
*Kikerül-ni*, V. a., to avoid.  
*Kilobbanó*, A. v., blazing.  
*Kimér-ni*, V. a., to measure.  
*Kimerilhetetlen*, A., inexhaustible.  
*Kín*, S., pain.  
*Kínálkozó*, A. v., offering.  
*Kincs*, S., treasure.  
*Kinevet-ni*, V. a., to laugh at, to deride.  
*Kinjel*, S., sign of pain.  
*Kínos*, A., painful; *kinosan*, Adv., painfully.  
*Kinoz-ni*, to afflict, to plague.  
*Kínzó*, A. v., painful, giving pain.  
*Kiömöl-ni*, V. m., to pour out, to ease, to find sympathy.  
*Kipattan-ni*, V. n., to break forth, break out.  
*Kipilanta-ni*, V. n., to look out.  
*Királyi*, A., kingly, royal.  
*Kiragad-ni*, V. a., to extort, to wrest from, to take away.  
*Kirohan-ni*, V. n., to sally out.  
*Kisdéd*, A., small, fig. diminished.  
*Kisebbit-eni*, V. a., to lessen.  
*Kísér-ni*, V. a., to attend, accompany.

- Kiséret*, S., attendance.  
*Kiséző*, S., companion, attendance.  
*Kisértet*, S., spectre, ghost.  
*Kisüttet-ni*, V. act., to fire off.  
*Kiszélesít-eni*, V. a., to enlarge to widen.  
*Kitér-ni*, V. n., to desert (a path).  
*Kitetszen-ni*, V. m., to be conspicuous, to excel.  
*Kitűnő*, A. v., distinguished.  
*Kitűntet-ni*, V., fact to distinguish (to make being distinguished).  
*Kiütés*, S., sally, eruption, breaking out.  
*Kiüt-ni*, V. n., to break out, to sally.  
*Kivág-ni magát*, to disembarrass one's self.  
*Kivált*, Adv., especially.  
*Kivetkeztet-ni*, V. fact., to undress, to divest, fig. to free.  
*Kivetőd-ni*, V. m., to be thrown out.  
*Kívív-ni*, V. a., (to fight out) to gain (the victory).  
*Kivont*, A. v., drawn.  
*Kocsis*, S., coach-man.  
*Kolcsag*, *kócsag*, S., a plume of heron's feathers.  
*Komáromi*, A., of Komorn at Komorn.  
*Komoly*, A., serious.  
*Komolyság*, S., seriousness.  
*Komondor*, S., (name of a dog) bull dog (mordax).  
*Komor*, A., gloomy, sad.  
*Koponya*, S., skull.  
*Koporsó*, S., coffin, fig. grave.  
*Kor*, S., age.  
*Kora*, A., early; *korán*, Adv., early; *koránsem*, Adv., not at all.  
*Korcs*, S., deformity, monstrosity.  
*Kórház*, S., hospital.  
*Korlát*, S., barriers.  
*Kormányzás*, S., governing, leading.  
*Koszorú*, S., wreath, garland fig. circle (of eminent men).  
*Kődarab*, S., piece of a stone.  
*Köd*, S., fog.  
*Kőfal*, S., wall.  
*Kökény*, S., sloe-tree.  
*Költött*, A. v., fictitious, forged, invented.  
*Költözellen*, Adv., wandered.  
*Kölyök*, S., young one (young animal).  
*Köntös*, S., raiment, coat, fur-coat.  
*Köny*, *könyű*, S., tear.  
*Köncsepp*, S., tear.  
*Könyelmű*, A., fickle.  
*Könyelműleg*, Adv. wantonly.  
*Könyelműség*, S., levity.  
*Könyezellen*, A., tearless.  
*Könnyít-eni*, V. a., to facilitate.  
*Könyörgés*, S., praying, prayer, fig. craving (for mercy).  
*Kör*, S., circle, sphere.



- Környékez-ni*, V. a., to surround.
- Környez-ni*, V. a., to surround.
- Köröm*, S., claw.
- Köröskörül*, Adv., roundabout.
- Körülkerít-eni*, V. a., to surround, to encompass.
- Körülmény*, S., circumstance.
- Kőszikla*, S., rock.
- Köszönt-eni*, V. a., to greet.
- Követ*, A., fat.
- Követ-ni*, V. a., to follow.
- Következ-ni*, V. m., to follow.
- Következés*, S., consequence, result.
- Követő*, S., follower.
- Kövezet*, S., pavement.
- Kövül-ni*, V., to turn into stone, to be petrified.
- Köz*, A., common.
- Köz*, S., space; *ezen közben*, mean-while, in the mean time.
- Közelebbi*, A., recent, (lately happened).
- Közelget-ni, közelít-eni*, V. n., to approach.
- Közép*, S., middle.
- Középszer*, S., middleway (mediocrity).
- Közigazgatás*, S., public administration.
- Közincstár*, S., common treasury.
- Közönség*, S., public.
- Közönséges*, A., common public.
- Közönségesen*, Adv., commonly, publicly.
- Község*, S., commons.
- Kulcs*, S., key.
- Kupa*, S., a can, winecup.
- Kutya*, S., dog.
- Kutyabőr*, S., dogskin.
- Küldetés*, S., mission.
- Külömbség*, S., difference.
- Különködő*, A. & S., a strange fellow.
- Különös*, A., extraordinary.
- Kürthang*, S., sound of the bugle-horn.
- Külső*, A., exterior.
- Küszöb*, S., threshold, fig. door.
- Küzdés*, S., struggle.

## L.

- Láb*, S., foot, fig. leg.
- Lak*, S., home, dwelling.
- Lakot-ni*, V. n., to atone for, to expiate.
- Lakó*, S., inhabitant.
- Lakoma*, S., feast.
- Lakoz-ni*, V. m., to dwell.
- Lánczor*, S., a linked (connected) series.
- Láng*, S., flame.
- Lángéremény*, S., ardent feeling.
- Lángész*, S., genius.
- Lánglélek*, S., (inflamed) ardent mind.
- Lángelkű*, A., ardent (of an ardent mind).

- Lángszem*, S., sparkling eye.  
*Lángú*, A., sparkling, flaming, fig. glancing.  
*Lángzó*, A. v., ardent.  
*Lankadatlan*, A., unwearied.  
*Lankadt*, A. v., feeble, fainting.  
*Lankaszt-ani*, V. a., to weaken.  
*Lant*, S., Lyre.  
*Lárma*, S., noise, alarm.  
*Lassankint*, Adv., in time, slowly, by degrees.  
*Lassú*, A., slow.  
*Látás*, S., sight.  
*Látható*, A. v., visible.  
*Látogat-ni*, *meglátogatni*, V. n., to pay a visit.  
*Lázadás*, S., sedition.  
*Lebeg-ni*, V. n., to hover.  
*Lebegésű*, A., wawing, hovering, rising.  
*Lebegtet-ni*, V., fact. to wave, to clap (the wings).  
*Ledőf-ni*, V. a., to stab, to kill.  
*Ledönt-eni*, V. a., to prostrate.  
*Leereszked-ni*, V. m., to humble, to condescend.  
*Leereszkedés*, S., condescension.  
*Légállítvány*, S., void propositions.  
*Legelől*, Adv., foremost.  
*Legottan*, Adv., instantly.  
*Légy*, S., fly.  
*Lehel-ni*, V. n., to breathe, to exhale.  
*Lehet*, V. n., can be, to be possible.  
*Lehetetlen*, A., impossible.  
*Lehetetlenség*, S., impossibility.  
*Lehetséges*, A., possible.  
*Leirhatatlan*, A., indescribable.  
*Lejlős*, A., declivous.  
*Lekötelez-ni*, V. a., to oblige.  
*Lekötötten*, Adv., fettered, bound.  
*Lel-ni*, V. a., to find.  
*Lélek*, S., soul, mind, courage.  
*Lélekszorogató*, A. v., restraining, oppressing the mind.  
*Lelkiesméret*, S., conscienciousness, conscience.  
*Lelkes*, A., animate, courageous.  
*Lelkesedés*, S., animation, courage.  
*Lelkellen*, A., inanimate,  
*Leng-eni*, V. n., to move on hovering.  
*Lengés*, S., wawing, hovering.  
*Lenyom-ni*, to oppress; *lenyomó*, A. v., oppressing.  
*Lenyugod ni*, V. m., to go to repose, to die.  
*Leomol-ni*, V. n., to sink down.  
*Lep-ni*, *meglepní*, V. a., to surprise.  
*Lép-ni*, V. n., to step.  
*Lépcső*, S., step, degree.  
*Lepke*, S., butterfly.  
*Lépt*, *lépés*, S., pace, step.  
*Léptet-ni*, V., fact. to cause one to go in pace.  
*Les*, S., ambush.

*Lesujtó*, A. v., dejecting, casting down.

*Leszáll-ani*, to sink, to set; to descend, to get out (of a carriage.)

*Leszakad-ni*, V. n., to sink.

*Lét*, S., being.

*Leten-ni*, V. a., to deposit.

*Letép-ni*, V. a., to tear off.

*Letöröl-ni* (*letörtöm*), V. a., to wipe off. —

*Letörött*, A. v., broken.

*Leugráló*, A. v., jumping down, (rushing after).

*Levág-ni*, V. a., to cut down, to put to sword.

*Lever-ni*, V. a., to strike down, to beat down, fig. to discourage, to deject.

*Leverő*, A. v., crushing.

*Lezúg-ni*, v. n., to pass with a noise, fig. to disappear.

*Lidércz*, S., ignis fatuus, jack with a lantern.

*Liheg-ni*, V. n., to pant.

*Liliom*, S., lily

*Literator*, S., literary man.

*Lobog-ni*, V. n., (said of the flag) to be displayed.

*Lobogó*, A. v., waving, flourishing (flag).

*Lom*, S., luggage, lumber.

*Lovas*, S., soldier on horse-back.

*Lovasság*, S., cavalry.

*Lovászmester*, S., riding master.

*Lő-ni*, V. a., to shoot, to discharge.

*Lőpor*, S., gunpowder.

*Lövés*, S., shot; *lövés találja*, he receives a shot *lövet-ni*, pass., to be shot at; — factit., to let shoot or fire at.

*Lövöldöz-ni*, V. a., to shoot, to bombard.

## M.

*Macska*, S., cat.

*Maczkó*, S., name used for a bear (bruin).

*Mag*, S., seed.

*Magához jőni*, to recover.

*Magány*, S., solitude, loneliness.

*Magasztal-ni*, V. a., to extol.

*Magzat*, S., descendant, son.

*Maiglan*, Adv., until this day.

*Majdan*, Adv., once.

*Majom*, S., ape, monkey.

*Mámorbírtá*, A. v., possessed with intoxication, intoxicated.

*Mámoros*, A., intoxicated.

*Maradandóság*, S., duration, continuance.

*Maradék*, S., descendant.

*Maradoz-ni*, V. n., to remain behind.

*Marasztal-ni*, V. fact., to be retained.

*Markgróf*, S., Margrave.

*Maroknyi*, A., handful.

*Márt-ani*, V., a to dip.

*Márvány*, S., marble.

*Mása, mázsa* S., a hundred weight.

- Másik*, Pr. ind., another.  
*Másnap*, Adv., next day.  
*Mászhatlan*, A., impassable.  
*Mátyás*, S., Matthew.  
*Medve*, S., bear.  
*Medvetáncz*, S., dancing of a bear.  
*Megad-ni (magát)*, V. a., to surrender.  
*Megáll-ni*, V. n., to stop, to stand, to go through (danger).  
*Megátalkodott*, A. v., obdurate, fig. obstinate.  
*Megátalkottság*, S., obstinacy.  
*Megbánt-ani*, V., a to offend.  
*Megbánás*, S., repentance.  
*Megbékül-ni*, V. n., to be reconciled.  
*Megbocsát-ani*, V. a., to forgive, to pardon.  
*Megcsíp-ni*, V. a., to pinch; á *dér megcsíp*, the frost bites.  
*Megcsókol-ni*, V. a., to kiss.  
*Megdöbbent-eni*, V. n., to be embarrassed.  
*Megdördül-ni*, V. n., to begin roaring, thundering.  
*Megelégedés*, S., satisfaction, contentedness; *magával való megelégedés*, self-contentedness.  
*Megér-ni (valamivel)*, V. n., to have enough.  
*Megérkeztökkel*, *megérkezett*, having arrived.  
*Megerlel-ni*, V. a., to mature, to bring to maturity.  
*Megfoghatatlan*, A., incomprehensible.  
*Megfoqy-ni*, V. a., to be diminished.  
*Megfojt-ani*, V. a., to suffocate.  
*Meggyúl-ni*, V. n., to catch fire.  
*Meghág-ni*, V. a., to ascend, to mount.  
*Meghágás*, S., ascending, scaling.  
*Meghalad-ni*, V. a., to amount; *hetven évet meghaladott ősz*, the old man who had lived 70 years.  
*Meghatároz-ni*, V. a., to determine, to resolve.  
*Megígér-ni*, V. a., to promise.  
*Megjavít-ani*, V. a., to correct.  
*Megjelen-ni*, V. a., to appear.  
*Megküzd-eni*, V. n., to struggle, to combat.  
*Megmaradás*, S., preservation.  
*Mególtalmaz-ni*, V. a., to protect.  
*Megoszt-ani*, V. a., to divide, to share, fig. to communicate.  
*Megóv-ni*, V. a., to protect, to preserve.  
*Megöl-ni*, V. a., to kill.  
*Megölel-ni*, V. a., to embrace, fig. to seize.  
*Megölés*, S., murder, death.  
*Megörölni*, *megörül-eni*, V. a., to grind to pieces, fig. to gnaw through, to eat (said of the worms).  
*Megpillant-ani*, V. a., to perceive, to see.

- Megragad-ni*, V. a., to seize.
- Megrak-ni*, V. a., to load; *megrakott*, burdened.
- Megrémült*, A. v., alarmed, struck with terror.
- Megrendül-ni*, V. n., to tremble, to shake, to quake.
- Megrepesztett*, A. v., burst (bursted).
- Megrongál-ni*, V. a., to damage.
- Megsebesít-eni*, V. a., to wound.
- Megsüllyed-ni*, V. n., to sink.
- Megsirat-ni*, V. a., to deplore, to weep.
- Megsüllyed-ni*, V. n., to sink.
- Megszállás*, S., siege.
- Megszeg-ni*, V. a., to cut, fig. to violate (a law)
- Megszólat-ni*, V. n., to begin to speak.
- Megszükülés*, S., want, scarcity.
- Megszűn-ni*, V. n., to cease, to desist.
- Megtámad-ni*, V. a., to assault.
- Megtámadás*, S., assault, attack, aggression.
- Megtartó*, S, preserver, saviour.
- Megtér ni*, V. n., to return.
- Megújít-ani*, V. a., to renew, to refresh.
- Megún-ni*, V. a., to be tired of any thing, to be wearied.
- Megüleped-ni*, V. m., to settle, to rest.
- Megütköz-ni*, V. m., to be surprised; *megütközten*, Adv., surprised.
- Megvagy*, thou art; — elliptically instead of thou art caught.
- Megválasztás*, S., selection, choice.
- Megváltoz-ni*, V. m., to change,
- Megvásárl-ani*, V. a., to purchase.
- Megvéd-ni*, V. a., to defend, fig. to save.
- Megvet-ni*, V. a., to despise.
- Megvétél*, S., taking, conquest.
- Megvétet-ni*, passive voice of *megvenni*, to be taken.
- Megvizsgál-ni*, V. a., to examine.
- Megzúz-ni*, V. a., to crush.
- Megzsibbaszt-ani*, V. a., to benumb.
- Méhdongás*, S., humming of the bees.
- Méla*, A., melancholy, gloomy.
- Meleged-ni*, V. m., to grow warm, fig. to favour.
- Mell*, S., chest, fig. bosom, heart.
- Meltyitek*, Pr. with possessive affixes of the 2<sup>d</sup> Pers. plur., which of you.
- Méltányol-ni*, V. a., to estimate, to value.
- Méltat-ni*, V. a., to estimate, to deign to vouchsafe.
- Méltó*, A., worthy, deserving.
- Méltóság*, S., dignity.
- Méltóságos*, A., grave, solemn.



- Mély*, A., deep; *mélység* S., depth, *mélységű*, A., of (a) depth.
- Menedék*, S., asylum.
- Meneked-ni*, V. m., to save one's life, to escape.
- Menekvés*, S., safety, escape.
- Menetel*, S., course.
- Ment-eni*, V. a., to save.
- Mentében*, on his way, along.
- Mentés*, S., deliverance, rescue.
- Mentség*, S., excuse, apology.
- Menny*, S., heaven; *mennydörgés*, thunder; *mennykő*, thunderbolt.
- Menyegző*, S., wedding.
- Mér-ni*, V. a., to measure.
- Mer-ni*, V. a., to venture, to have courage.
- Meredek*, A., steep.
- Méreg*, S., poison.
- Merény*, S., hazardous enterprise.
- Merész*, A., bold.
- Merre*, Adv., where to, to what place, to which side.
- Merően*, Adv., benumbed.
- Merről*, Adv., from which side.
- Mérték*, S., measure, degree.
- Merül*, *elmerül-ni*, V. n., to be submersed.
- Metsz-eni*, V. a., to cut; *metsző* cutting; *metszőösvény*, — cross way.
- Méz*, S., honey.
- Midőn*, C., when.
- Mignem*, Adv., until.
- Miként*, Adv., how.
- Mikoron*, Adv., when.
- Mímel-ni*, V. a., to imitate.
- Mindaddig*, Adv., as far, as long.
- Mindenfelé*, Adv., everywhere.
- Mindennapi*, A., daily, fig. common.
- Mindennapiság*, S., daily, ordinary life.
- Mindenütt*, Adv., everywhere.
- Mióta*, Adv., since.
- Mű*, *mű*, S., work.
- Mivelődés*, S., (culture) education.
- Mód*, S., manner.
- Mohács*, S., Mohács, a place in Hungary.
- Mohácsi*, A., of Mohács, at Mohács.
- Mohón*, Adv., hastily.
- Mordúl*, Adv., spitefully.
- Morog-ni*, V. n., to grumble.
- Mosárágyu*, S., mortar piece.
- Mosolygás*, S., smile.
- Mosolyog-ni*, V. n., to smile.
- Mozdúl-ni*, V. n., to move, *közelebb mozdulni*, to approach.
- Mozdulat*, S., movement, impulse.
- Mozgás*, S., motion.
- Mozgató*, A. v., moving.
- Mozog-ni*, V. n., to move.
- Műl-ni*, V. m., to pass, to pass away; *bátorságán múlik*, his courage fails him.
- Mulaszt-ani*, V. a., to neglect.
- Mulat-ni*, V. n., to stay, to sport.

*Mulatozás*, S. amusement.  
*Múlólag*, Adv. c, ceasingly.  
*Múlt*, S., past.  
*Munkáskör*, S., sphere of activity.  
*Mű*, S., work.  
*Művész*, S., artist.

## N.

*Nádor*, and *Nádor-Ispány*, S., Count Palatine (Stadholder, vice gerent of Hungary.)  
*Nagybecsű*, A., of high value, valuable, worthy.  
*Nagyít-ni*, V. a, to augment.  
*Nagyítócső*, S., microscope.  
*Nagyok*, S., men of a highrank,  
*Nagyol-ni*, V. a., to consider anything being to much  
*Nagyravágyás*, S., ambition;  
*nagyravágyó*, ambitious.  
*Nagyra-vágy-ni*, V. n., to be ambitious.  
*Nagyszerű*, A., grand.  
*Nagyúr*, S., Sultan.  
*Nagyvezér*, S., grand-vizier.  
*Nándor*, S., Belgrade.  
*Napkelet*, S., eastern country.  
*Nehézkes*, A., heavy.  
*Nehézség*, S., weight, fig. difficulty.  
*Nem*, S., gender, sex.  
*Némán*, Adv., mute.  
*Némelly*, Pr. a., Some.  
*Nemes*, S., noble-man; — A.,

noble.

Csink, hung. Gram.

*Nemtelen*, A., ignoble, base.  
*Nemz-eni*, V. a., to beget, to breed.  
*Nemzetség*, S., generation, nationality.  
*Népesség*, S., impopulation.  
*Netalán*, Adv, that not, lest.  
*Neveked-ni*, V. m., to increase,  
*Nevel-ni*, V. a., to increase, to educate.  
*Nevet-ni*, V. a., to laugh.  
*Nevetséges*, A., ridiculous.  
*Nevezetes*, A., remarkable, important.  
*Nézeget-ni*, V. freq.\*) to inspect, to view.  
*Nézet*, S., view.  
*Nő*, S., female, woman, wife.  
*Nő-ni*, V. n, to increase.  
*Nőtt*, S., increase, augmentation.  
*Nőveszt-eni*, V. a., to produce.

## Ny.

*Nyáj*, S., the flock.  
*Nyájas*, A., polite, pleasant.  
*Nyári*, A, summer, of the summer.  
*Nyelvművész*, S., reformer of the language.  
*Nyelvújítás*, S., reformation of the language.  
*Nyereg*, S., saddle.  
*Nyíl*, S., arrow.

\*) frequentative Verb.

- Nyílás*, S., cleft.  
*Nyilatkoz-ni*, V. m., to express one's self, to declare.  
*Nyílt*, A. v., open.  
*Nyilván*, A., public, manifest.  
*Nyit-ni*, V. a., to open.  
*Nyitott*, A. v., open, *nyitott rés*, the breach battered.  
*Nyom*, S., trace, vestige; *nyomában valakinek*, at any one's heels.  
*Nyomasztó*, A. v., oppressing, afflicting.  
*Nyomdok*, S., trace, fig. path.  
*Nyomorú*, A., miserable.  
*Nyomorúság*, S., misery, poverty.  
*Nyomorúlt*, A. v., distressed.  
*Nyomtató*, S., printer.  
*Nyomtatott*, A. v., printed.  
*Nyög ni*, V. n., to sigh.  
*Nyugalom*, S., repose, rest, quietude.  
*Nyugodó*, S., repose, place of repose.  
*Nyugot*, S. west.  
*Nyugoti*, A., western.  
*Nyugvó*, A. v., reposing.  
*Nyúl*, S., hare.  
*Nyúl vadászat*, S., hare-hunting.  
*Nyüg-ni*, V. n., to weigh.
- .
- Okád-ni*, V. a., to vomit; *tűzet okádó*, ignivomous.  
*Okfő*, S., principle.  
*Oktalanság*, S., non-sense, stupidity.  
*Olasz*, S., Italian.  
*Olcsón*, Adv., cheap.  
*Oldal, oldal*, S., side.  
*Őlta*, Post. since.  
*Oltalmazó*, S., defendant.  
*Ólthatlan*, A., unextinguishable.  
*Oltár*, S., altar.  
*Omladék*, S., ruin.  
*Omol-ni*, V. n., to flow, to stream.  
*Omol-ni*, V. m., to sink.  
*Ont-ani*, V., to shed, to spill.  
*Óranegyed*, S., quarter of an hour.  
*Ordít-ani*, V. n., to roar.  
*Oriás*, S., giant.  
*Oroszláni*, A., of a lion.  
*Orvosol-ni*, V. a., to cure.  
*Ostor*, S., scourge.  
*Ostrom*, S., siege, assault.  
*Ostromló*, S., besieger.  
*Ostromol-ni*, V. a., to besiege.  
*Osz-lani*, V. m., to be dispersed, to vanish.  
*Osztály*, S., division.  
*Osz-tani*, V. a., to divide, to distribute.  
*Ótalom, óltalom*, S., defence, protection.

- Óhajtani*, V., to wish.  
*Óhajtás*, S., desire, wish.  
*Ok*, S., argument, cause, reason.

Ö and Ó.

- Öböl*, S., the bay.

- Öl*, S., lap, fig. middle.  
*Öl-ni*, V. a., to kill.  
*Öldöklés*, S., slaughter.  
*Öldöklő*, A. v., murderous.  
*Öldököl-ni*, V. a., to kill.  
*Ölel-ni*, V. a., to embrace.  
*Ölelkez-ni*, V. a., to embrace one another.  
*Ölt-eni*, V. a., to dress.  
*Öml-eni*, V. m., to flow.  
*Ömled-ni*, V. n., to pour out (itself).  
*Ömledez-ni*, v. n., to stream, to pour forth.  
*Önézés*, S., consciousness.  
*Önként*, Adv., voluntarily.  
*Önkéntes*, S., volunteer.  
*Önt-eni*, V. a., to pour, to shed.  
*Önvédelem*, S., self-defence.  
*Őr*, S., guard, *őrtálló*, A. v., guarding.  
*Őreg*, A., old; — S., oldman.  
*Őriz-ni*, *megőriz-ni*, V. a., to keep, to preserve.  
*Őrlélek*, S., tutelar genius.  
*Örök*, S., eternity; inheritance, patrimony.  
*Örök*, *örökös*, A., eternal; *örökre*, for ever.  
*Örökös*, A., hereditary.  
*Örökemlékü*, A., eternally (ever) memorable.  
*Öröm*, S., joy.  
*Örömradás*, S., shouting.  
*Örömtelen*, A., joyless.  
*Őrsereg*, S., garrison.  
*Örül-ni*, V. n., to rejoice.
- Örvend-eni*, V. n., to rejoice.  
*Ős*, S., ancestor; *ősi*, A., avitious.  
*Ösmeretes*, A., known.  
*Ösméretlen*, S., stranger, — unknown.  
*Ösvény*, S., path, way.  
*Ősz*, A., grey, — S., old man.  
*Őszedugott*, A. v., crossed (arms).  
*Őszekonczol-ni*, V. a., to cut to pieces.  
*Őszeolvadás*, S., melting together, closely united, connected.  
*Összerombol-ni*, V. a., to ruin, to demolish.  
*Összerombolás*, S., destruction.  
*Összve-roskad-ni*, V. n., to fall to the ground, to sink down, fig. to expire.  
*Összes*, A., complete, whole.  
*Összeszed-ni*, V. a., to gather, to collect.  
*Összeszólalkozás*, S., altercation.  
*Összevagdál-ni*, V. a., to cut to pieces.  
*Összevon-ni*, V. a., to contract, to gather troops.  
*Övedz-eni*, V. a., to gird.  
*Őz*, S., roe, fawn; *őzfutás*, S. roe-hunting.

## P.

- Padozat*, S., floor of a room.  
*Pálya*, S., path, career.

- Pamlag*, S., sofa.  
*Pár*, S., pair, couple, A., some, a few.  
*Pára*, S. vapour.  
*Parancs*. S., command.  
*Parancsnokság*, S., the command.  
*Parányi*, A., unimportant, little; *parányi kör*, narrow sphere.  
*Parányiság*, S., trifle.  
*Párducz*, S., leopard.  
*Párolgó*, A. v., evaporating, smoking.  
*Párosít-ani*, V. a., to couple, to join.  
*Part*, S., the shore; *sír' part-ja*, the brink of the grave.  
*Párt*, S., party.  
*Pártos*, A., faithless.  
*Patkány*, S., rat.  
*Patkány csoport*, S., quantity (herd) of rats.  
*Pattogat-ni*, V. a., to crack, to smack.  
*Pecsét*, S., seal.  
*Pedig*, C., yet, again.  
*Példa*, S., example.  
*Pénzvágý*, S., immoderate desire of money.  
*Percz*, S., minute (moment.)  
*Peregve*, Part., a with great noise.  
*Pergamen*, S., parchment.  
*Perzsel-ni*, V. a., to scorch.  
*Pestis*, S., pest, pestilence.  
*Pharao-asztal*, S., rich table.  
*Piacz*, S., place, market-place.  
*Pillango*, S., butterfly.  
*Pillántás*, S., glance, look.  
*Pincze*, S., cellar.  
*Plánta*, S., plant.  
*Préda*, S., prey.  
*Préda-leső*. A. v., lurking for prey.  
*Próbál ni, megpróbál-ni*, V. a., to try, to test.  
*Próbatétel*, S., trial.  
*Prófétaság*, S., talent of prophesying.  
*Prosa*, S., prose writing.  
*Pohár*, S., cup, drink-glass.  
*Polgári*, A., social, civic.  
*Pólyadal-ni*, V. a., to sing to sleep, to lull.  
*Pompa*, S., pomp.  
*Por*, S., dust, powder; *por-szem*, grains of dust.  
*Poráz*, S., leash, rein.  
*Pórnép*, S., common people.  
*Posvány*, S., marsh, morass.  
*Pótól-ni*, V. a., to supply.  
*Pózna*, S., pole.  
*Pör*, S., process.  
*Puha*, A., soft.  
*Pusztá*, *pusztaság*, S., desert, wilderness.  
*Pusztán hagy-ni*, V. a., to desert, to quit.  
*Pusztítás*, S., devastation, destruction.  
*Pusztító*, A. v., destructive.

## R.

*Rabbér*, S., pay, wages paid to slaves.



- Rabiga*, S., the yoke of slavery, being a slave.
- Rabszolya*, S., slave, bond man.
- Rabszolgálo*, S., female slave.
- Rabláncz*, S., slavish dance.
- Ragad-ni*, V. a., to seize.
- Ragyog-ni*, V. n., to shine.
- Ragyogó*, A. v., splendid.
- Rak-ni*; *sebbel rakva*, covered with wounds.
- Rakás*, S., heap, pile.
- Rakott*, A. v., filled.
- Rámered-ni*, V. n., to stare at.
- Rang*, S., rank.
- Ravaszdi*, S., cunning fellow.
- Ráz-ni*, V. a., to shake.
- Rég*, Adv., long, for a long time.
- Régiség*, S., antiquity.
- Rejteget-ni*, V. a, to hide, to conceal.
- Rejték*, S., lurking place.
- Rejtő*, *magában rejtő*, concealing, containing.
- Remeg-ni*, V. n., to tremble.
- Remegés*, S., fear.
- Remekelt*, A. v., masterly or perfectly finished.
- Reménység*, S., hope; *remény*, S., hope.
- Rémít-eni*, V. a., to frighten.
- Rend*, S., order, *rendbefűzőtt*, arranged, systematical.
- Rendbeli*, — *több rendbeli*, several, reiterated.
- Rendel-ni*, V. a., to arrange; to order.
- Rendítetlen*, A., unshaken, firm.
- Rendületlenül*, Adv., unshaken, constantly.
- Renget and rengeteg*, S., a large forest; — A., extensive.
- Rény, erény*, S., virtue.
- Repül-ni*, V. n., to fly.
- Repülés*, S., flight, volation.
- Rés*, S., breach.
- Rest*, A., idle.
- Rész*, S., part.
- Reszket-ni*, V. n., to tremble, *reszkető*, a. v., trembling.
- Részvétel*, S., participation.
- Részvétlenség*, S., indifference.
- Részvevő*, A., participating, sympathising.
- Retteg-ni*, V. n., to be frightened.
- Rettenetes*, A., terrible dreadful, formidable.
- Retenthetlenül*, Adv., undauntedly, intrepidly.
- Rezeg-ni*, V. n., to be vibrated, to vibrate.
- Rezget-ni*, V. fact., to shake, to make tremble.
- Rezzen-ni*, V. a., to frighten.
- Rezzent-eni, felrezzenteni*, to excite, to rouse.
- Riad-ni*, V. n., to be frightened; *visza riadni*, to start back.
- Ritkán*, Adv., seldom.
- Rival-ni*, V. a., to alarm, to sound (said of the hunting horn.)

*Robaj*, S., noise.  
*Rogy-ni*, V. m., to sink.  
*Rohanás*, S., run, rushing upon any one, assault.  
*Rohanót fuvatni*, to sound allarm (to blow allarm.)  
*Rokon*, A., kindered S. — kinsman.  
*Rokka*, S., distaff, fig. company of spinning women  
*Rom*, S., ruin.  
*Rombolás*, S., destruction.  
*Romlás*, S., depravity, corruption.  
*Ront-ani*, V. a., to destroy.  
*Roszlelkű*, A. & S., malevolent.  
*Roppant*, A., enormous, numerous.  
*Rögös*, A., cloddy, rough.  
*Rögtön*, Adv., suddenly.  
*Röpt* (with the possessive affixes) S., the flight, flying.  
*Röpülés*, S., flight.  
*Rút*, A., ugly, deformed.

### S.

*Sajnál-ni*, V. a., to pity.  
*Sápadtan*, Adv., pale.  
*Sármány*, S., yellow-hammer. (a bird).  
*Sármány pecsenye*, S a., meal of a goldhammer.  
*Saru*, S., after-math, fig. tender grass.  
*Sántz*, S., intrenchment.

*Seb*, S., wound.  
*Sebesen*, Adv., quickly, rapidly.  
*Sebten*, Adv., hastily.  
*Segítő*, S., helper, assistant.  
*Segítőhad*, S., auxiliary troops.  
*Segítség*, S., assistance.  
*Sejdit-eni*, V. a., to forebode, to foresee.  
*Sejdtés*, S., presentiment.  
*Sejt-eni*, V. a., to prognosticate, to forebode.  
*Sejtő*, A. v., foreboding.  
*Semmiség*, S., nothingness, nought.  
*Senyveszt-eni*, V. a., to languish.  
*Serdülő*, A. v., thriving growing.  
*Sereg*, S., multitude, army.  
*Serény*, A., active, zealous.  
*Sétálgát-ni*, V. n., to walk, to and fro.  
*Siker*, S., success.  
*Sip*, S., fife, whistle.  
*Sír*, S., grave, *sírdomb*, tomb. *sirba szállni*, to be interred.  
*Sír-ni*, V. n., to weep, to cry.  
*Síralmas*, A., deplorable.  
*Sírat-ni*, V. a., to deplore, to lament.  
*Síriglan*, Adv., to the grave.  
*Sivatag*, S., the desert, sandy desert.  
*Sóhajl-ani*, V. n., to sigh.  
*Sóhajlás*, S., sigh.  
*Sóvárgás*, S., languishing.  
*Sorvadoz-ni*, V. n., to languish.

*Spahi*, S., Spahy, a kind of Turkish cavalry.  
*Sugár*, S., beam, fig. glance (of the eye).  
*Sugár*, A., slender.  
*Süjt-ani*, V. a., to strike.  
*Súly*, S., weight, load.  
*Súlyos*, A., heavy, weighty; *súlyosan*, Adv., heavily.  
*Súlyosít-ani*, V. a., to render, difficult.  
*Sutlogó*, A. v., whispering.  
*Súlyed-ni*, *elsúlyed-ni*, V. n., to sink, to fall; *a' bátorság súlyed*, the courage fails.  
*Súlyedés*, S., sinking perishing.  
*Sürgel-ni*, V. a., to urge.  
*Süveg*, S., head-cover, fig. helmet.

## Sz.

*Szabadon*, Adv., free.  
*Szabadítás*, S., deliverance, relief.  
*Szaggató*, A. v., lacerating, tearing; *szaggat-ni*, V. a., to pluck, to tear.  
*Száj*, S., mouth.  
*Szakad-ni*, V. n., to break, said of string; *vége szakad*, to be broken off (its end breaks).  
*Szakadatlan*, A., uninterrupted; *szakadatlanul*, Adv., uninterruptedly.  
*Szálfü*, S., spire of grass.  
*Száll-ani*, v. n., to fly; *sírba száll-ni*, to be interred.  
*Szállít-ani*, V. a., to dispatch, to convey, to throw (garrison in a fortress).  
*Szállong-ani*, V. n., to flutter (about).  
*Szállongó*, A., fluttering.  
*Szám*, S., number; *számomra*, for me; *számodra* for thee; *számára*, for him; *számunkra*, for us; *számotokra*, for you; *számokra*, for them.  
*Szamar*, S., ass, donkey.  
*Számkivet-ni*, V. a., to banish, to exile.  
*Számos*, A., numerous, many.  
*Számosít-ani*, V. a., to augment in number,  
*Száműzött*, S., exile.  
*Szánás*, S., pity, compassion.  
*Szánakodás*, S., commiseration.  
*Szánakoz-ni*, V. m., to pity, to have pity.  
*Szánakozó*, S. v., comiserating, (the commiserating bird).  
*Szándékozó*, A. v., intended.  
*Szántszándék*, S., (intended intention); *szánt-szándékkal* intentionally.  
*Szappanbuborék*, S., soap-bubble.  
*Származás*, S. origin, extraction.  
*Szárngalás*, S., fluttering.  
*Szász*, S., saxonian.  
*Század*, S., century.

- Százados*, A., of a century, lasting for a century.
- Szed-ni*, V. a., to gather; *rend-be szed-ni*, to set in order, to dispose.
- Szédít-eni*, V. a., to benumb.
- Szédi'ő*, A. v., giddy.
- Szédül-ni*, V. n., to be giddy.
- Szédül'te*, S., dizziness, giddiness.
- Szeg*, S., the nail.
- Szeg-ni*, V. a., to cut, fig. to divide.
- Szégyen*, S., shame.
- Szekér*, S., cart, wagon.
- Szél*, (*széle*), S., the utmost end, brink.
- Szél*, S., wind S.
- Szellem*, S., mind, intellect, spirit, genius.
- Szeles*, A., wanton, fickle.
- Szelid*, A., meek.
- Szelidebben*, Adv., more moderately.
- Szélyel nyíl-ni*, V. m., to open, to chink.
- Szélvész*, S., hurricane, wind-storm.
- Szem*, S., eye; *szembe száll-ni*, V. n., to make head against; *szembe tűnő*, A. v., apparent, imminent.
- Személyesen*, Adv., personally.
- Személyes*, A., personal.
- Szemközt*, Adv., opposite.
- Szemláll*, (used with the possessive affixes) S., eye-sight.
- Szemlél-ni*, V. a., to contemplate.
- Szemöldök*, S., eye-brow.
- Szempont*, S., point of view.
- Szentegyház*, S., church, temple.
- Szentel-ni*, V. a., to consecrate, to devote (to dedicate).
- Szentjános-bogár*, S., glow-worm.
- Szenved-ni*, V. n., to suffer, to endure.
- Szenvedetem*, S., passion, (passio), affection.
- Szenvedés*, S., suffering.
- Szenvedett*, S., sufferer (he who has suffered.)
- Szépség*, S., beauty.
- Szer*, S., stuff, material, instrument.
- Szerelem*, S., love.
- Szerencsejel*, S., signal of good fortune.
- Szerény*, A., modest.
- Szerényen*, Adv., modestly.
- Szerez-ni*, V. a., to acquire.
- Szerint*, Po., according.
- Szerkez-ni*, V. a., to organize.
- Szerszám*, S., instrument.
- Szertedől-ni*, V. n., to fall to pieces.
- Szerző*, S., acquirer, fig. conqueror.
- Szerzetes*, S., friar; *Jerenczi szerzetes*, Franciscan.
- Szétszaggat-ni*, V. a., to tear to pieces, to separate with violence.

- Széttekinget*, V. n., freq., to cast looks; *széttekingelve*, looking round.  
*Szétlörés*, S., breaking (to break.)  
*Szétűz-ni*, V. a., to disperse, to scatter.  
*Szín*, S., colour fig. appearance, face.  
*Szikla*, S., rock.  
*Szíkra*, S., spark.  
*Szírén*, S., siren, metaphorically instead of song.  
*Szírt*, S., rock, cliff.  
*Szilkózódó*, A. v., blaspheming.  
*Szívárvány*, S., rain-bow.  
*Szívdobogás*, S., beating of the heart, pulsation.  
*Szívható*, A. v., heart affecting, affecting.  
*Szobor*, S., statue.  
*Szokás*, S., custom, habit.  
*Szokallan.*, A., unaccustomed, unusual, extraordinary.  
*Szomszéd*, S., neighbour.  
*Szomj*, S., thirst.  
*Szomjúság*, S., thirst.  
*Szomorít-ani*, V. a., to sadden.  
*Szorongatalás*, S., distress.  
*Szorongattott*, A. v., oppressed, in distress.  
*Szoros*, A., narrow.  
*Szorúl-ni* V, n., to be pressed, to be in want of.  
*Szorultság*, S., narrowness, fig. difficulty.  
*Szózat*, S., appeal.
- Szök-ni*, S. m., to flee, to run, to jump.  
*Szökéll-eni*, V. m., to fly up, to shoot, V. n.  
*Szörnyű*, A., enormous, horrible.  
*Szövétnék*, S. torch.  
*Szűk*, A, narrow.  
*Szűken*, Adv., scanty, poorly.  
*Szükséges*, A., necessary.  
*Szükségesen*, Adv., necessarily.  
*Szűkölő*, A., wanting, needful.  
*Szül-ni*, V. a., to bear a child, to give birth to.  
*Szület-ni*, V. m., to be born.  
*Szülföld*, S., native land.  
*Szülei*, A., parental.  
*Szűn-ni*, *megszűn-ni*, V. m., to cease.  
*Szűnellen*, A. v. Adv., unceasingly, uninterrupted.  
*Szűz*, S. & A., virgin.  
*Sztybarita*, A., Sybaritical.

## T.

- Táborozás*, S., campaign.  
*Tay*, S, limb, member.  
*Tagad/latatlan*, A., undeniable.  
*Takar-ni*, *ellakarni*, V. a., to cover.  
*Találkozó*, S., a Person whom we have to meet, appointment, rendez-vous.  
*Talp*, S.. sole of the foot; *talpig ember*, he is a man from top to toe.



- Talpkő*, S., ground-stone, foundation-stone.  
*Támasz*, S., support.  
*Tán*, *Talán*, adv., perhaps.  
*Tanács*, S., counsel.  
*Tanácsló*, S., adviser.  
*Táncz*, S., dance.  
*Tánczo'-ni*, V. m., to dance.  
*Tántorít-ani*, V. a, to discourage, to shake the mind.  
*Tanú*, S., witness.  
*Tanya*, S., hamlet.  
*Tapasztalás*, S., experience.  
*Tapasztalt*, A. v., experienced.  
*Táplál-ni*, V. a., to nourish.  
*Táplálás*, S., nourishment.  
*Tapod-ni*, V. a., to trample.  
*Taps*, S., applause.  
*Tár-ni*, V. a., to expose.  
*Tárgy*, S., object.  
*Tarka*, A., spotted, variegated.  
*Társ*, S., companion, friend.  
*Társaság*, *társasság*, S., company, fig. companions.  
*Társzékér*, S., ammunition wagon.  
*Tart-ani*, V. a. & n., to hold, to keep; *tartani* (*valaminek*), to think, to consider.  
*Tartóztat-ni*, V. a., to stop, to retain.  
*Talár*, S., Tartar.  
*Távol*, Adv., far; *távol ejteni*, to remove far off; *magát'ávol ejteni*, to deviate.  
*Távoz-ni*, V. m., to quit, to retire.  
*Távozás*, S., removal.  
*Távozott*, contracted *távozt*, (used with the possessive affixes). S., having quitted the place, absence.  
*Tehát*, C., then.  
*Tekint-eni*, V. m., to look.  
*Tekintet*, S., look, S. figure; fig. regard.  
*Tel-ni*, *eltel-ni*, V. n., to elapse.  
*Teljes*, *telyes*, S. full.  
*Telyesen*. Adv., fully.  
*Telt*, A. v., filled.  
*Temet-ni*, V. a., to bury.  
*Temetkezés*, S., inhumation, Obsequies, burial.  
*Temető*, S., church yard, burying ground.  
*Templom*, S., church, temple.  
*Tenger*, S., sea.  
*Tenyész-ni*, V. m. & n., to grow, to strive.  
*Tér*, S., space, room; *léren*, *tetőn*, over stumps and shrubs.  
*Térd*, S., knee.  
*Terem-ni*, V. n., to grow.  
*Teremtő*, V. v., creating.  
*erhel-ni*, V. a., to load, to burden; *terhelő*, A. v., burdensome.  
*Terít-eni*, V. a., to cover, to spread over, fig. to prostrate.  
*Terjedett*, A., extensive, spacious.  
*Terjedésű*, A., extensive, of extent.  
*Termés*, S., fruit.

- Természetes*, A., natural.  
*Termet*, S., growth, shape.  
*Tespedő*, A., stagnating.  
*Testvér*, S., brother or sister;  
*leszvé*, A., german.  
*Tétel*, S., act, proposition;  
*magyarrá tétel*, translation  
 into Hungarian.  
*Tetem*, S., limbs, remains.  
*Tetemesen*. Adv., considerably.  
*Tető*, S., summit top.  
*Tévelyeg-ni*, V. n., to wander  
 about, to lose one's way.  
*Tévelygés*, S., aberration, error.  
*Tikkadás*, see *tikkadtság*.  
*Tikkadtság*, S., lassitude, weariness.  
*Tilt-ani*, *eltill-ani*, V. a., to prohibit, to detain.  
*Tipor-ni*, V. a., to trample.  
*Tiszta*, A., pure, clear.  
*Tisztele*, S., honour, veneration;  
*tiszteletben tart-ani*, to  
 venerate, to honour.  
*Tisztelő*, S., admirer, reverer.  
*Tisztes*, A., venerable, honourable.  
*Titkos*, S., secret.  
*Tolong-ani*, V. n., to press  
 forward, to crowd.  
*Tolongás*, S., throng, crowd.  
*Tolul-ni*, V. n., to be urged.  
*Tompa*, A., blunt.  
*Torony*, S., steeple, tower.  
*Tölt-eni*, V. a., to fill, to pass  
 or to spent time.  
*Tő*, S., trunk, fig. foot, base  
 (of a mountain), *forrás tövében*, near the spring (well).  
*Tökélet*, S., perfection, accomplishment; *tökéletre jutni*; to  
 be accomplished.  
*Tölgy*, S., oak.  
*Tőr*, S., stabber, fig. sting.  
*Tőr*, S., snare; *tőrbe ejteni*, to  
 catch with a snare.  
*Tör-ni*, V., to break; *nagyra, lör-ni*, to aspire to great  
 things.  
*Töredék*, S., fragment.  
*Törekedés*, S., endeavour.  
*Törekedő*, A. v., opening the  
 path.  
*Töreked-ni*, V. m., to exert one's  
 self.  
*Törés*, S., rupture, breach.  
*Törőllen*, Adv., broken.  
*Történet*, S., event.  
*Törtet-ni*, V. fact., to drive on.  
*Tövis*, S., thorn.  
*Tövises*, A., thorny, prickly.  
*Tudatlanság*, S., ignorance.  
*Tudomány*, S., science, knowledge.  
*Tudományi*, A., scientific.  
*Tudósítás*, S., information, intelligence.  
*Tulajdon*, S., property.  
*Tusakod-ni*, V. m., to struggle,  
 contest.  
*Tündér*, A., fairy.  
*Tündöklő*, A., bright.  
*Tündököl-ni*, V. m., to shine fig.  
 to be adorned.

*Tün-ni*, *feltün-ni*, V. m., to appear.

*Tünemény*, S., phenomenon.

*Tünőd-ni*, V. m., to trouble one's self, to muse.

*Tűr-ni*, A. a. & n., to suffer.

*Türdelem*, S., patience.

*Tüzelés*, S., firing (bombarding.)

*Tüzes*, A., fiery, red-hot.

*Tűzfolyás*, S., stream of fire, fig. active life.

## U.

*Unalom*, S., tediousness, disgust.

*Udvar*, S., court.

*Udvári*, A., of the court, belonging to the court.

*Ugor-ni*, V. m., to jump.

*Ugrás*, S., leap, jump.

*Ugyanő*, Pr., the same.

*Ugymond* (contracted of *úgy mond*), so he says, says he.

*Újítás*, S., innovation, reform.

*Újító*, A. v., reforming.

*Undok*, A., abominable.

*Unoka*, S., grand child.

*Uraság*, S., dominion;

*Utált*, A. v., disgustful.

*Ulczajáró*, A., walking in the streets, wandering.

*Utilárs*, S., travelling-companion.

*Útközben*, Adv., on one's journey.

*Útmutató*, S., guide, leader.

*Utó*, S., issue.

*Utóljára*, Adv., at last.

## Ü, Ű.

*Üdvözöl-ni*, V. a., to greet, to wellcome.

*Ünep*, S., festival.

*Üres*, — empty, void, fig. deprived; *üresfejű* (empty-headed) ignorant.

*Ül-ni valakire*, V. a., to fall upon; *táborl ütni*, to pitch a camp.

*Üz-ni*, V. a., to pursue.

## V.

*Vad*, S., wild beast, game.

*Vadon*, S., wilderness.

*Vágy*, S., desire.

*Vajmi*, Int., Alas.

*Vakmerő*, A., audacious, temerary.

*Vál-ni*, *megváln*, V. n., to part with.

*Valaha*, Adv., ever.

*Valami*, Pr. ind., any.

*Válasz*, S., answer, reply.

*Választani*, V. a., to choose.

*Választás*, S., election, alternative.

*Választó fejedelem*, S., Elector (Prince of Germany).

*Vallani*, V. a., to confess; *kártvallani*, to suffer damage.

*Válalkozott*, A. v., enterprising.

*Való*, A. v., true, real.

*Válogatni*, V. a., to select, to pick out.

*Valóság*, S., reality.

*Válloz-ni*, V. m., to follow alternately.

*Vállozás*, S., change, *újító változást hozni*, to reform.

*Változó*, A. v., changeable.

*Váltság*, S., ransom.

*Vánczorog-ni*, V. n., to stagger.

*Vándor*, S., wanderer; — A., wandering.

*Vándorbot*, S., travelling staff.

*Vándorol-ni*, V. n., to wander.

*Vár*, S., castle.

*Varázs*, S., charm, magician, enchanter.

*Várbasa*, S., bashaw of the castle.

*Várbeli*, — A., belonging to a fortress, fig. garrison.

*Vármegeltti (oldal)*, A., (the part) behind the fort.

*Váz*, S., skeleton.

*Védfal*, S., bulwark.

*Védőleg*, Adv., defensively protectively.

*Vég*; S., end.

*Véghezvin-ni*, V. a., to perform, to accomplish.

*Végképen*, Adv., entirely.

*Végkiirtás*, S., entire extermination.

*Végnap*, S., last day.

*Végre*, Adv., at last.

*Végrendelmény*, S., last will.

*Végivadal*, S., the last combat, fig. decisive combat.

*Végzet*, S. fate (fatum, as

the Romans represented it), destiny.

*Vél-ni*, V. a., to believe, to think.

*Vélemény*, S., opinion.

*Vélt*, A. v., anticipated, forethought.

*Vén*, A., old.

*Ven-ni*, V. a., to take; *szándékba venni*, to intend; *nehezen venni*, to be displeased.

*Vendéglő*, S., host.

*Vendégség*, S., feast, entertainment.

*Ver-ni*, V. a., strike.

*Vér*, S., blood, fig. bloodshed; — with the possessive affixes —, kinsman (*véreim* my kinsmen).

*Véráldozat*, S., victim.

*Vérboszú*, S., sanguinary vengeance; *vérboszút állani*, to revenge with bloodshed.

*Vérengző*, — A., sanguinary.

*Véres*, A., sanguinary.

*Vergőd-ni*, V. m., to break through, to get through with great efforts.

*Vérköny*, S., bitter tears.

*Vérnap*, S., slaughter, the day of slaughter or defeat.

*Versenez-ni*, V. m., to race, fig. to emulate, to rival.

*Vértörlés*, S., accumulation of blood.

*Vérzivatar*, S., sanguinary tumult.

- Vész*, S., danger, tempest.  
*Vesz-ni*, V. n., to perish.  
*veszniért*, becoming (getting) corrupted, being on the way of depravation.  
*Veszedelem*, S., danger.  
*Veszedelmes*, A., dangerous.  
*Veszély*, S., danger.  
*Veszélyes*, A., dangerous.  
*Veszélytelen*, A., dangerous, full of dangers.  
*Veszte*, S., (used with the possessive affixes), loss, ruin, fall.  
*Veszteget-ni*, V. a., to lose, to waste.  
*Veszleglés*, S., keeping one's self quiet, fig. inactivity.  
*Vesztőhely*, S., place of execution, scaffold.  
*Vet-ni*, V. a., to throw; *magát a' barlangjába vette*, got in his cavern.  
*Vétel*, S., receiving.  
*Vetélkedő társ*, S., rival, competitor.  
*Vevő*, S., buyer.  
*Vezérlés*, S., guidance, direction.  
*Vezető*, A. v., leading.  
*Viadal*, S., combat.  
*Viadalom*, S., dispute, debate.  
*Viaskod-ni*, V. m., to fight, to combat.  
*Vidám*, A., merry, cheerful.  
*Vidor*, A., lively, awake, brisk.  
*Vidoran*, Adv., lively, merrily.
- Vidúl-ni, megvidúl-ni*, V. n., to brighten, to grow cheerful.  
*Vig*, A., merry, cheerful; *vigan*, Adv., cheerfully, with pleasure.  
*Vigasztalás*, S., comfort, consolation.  
*Vigyázat*, S., care, precaution.  
*Vihar*, S., hurricane, storm.  
*Világít-ani*, V. n., to shine.  
*Világosító*, A. v., shining, luminous.  
*Villám*, S., lightening.  
*Villog-ni*, V. n., to gleam.  
*Vipera-fajzat*, S., generation of vipers.  
*Virad-ni*, V. n., to dawn.  
*Virágbokor*, S., flowerbush, flower.  
*Virágszál*, S., stalk, stem of a flower.  
*Virágzó*, A. v., flourishing.  
*Virány*, S., field, meadow.  
*Virúl-ni, felvirúl-ni*, V. n., to blossom, fig. to flourish.  
*Visel-ni*, V. a., to wear; *viseltet-ni*, to behave.  
*Viszály*, S., adversity, calamity.  
*Viszhang*, S., echo.  
*Viszontagság*, S., vicissitude.  
*Viszaemlékezés*, S., recollection.  
*Vissza fordul-ni*, V. n., to return.  
*Visszahanyatlás*, S., relapse.  
*Visszanyom-ni*, V. a., to drive back.



*Viszatérő*, returning; *viszatéről fuvalni*, to sound the retreat.

*Viszatol-ni*, V. a., to push back, to drive back, fig. to refuse.

*Viszavétel*, S., conquest (re-conquest.)

*Viszaver-ni*, V. a., to repulse.

*Viszavonás*, S., discord, dissension.

*Vitéz*, S., hero.

*Vitézked-ni*, V. m., to behave bravely.

*Vitézül*, Adv., bravely.

*Vívás*, S., (assailing) assault, attack.

*Vívó*, S., v., struggler.

*Vizbóltozat*, S., jet or shoot of water.

*Vizkúzó gép*, S., water pump.

*Vízváros*, S., (water town) the lower quarter of Buda.

*Vizsgálat*, S., inquest.

*Volta*, S., having been.

*Vonagol-ni*, V. m., to be moved by convulsions fig., to be in agony.

*Vonul-ni*, V. n., to move, to retire.

*Vő*, S., son-in law.

*Völgy*, S., valley.

*Vön*, instead of *vevé*, Imperf. of *ven-ni*, to take.

## Z.

*Zajos*, A., noisy.

*Zajog-ni*, V. n., to bawl, to rustle.

*Zápor*, S., shower.

*Zár*, S., lock, fig. fetters.

*Zárkozás*, S., shutting up, confinement.

*Zászló*, S., standard, banner.

*Zavar*, S., confusion.

*Zavar-ni*, V. a., to confound, to distract.

*Zavarodás*, S., confusion.

*Zeng-eni*, V. n., to sound; *visszazengeni*, to re-echo.

*Zordon*, A., rough.

*Zug*, S., corner.

*Zúgás*, S., roaring, fig. fury.

*Zuhan-ni*, V. n., to rush down.

*Zúz-ni*, V. a., to bruise.

*Zúza*, S., craw, stomach of birds.

## Zz.

*Zsák*, S., bag.

*Zseb*, S., pocket.

*Zsidbadás*, S., slumber, stiffness, torpity.

*Zsidó*, S., jew.

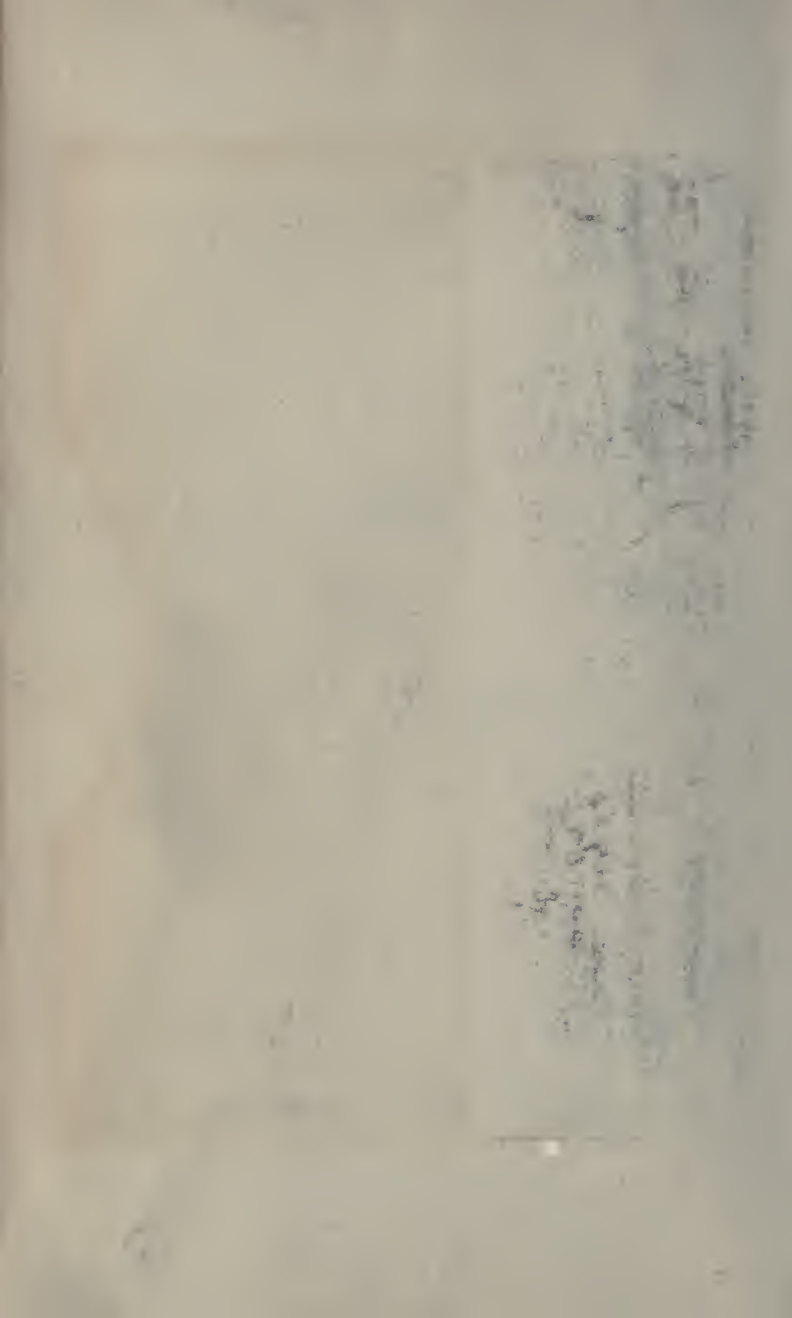
## Typographical errors in the selections.

---

Page 48	line 3,	put:	<i>leereszkedése</i>	instead of	<i>leereszkedőse.</i>
„ 53	„ 4,	„	<i>Kisfaludy</i>	„ „	<i>Kisfalu y.</i>
„ 58	„ 27,	„	<i>volt</i>	„ „	<i>völt.</i>
„ 60	„ 2,	„	<i>könnyű</i>	„ „	<i>könyű.</i>
„ „	„ 42,	„	<i>részvétlenségét</i>	„ „	<i>részvétlenséget.</i>
„ 63	„ 43,	„	<i>fülemile</i>	„ „	<i>fülmile.</i>
„ 66	„ 45,	„	<i>ról</i>	„ „	<i>röl.</i>
„ 69	„ 44,	„	<i>kormányzása</i>	„ „	<i>kormányzásá.</i>
„ 70	„ 24,	„	<i>kapu'</i>	„ „	<i>kapú.</i>
„ 77	„ 24,	„	<i>meghatárzá</i>	„ „	<i>méghatárzá.</i>
„ 80	„ 48,	„	<i>csak</i>	„ „	<i>csák.</i>
„ 88	l. 3, p. 89, l. 7, p. 90, l. 19	put:	<i>Ősz</i>	instead of	<i>Osz.</i>
„ 96	line 22,	put:	<i>adtam e'</i>	instead of	<i>adta me'.</i>
„ 99	„ 6,	„	<i>Elvette</i>	„ „	<i>Evette.</i>
„ 404	„ 6,	„	<i>csatolt</i>	„ „	<i>csato.</i>
„ 444	„ 20,	„	<i>Szülőföldem</i>	„ „	<i>Szü őföldem.</i>
„ 446	„ 45,	„	<i>Élete</i>	„ „	<i>Elete.</i>

---





LaEur  
C9585c

3476

Csink, J.

A complete practical grammar of the  
Hungarian language.

**University of Toronto  
Library**

**DO NOT  
REMOVE  
THE  
CARD  
FROM  
THIS  
POCKET**

Acme Library Card Pocket  
LOWE-MARTIN CO. LIMITED

*matlary 25.*



